



RED PACKET SERVER

BOOK 04

Zhi Xin

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Red Packet Server

(超级红包群)

by

Zhi Xin

(知新)

Synopsis

On a certain day, Ye Zichen was dragged into a deities' chat group. These deities liked to brag, and also liked to send red packets.

Ever since then, Ye Zichen's life has had unbelievable changes.

The God of Fortune sent a red packet. I'm going snatch it! Wow, I got a large gold ingot.

Taibai Jinxing sent a red packet, I'm going to snatch it as well! Wow, I got a thousand years of cultivation.

Super WeChat Red Envelope Group, with a swipe of my hands, I got them red packets.

Stop messing around, I'm going to snatch red envelopes now!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Selutu @ [Volare Novels](#)

Translation Editing by Khuja & etvolare @ [Volare Novels](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 301 – The Old Butler and Body Double

“Boss Ye!” Wei Chen pushed Ye Zichen to the side. Meanwhile, the old butler, who stood behind Huo Da, also raced forward and chopped down Huo Da’s neck with a knife hand.

“You...” Huo Da turned around in confusion. He never could have expected the old butler, who had been with him for ten-odd years, would actually attack him.

“Retard, go to sleep!” The old butler chopped down on Huo Da’s neck once again when he saw that Huo Da did not faint from the first blow.

Bang.

Huo Da fell to the ground.

When they entered, Ye Zichen did not notice the gun in Huo Da’s hand at all, so it was extremely fortunate that Wei Chen had pushed him away.

“Old Wei!”

“Hey,” Wei Chen smiled, then opened his palm, revealing a bullet.

Wei Chen chuckled the bullet onto the floor and twisted his neck, “That damn thing is pretty powerful, it really hurt my hand!”

Ye Zichen, who was worried about Wei Chen just moments earlier, couldn’t help but roll his eyes, “F*ck that, you’re crazy!”

Even I, who had Unbreakable Body, could not defend against hot weapons. Wei Chen is just of the False Earth immortal level, he could actually catch a bullet with his bare hand...

Could he be a body cultivator?

His skin is truly thick!

“Ye Zichen?”

At that moment, the old butler snickered.

Ye Zichen looked up upon hearing the sound, and finally noticed the old man in butler-clothing standing opposite him, who held Huo Da like a dead dog.

Bang.

The old butler threw Huo Da in front of him.

“The person you guys want is him, right? Here!”

Ye Zichen looked down at Huo Da, who was beside his feet, then looked up and raised his eyebrows with a smile, “Internal conflict? Zeze, don’t worry, I won’t trouble you, I’m just rather interested in Huo Da.”

“Do whatever you want,” The old butler smile. “Let me give you a tip. Huo Da just killed someone. The gun on the floor has his fingerprints. If you want to deal with him, then you can use that.”

“Oh?”

Ye Zichen glanced at the room and saw that someone truly did fall in the room.

No wonder there was a gory smell when I just entered the room!

“Also, the dead guy can change his looks. The person that went to assassinate you last time was him. Yu is pretty strong as well, you can make him work for you.”

“...” Ye Zichen’s expression suddenly turned dark.

What this geezer is saying is already way more than what someone that was asking to be spared should say. He seems to be just telling me something as if he was originally on my side.

“Just who are you?”

“You don’t need to mind it,” the old butler smile. “We’ll meet again in the future, but I might not be using this identity. I have faith in you, kid...”

With that, the old man’s body begun to crumble like a character made out of data in television shows, then eventually disappearing from the room.

“A Body Double!” Wei Chen’s eye twitched.

Ye Zichen, who stood on the side, revealed a look of confusion. Just when he wanted to ask what was a “Body Double”, the security guards for the hotel arrived.

“Who are you!?” The security guards asked angrily, while the clear smell of blood caused them to frown...

Within moments, they noticed the person in the pool of blood.

“Subdue them and call the police!”

“Hey, hey, hey, dude, I’m telling you, this brat was the one who killed the guy,” Ye Zichen kicked Huo Da, who was on the floor.

“That has nothing to do with us. Call the police!” roared the security guard.

At that moment, Ye Zichen's phone rang, and the caller ID showed that it was Old Man Su.

He had received the news about Xiao Yumei getting into a car accident as well. It was a rather severe issue for him since the medical company she works in provides exclusive pills to the military.

Cooperating with the military makes it half a nationalized company.

A management level person getting endangered was no small matter.

"Old Man Su!" The moment Ye Zichen placed the phone by his ear, the security guard immediately rushed over to grab it.

However, Wei Chen immediately stopped the man.

"Put the phone down. You are not allowed to talk to anyone before the police arrive!" the guard shouted.

"What's going on over there?" Old Man Su heard the guard's voice. "You're in trouble?"

"Ignore it and say what you need to. What is it?" Ye Zichen said with a smile.

“Just tell me if you’re in trouble, I’ll help you deal with it,” Old Man Su said another word of car. “I heard Lil’ Xiao was in a car accident?”

“You know everything?” Ye Zichen was stunned. “She’s fine though.”

“It’s good that she’s fine,” Old Man Su said with a smile. “The perpetrator has to be severely punished. If I put it nicely, it was intentional assault, if I put it severely, then it’s treason! I already sent people out to capture him. If we do capture him, then we’ll take him onto the court martial. I promise to give you a solution for it!”

“...” Ye Zichen blanked out for a moment. “I already caught the person!”

When Ye Zichen finally hung up the call, the security guard was still continuing to yammer.

Ye Zichen patted Wei Chen’s shoulder, then raised his eyebrows at the security guard.

“Dude, we’re good citizens. You don’t need to care about all this, the military will come over and deal with all this later!”

“?” The security guard revealed a look of confusion.

“If you guys don’t believe me, then just wait there. The two of us

are going to wait in the room for the military. If you guys don't believe us, then wait here!"

With that, Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows at Wei Chen, then sat down on the sofa in the living room.

The guard captain was stunned for a split second before he turned to his team members, "Stay on guard here and protect the scene! You guys can make a move if they make any unusual movements!"

Ye Zichen gave the guards a thumbs up in his mind. If anyone else is met with this sort of situation, they would try their best to avoid it, I didn't think that they could actually still fearlessly stand here.

"Boss Ye, we're really just going to stay here?" Wei Chen glanced at the guards. "If you want to run, then we'll definitely be able to make it out."

"No need, the military is coming over soon. Why are we running when they're our people?" Ye Zichen rolled his eyes speechlessly. "Tell me, just what is the Body Double you spoke of?"

Wei Chen immediately put on a serious expression, "A Body Double is basically another body that the original one split off in order to breakthrough in their cultivation realms! It is similar to reincarnation, but has a worse effect. They will have a separate consciousness, but if the main body wants, they are still able to control the Body Double!"

“And?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows?

“That elder was a Body Double. You saw him disappear because the main body took him back. But the people that can form a Body Double are all at least of the Human Immortal level...” Wei Chen said solemnly.

Chapter 302 – Huo Da is Caught

Human Immortal?

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. Don't cultivation levels only have Spiritual Body, Earth Immortals and Sky Immortals?

“What level is Human Immortal?”

“You don't even know this?” Wei Chen put on a look of disdain as if he was looking down on Ye Zichen for asking such a simple question.

However, he immediately gulped and smiled when he saw Ye Zichen's hostile gaze, “I'm kidding, Boss Ye, please don't mind it!”

“Stop bullshitting around, hurry up and tell me,” Ye Zichen frowned.

“The levels in the Three Realms' Immortal Region are split into five levels. Spiritual, Earth, Human, Sky and King. For Spiritual and Earth levels, there are only the early and late stages. For Human and Sky, there are the early, mid and late stages. I'm not so sure about King levels, but the Immortal Region doesn't seem to have one of a King level yet!” Wei Chen explained with a smile, causing Ye Zichen to raise his eyebrows...

This was slightly different to what Third Fatty Jin said, but it is more precise. What's worth noting is that the main body of the

gramps from earlier is actually at the Human Immortal level or even higher!

That's pretty amazing.

“Are you sure that only those of a Human Immortal level or higher can have Body Doubles?” Ye Zichen interrogated.

“I'm sure!” Wei Chen nodded in certainty. “If I can't tell that something is a Body Double, then, in the Immortal Region, I don't need to... Then I can't exactly be there anymore! He was definitely a Body Double!”

Wei Chen clearly paused for a moment when he answered, but Ye Zichen did not notice it as he was still pondering about the old man's identity.

That old man was really strange...

He was beside Huo Da, but he seems to be helping me...

At that moment, Huo Da, who was on the floor, suddenly stood up with the gun in his hand...

“Nobody move!”

The security guards, who were going to subdue him, immediately stopped in their tracks.

At the same time, Huo Da also turned around with a mad smile in his eyes, “I didn’t think that you would even manage to cause my butler to defect! Ye Zichen, I truly underestimated you.”

“If I say that I don’t have anything to do with your butler, would you believe it?” Ye Zichen smiled playfully.

“F*ck you, the shit are you trying to pretend for,” Huo Da bit his lips, while a crazy look appeared on his face. “Since my family has fallen into a decline, and those bastards won’t let my family turn the tables. It’s impossible for Xiao Yumei and I, so... Let’s die together...”

Bang.

The cartridge was empty!

Ye Zichen had always maintained a calm smile, while the security guards, who were already prepared, immediately subdued Huo Da when they saw that the gun in Huo Da’s hand was empty.

Then, organized footsteps echoed in the corridor.

Not long later, a group of men in military uniform appeared at the doorway. The person in the lead was Su Yan’s father, Su Qihu!

When the security guards saw the epaulette on Su Qihu’s

shoulders, they immediately saluted.

From the looks of the standard salute, they should be veterans.

Only then did Ye Zichen understand, while a wave of respect rose up in his heart.

Just why were they able to stand so fearlessly in the room?

It was because of the iron-will of soldiers, something that normal people would not be able to understand. The word “fear” was not in their dictionaries, instead, it was filled with a single word – Justice.

“Hello, I am Su Qihu, the Commanding General of Bingcheng’s Number One Military Region. I received orders to come and capture a criminal.”

The security guards instantly nodded and took a step back, displaying Huo Da, who was subdued on the ground.

“What right do you have to capture me!? I didn’t commit any crimes!”

“Shut up, the heck are you screaming out for?” A security guard immediately elbowed him!

At the same time, Ye Zichen and Wei Chen also stood up from the

sofa and walked over.

Su Qihu was clearly momentarily stunned when he saw Ye Zichen, making it apparent that Old Man Su did not tell him that Ye Zichen was there as well.

To be perfectly honest, he still didn't like Ye Zichen from the start.

He had looked down on Ye Zichen from the beginning, but since he spoke with too much certainty on Old Man Su's birthday feast, he was unable to interfere with Ye Zichen's relationship with Su Yan.

"Dad-in-law, you actually came in person!" Ye Zichen smiled playfully.

Su Qihu's expression immediately turned dark when he heard Ye Zichen's way of addressing him, while the soldiers behind him and the security guards in the room were clearly shocked...

Dad-in-law!

"I'm on a mission. Also, don't call me dad-in-law. I never recognized you!" Su Qihu glared.

Ye Zichen chuckled, then didn't annoy him further. Instead, Ye Zichen pointed at Huo Da, who was still struggling on the floor, "This grandson is the mastermind, as for over there... Huo Da's the

guy who killed the dead guy over there. The gun seems to have his fingerprints on it as well. He also pointed the gun at me just now, but it wasn't of any use, so I just taught him a lesson!"

"You're lying, I didn't kill him!" Huo Da screamed.

"Hehe, you don't get to decide whether you actually killed him or not," Ye Zichen squinted his eyes with a smile. "They can just get the fingerprints on the gun tested."

Su Qihu nodded. If it wasn't for how civilian-like and fickle in love this kid is, I would actually be rather satisfied with him due to his capability and bravery.

"Take him away, and get the military's forensic experts to examine the corpse!"

Thus, the soldiers behind Su Qihu immediately started to move. Meanwhile, Ye Zichen stayed in the room for a while longer as he was worried that Su Qihu wanted to ask him some questions to understand the situation further.

However, Su Qihu completely ignored him.

"Are you going to ask me anything? If you don't, then I'm leaving. Don't act like a kid and waste my time, I'm very busy!"

Hearing that, Su Qihu snorted, "You're not needed, just screw off!"

“Sigh, uncle, seriously...” Ye Zichen shook his head and twitched his mouth. “Then whatever, Old Wei, we’re leaving!”

As there was nothing special to do after they left the hotel, Wei Chen returned to the teahouse.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen stood at the side of the road in order to catch a taxi to the hospital. As for why he did not get Wei Chen to drive him over...

It was because the stingy man known as Wei Chen did not own a car!

Wei Chen had even gone as far as to say that it was because cars cause pollution. A while ago, they had actually arrived at the hotel on the guy’s bicycle.

“Ye Zichen!” A call sounded out behind him.

When Ye Zichen turned around for a look, he saw Xia Keke, who was wearing sunglasses and a cap while holding a bag on her shoulders as if she had just returned from her travels, looked at him angrily with her hands on her hips.

“Where did you go off to?” Ye Zichen walked over.

Xia Keke immediately smiled happily, “Susu and I went out to

play, so we weren't in school these few days!"

No wonder I didn't see them in school recently. So they actually went out to travel. But I didn't see Lu Lu recently either. Could she have gone out to play as well?

"Oh yeah, I also brought you a present," With that, she took out a clay doll from her bag. "For you!"

The clay doll was of a boy holding two girls. No matter how Ye Zichen looked at it, it looked to him like chibi versions of Xia Keke, Su Yan and him.

"This can't be Su Yan and us, right?"

"You're pretty observative!" Xia Keke smiled, then pointed at the clay doll. "This is the three of us. Susu and I ordered it there. We have one each and the dolls have our names underneath them. Let me show you!"

As she said that, she walked over to grab Ye Zichen's hand and lifted the clay doll.

Yet, at that very moment, a look of shock appeared on her face. She immediately held his hand and pointed at the ring on his finger.

"Where did you find this?"

Chapter 303 – Spiritual Consciousness is Naked!

Xia Keke held Ye Zichen's hand with an extremely nervous expression, while the bone ring shimmered from the moment she touched it.

“Are you someone of the dragon race?” The voice of an ancient dragon suddenly sounded out in Ye Zichen's mind, while his consciousness suddenly appeared in a place devoid of everything.

“Come!”

A huge dragon around a hundred yards long with its entire body as red as blood laid beside a shimmering mountain of gold and jewels.

The white dragon whiskers fluttered in the air, while Ye Zichen couldn't help but float over the moment the blood dragon spoke.

When he got near the dragon, Ye Zichen finally understood what it meant to be puny.

To it, Ye Zichen was as puny as an insect. As he looked up, he saw the blood-colored eyes look at him with a hint of softness.

“You don't have the blood of a dragon, why are you able to awaken my soul?”

Dragon race?

Awaken!

All of a sudden, Ye Zichen remembered what Lil' White had said earlier. This ring is called the Dragon God Ring, and it contained the soul of a dragon god from that age.

The person who awakened it wasn't me, it was Xia Keke!

Xia Keke was a golden dragon, a member of the dragon race.

“The one who awoke you was not me. There is a descendent of the Azure Dragon of the Four Sacred Beasts beside me. Her original form is that of a golden dragon.”

“So it's that girl!” The dragon god nodded humanely and smiled. “Summoning you both in here is too dangerous in this place. How about this, hurry up and take her to a safe place. Remember, do it as quick as possible. There is a limited amount of time for me to stay awake!”

Zoom.

The void of consciousness shattered, and Ye Zichen also exited from the void.

“Ye Zichen! Ye Zichen!”

Xia Keke's face was filled with anxiousness as she looked at Ye Zichen, whose gaze had turned blank.

“Keke, come with me!” Ye Zichen grabbed Xia Keke and immediately ran into the hotel beside him. Right when he finished registering and getting a room, he bumped into Su Qihu, who was escorting Huo Da out, on the way to the elevator.

“...”

Ye Zichen's face stiffened.

Why am I so unfortunate? I just had to bump into him at this very moment.

Ye Zichen quickly let go of Xia Keke's hand and scratched his head with a coy smile, “Uncle Su, thank you for your hard work!”

However, he completely forgot that the hand he scratched his head with still held the hotel's room key.

“Hehe... Not at all. I didn't work as hard as you!” Su Qihu revealed a cold smile. He already knew that Ye Zichen had other women, but he had just never seen them before.

This is great, I caught him in the act. What's more...

They just got a room!

“Look at what you’re saying, how can I have worked as hard as you,” Ye Zichen continued to smile coyly.

Su Qihu wanted to get his soldiers to capture the brat in front of him to teach him a lesson. However, he suddenly had a different idea.

“It really is an achievement for you to capture the criminal. By putting yourself in danger, you were valiant, it is worthy of praise! How about this, come with me to the military region, I’ll give you a certificate...” Su Qihu smiled warmly.

“No need, no need, helping the people is my duty!”

It seems like dad-in-law didn’t notice?

Ye Zichen licked his lips and put down his hand, “Hurry up and go back, the forces behind this brat is huge, you’re going to get a lot of work to do!”

“Mm, then I’m going back.”

Su Qihu nodded slightly, then departed with his soldiers.

Yet, at the moment they exited the hotel, he turned to one of the

soldiers, “Watch the brat closely and inform me if there’s any situation!”

Phew.

Ye Zichen let out a long sigh of relief when Su Qihu finally left.

It’s so fortunate that this dad-in-law didn’t notice anything. If he knew that I was getting a room with Xia Keke, even if we weren’t doing anything, he would definitely beat me up real good with his temper.

“Who was that person?” Xia Keke asked in confusion.

“Su Yan’s dad!” Ye Zichen replied with a light smile, before grabbing Xia Keke’s hand and running into the elevator.

Even when they eventually reached the room, Xia Keke’s face was still covered in shock.

“That person is actually Su Yan’s dad!? He’s a military commander? Why did she never mention it!”

“You know Su Yan, she likes keeping a low profile,” Ye Zichen replied with a soft smile.

“Since you know her dad, then he should know about your relationship with Su Yan, right? Are you sure it’s fine?”

“Why wouldn’t it be? We didn’t do anything?” Ye Zichen shrugged.

Xia Keke responded with a blush, “We didn’t do anything just now, but are we not going to do anything later?”

Why am I actually seeing a hint of anticipation from her face?

Could it just be my mind acting up? I was bullied pretty terribly the last time we got a room together.

Ye Zichen scratched his head. I must maintain my proper image, and the old dragon god had also said that its time was limited.

“Don’t think too much about it. I brought you here for the ring!”

Xia Keke’s expression immediately tensed, “Oh yeah, where did you get the ring? Can you give the ring to me? It is very important to me!”

“Don’t be in such a hurry, let me take you to see a guy... Wait, no, a dragon!”

With that, Ye Zichen begun to mentally shout...

The space in Ye Zichen’s consciousness opened once again, while the ancient dragon god glanced at Ye Zichen, “It’s safe now?”

“Mhmm!” Ye Zichen nodded.

Not long later, Xia Keke also appeared in his consciousness, “What is this place?”

Xia Keke, who just arrived, looked around. Just as Ye Zichen was about to answer, he found his eyes glued to something...

Special!

This is my see of consciousness, and only a soul’s consciousness can enter...

Which... is naturally naked!

Gulp.

Ye Zichen silently gulped and tried his best to move his gaze elsewhere, but his eyes were completely glued on Xia Keke and would not bulge at all.

Two members of the opposite sex could be extremely close together and act completely natural!

Ye Zichen had once scoffed at the story and thought that he could do it as well.

However...

He felt like he truly overestimated himself!

“Hey, why aren’t you speaking!”

Xia Keke turned around in confusion. Yet, when she saw the naked Ye Zichen...

“Ahh...”

She immediately slapped him.

“Pervert! Why aren’t you wearing any clothes!” Xia Keke covered her eyes with her hands, but let a gap in between her fingers to peek curiously!

“Erm...” Ye Zichen smiled coyly. “You didn’t notice it, but you are naked too!”

Xia Keke put down her hands and looked down, then instantly froze!

A split second later, Xia Keke’s high pitched scream sounded out in the empty void.

“No looking!”

“I won’t, I won’t!” Ye Zichen quickly shook his head.

At that moment, the dragon god, who was lying by the golden mountain couldn’t suffer through it anymore and said helplessly, “Can you two not act like that? This old one doesn’t have much time!”

Chapter 304 – Dragon God

The old dragon god's speechless attitude surprised Xia Keke, causing her to turn around and saw the blood dragon who yawned as he laid on the other side.

“Dragon God!” Xia Keke exclaimed with a blush.

What was I doing just now? I actually... in front of the dragon god...

“Kiddo, don't think so much into it! This old dragon didn't see anything. Even if you two kids want to flirt, wait till when I'm asleep, okay?”

That caused Ye Zichen to blush as well...

“Senior dragon god, please stop teasing us. Didn't you say you want to see Keke? I brought her here!”

“Hehe, wow, you're actually shy!” the old dragon god chuckled, then crooked his fingers at the two of them.

Ye Zichen and Xia Keke's bodies floated over uncontrollably, while the old dragon god smiled, “You... Are one of the golden dragons, the sacred beast of the dragon race?”

“Yes!”

Xia Keke's heart was filled with excitement. She never thought that she would be able to meet the Dragon God. They had two statues which they worshipped in the ancestral altar of the dragon race. One was of their clan head, the Azure Dragon, and the other was of the Dragon God!

The Dragon God's statue was more than three times the size of the Azure Dragons. In fact, it was so huge that one could not see the top of it from the bottom.

The Dragon God had always been a legendary existence for their race. Legends say that the Dragon God had fallen in the Great War of Gods and Demons...

"Are you really the Dragon God?" Xia Keke bit her lips and asked in a testing manner.

"Dragon God? Kiddo, are you talking about me?" The old dragon god raised his eyebrows in surprise. "This old dragon is called Long Chen. I cannot take onto the title of Dragon God. In my era, there are plenty of people stronger than me amongst my generation. I am merely someone that survived till the end of the Great War of Gods and Demons! Oh yeah, how long has it been since the Great War?"

"Then you are the Dragon God! As for the war, it seems to have been several hundred thousand years ago!" Xia Keke's face was filled with excitement. "Hehe, I never thought that I would really be able to see the Dragon God! I've seen Sun Wukong and the

Dragon God. Hahaha, I'm amazing!"

"Sun Wukong? Who is he?" The Dragon God was confused.

"He's an amazing existence after you. Back then, he even caused havoc in the Heavenly Court!" Xia Keke giggled.

"Heavenly Court? That sort of puny place!" The Dragon God revealed a look of disdain. "It is merely wreaking havoc in the Heavenly Court."

Although the old dragon looked very humble, he did have his own pride.

"Ignore that Sun Wukong. I brought you here to ask you how the dragon race is doing right now!"

"The dragon race?" Xia Keke pouted. "The dragon race is doing great, we have a place of our own in the Three Realms. The Immortal Region, the Heavenly Court and the Underworld is very courteous towards us, and the sacred beast bloodlines are very united!"

"That's it?"

"It's already really good. We, the dragon race, are the big bosses of the Yaos!" Xia Keke looked up proudly.

“Seriously, the youngsters are getting more and more disappointing!” The Dragon God seemed very displeased with the situation, but then remembered that he couldn’t do anything about it in his current condition. “How many tribe members do we have now?”

“The dragon race has about a thousand-odd people in total!” Xia Keke replied.

“So little?” The Dragon God was shocked. “No wonder the dragon race is so weak now. In several tens of thousands of years, we only have so few people!”

“It’s already a lot. Were there a lot of us back then?” Xia Keke asked in confusion.

“The dragon race back then...” The old dragon god began to recall. “Back then, there were more than ten million of us. We were the rulers of the entire land. The dragon race back then was incredibly amazing, and there were several hundred thousands of Five Elemental Dragons! Yet, the dragon race was hurt immensely by the war between Gods and Demons... Ai!”

“So amazing?” Xia Keke’s eyes were filled with shock. Then she smiled softly. “But the dragon race isn’t doing too bad right now. I feel like we’re rather good. The dragon race’s reproduction abilities are limited. Clan Head Azure Dragon said that the fact that we have more than a thousand tribesmen is the blessing of the heavens!”

“The heavens my ass!” The old dragon god suddenly roared angrily, while he also stood up with his huge body, releasing a maddening aura.

Both Xia Keke and Ye Zichen twitched their mouths beneath him in secret. This old dragon god is so weird, he’s always angry and unhappy with everything.

“Hmph, if this heavens... can revive this old one. Then this old one would definitely mess up the heavens!”

“ ... ”

Both Ye Zichen and Xia Keke continued to be speechless!

After a long time, when the old dragon god finally calmed himself down, he fell back onto the ground and sighed, “Never mind, it’s all in the past now. Back then the lords fell and the demons were sealed, I also passed on. It is all over now.”

“Oh,” Xia Keke also learned from her mistakes and stopped saying more than she needed in case of getting scolded again.

“The fact that you woke me up means that it is our fortune to meet. Since I am of the dragon race, can you take me back to the dragon race’s sacred altar so that I can rest in peace?”

The old dragon god sighed. Xia Keke subconsciously looked towards Ye Zichen. Since the ring was his, she didn’t dare make

any reckless promises.

“Then sure,” Ye Zichen agreed since didn’t expect the ring to give him anything. Then he quickly shrugged, “But this ring is stuck on my hand. I can’t take it off!”

“That’s because I’m absorbing your spiritual energy to nourish my soul,” The old dragon god said shamelessly. “Go with her to the dragon race’s sacred altar, I’ll fall off from your hand then.”

“...” Ye Zichen was truly speechless, but he didn’t dare to say anything since even a sneeze of the old dragon god might be able to kill him.

“Sure, then continue absorbing. I’m fine with it.”

“Since it’s like that, then it’s decided. This old dragon is a bit tired, so I’m going back inside the ring to rest. I’ll leave this sea of consciousness to you youngsters. A friendly reminder, you can do anything you want, this old dragon can’t see anything! You’ll leave the sea of consciousness automatically after two hours, so make use of it!”

With that, the old dragon left the sea of consciousness.

Ye Zichen and Xia Keke looked at each other awkwardly the moment the old dragon god left.

Both of them were naked, and they were unable to directly

leave...

It was an incomparable suffering for Ye Zichen.

“Erm, it seems like we have to stay here for two hours. Although this is my sea of consciousness, I don’t know how to enter or leave it!” Ye Zichen scratched his head with a dry chuckle.

“I-I get it,” Xia Keke looked down at her white feet and bit her lips.

“Two hours should pass by really quickly. Let’s just treat it as rest. I’ll sit with my back facing you, and promise not to look.”

With that, Ye Zichen immediately turned around and sat down.

However, Xia Keke’s naked body uncontrollably surfaced in his mind.

To be fair, any man would have those images in his mind when he was in a situation like this.

The only way that I wouldn’t was if I were gay or just disinterested.

As Ye Zichen forced himself to forget the image from earlier, he felt a body close in on him. When he looked back, he saw Xia Keke whisper with a blush, “Trying it here once is fine, right?”

Chapter 305 – Su Yan’s Monologue

The soft words were picked up by Ye Zichen’s ear like poison. He stared at Xia Keke in shock, only to notice that her face had already turned bright red.

“What are you looking at me like that for! It’s just to try it once, we can’t do it after we leave here since the dragon race has rules... This place is different from the outside, I’m just curious so I want to experience it!”

“Try-Try what?” Ye Zichen licked his lips.

“What do you think? Stop pretending to be an idiot. If you don’t want to, then whatever. This lady merely saw that... saw that you seem to be in pain.”

Xia Keke turned around to leave with a snort.

At that moment, Ye Zichen raised his hand and grabbed hold of her.

“Ya!” Xia Keke called out. Then, when she looked at Ye Zichen, who was laying on top of her with red eyes, she bit her lips. “Just this once, we can’t do it outside!”

Then, she closed her eyes!

Meanwhile, within the hotel room...

Su Qihu had told Su Yan about Ye Zichen going to get a room. However, she did not believe him.

In order to make his daughter accept the fact, Su Qihu took her to the hotel...

By using his military identity, he was able to make the hotel open the room. Yet, when he entered the room, he saw that both Ye Zichen and Xia Keke were clothed as they sat on two opposite sides of the sofa.

“Brat!”

Su Qihu pushed Ye Zichen!

No reaction.

“What’s going on!?”

Su Qihu was stunned. He could feel that Ye Zichen was not pretending to sleep since he was truly unable to feel Ye Zichen’s breath.

Then, his phone buzzed. He answered the call briefly with a frown, then shouted towards Su Yan, “Let’s go back, and talk about the two of them when we’re got the time!”

“Go back to work first, I’ll wait for them to wake up here,” Su Yan smiled. “I’m worried about the two of them like this.”

“It’s already like this and you’re still thinking for the brat? He brought a woman to the hotel!”

“But they didn’t do anything? Even if he did do something, I’m still willing to stay by his side. I owe him at least that much!”

“What-What the heck are you saying!?” Su Qihu was instantly enraged.

However, Su Yan merely shrugged with a smile, “He saved me when I was completely helpless and in danger, he saved grandpa when grandpa was on the verge of dying. He’s also helped older brother. I owe him way too much, and am unable to repay it... So I can only repay him with the rest of my life!”

“You...” Su Qihu stuttered and was unable to say anything.

Su Yan chuckled, “Go back first, I’ve grown up. I can decide on my life.”

“Ai!”

Only then did Su Qihu finally leave angrily. Yet, despite his anger, he still left two soldiers behind to ensure Su Yan’s safety.

After the hotel room door closed, Su Yan, who sat between the two people touched Ye Zichen's face and smiled, "You're doing something strange right now once again, right? I really do think so."

"Actually, I have already guessed some of your secrets, but I've been waiting for you to tell me. Yet, you still haven't."

"Perhaps, you feel like I'm not worthy of your trust in your heart? That's probably the case. Actually, my favor for you is not pure either."

"I actually am not mad for you having other women. I don't think that I'm a particularly generous person. I thought about it for a long time after I realized, and in the end, I feel like... Perhaps I feel more curious and thankful towards you in comparison."

"I will continuously be by your side in order to make myself fall in love with you. Even if you stop loving me in the end, had enough of my face and got sick of me, I will still stand behind you... From the very moment that you saved me from the mansion, I knew... that I would have to repay you using the remainder of this life."

Her soft words revealed an indescribable feeling of helplessness. As she leaned silently on Ye Zichen's shoulders, she suddenly felt his heart race.

At the same time, Xia Keke's face also turned a sickly red.

Su Yan was immediately worried. The first thing she did was dial the emergency number without any hesitation.

Within the sea of consciousness.

Xia Keke held Ye Zichen's shoulders tightly as she opened her mouth slightly and presented a look of satisfaction.

"Hehe!" Ye Zichen caressed Xia Keke's hair with a smile and teased. "Seriously, normal people really wouldn't be able to handle you."

"Tsk," Xia Keke blushed, then glared at him. "I was just cooperating because I saw that you still wanted more."

Then she pouted and pushed Ye Zichen away, "It isn't addicting like they said at all. They're all liars. Or, it might just be that you're too useless, hehe..."

"Yeah, yeah," Ye Zichen smiled meaningfully. "I wonder who had look of satisfaction just now?"

"You're still talking about it!?" Xia Keke raised her fists.

Ye Zichen immediately gave up, "Alright, alright, I was wrong."

"Hmmp!" Xia Keke lifted her delicate chin, then stopped

speaking. However, she still continued to think back to the feeling earlier...

After a long time...

When both of them had rested enough, Ye Zichen stood up and looked at the empty space.

“I wonder when we can leave.”

“Why are you in such a hurry?” Xia Keke licked her lips and ran beside him. “How about it, let’s go at it one more time...”

“...”

This woman...

Xia Keke instantly pouted when she saw Ye Zichen’s gaze and stuttered, “I-I was just worried that you’d want to. Never mind, even if you want, I’m not going to go along with you.”

As she said that, the sea of consciousness begun to collapse. Then not long later, both of them exited from the sea of consciousness.

Ye Zichen opened his eyes.

And saw completely white scene.

Ye Zichen sat up in the hospital bed, and noticed that he actually was laying in the hospital. Meanwhile, Xia Keke also had a look of confusion on her face on the hospital bed beside him...

“How did we end up in the hospital?” Xia Keke asked in confusion.

“How would I know?” Ye Zichen did not understand either.

At that very moment, the door to the ward was pushed open. Su Yan walked in with a flushed face. She had just returned from the doctor who told her about their situation...

The doctor had a very strange expression when he told her as well. Under normal circumstances, what happened to them was impossible. Yet, it did happen.

“Susu!” Xia Keke blinked her large eyes. “Why are you here?”

“I brought the two of you here,” Su Yan bit her lips in response. “I was in the hotel when I saw the two of you... Mm, basically, it was very strange. Since I was worried that something was wrong with you two, I dialed the emergency number.”

“...”

Ye Zichen and Xia Keke both blushed...

Strange.

She should be talking about when the two of us... were doing that!

“I am kind of curious,” Su Yan suddenly bit her lips. “Back then... what were the two of you doing?”

Chapter 306 – Su Yiyun's True Love

All of a sudden, the atmosphere in the room turned rather strange.

Xia Keke dipped her head and twiddled her fingers without meeting Su Yan's gaze, while Ye Zichen's expression also froze...

It really isn't an easy thing to explain. What's more, Su Yan seems to know something.

"Alright, I'll just not ask," Su Yan smiled. "The doctor said that there aren't any problems that they could detect. I'll go and get the procedures for you two to be discharged now. Just directly leave afterwards, I have other stuff to do, so I won't stay with the two of you!"

Then she turned around, while revealing a faint hint of bitterness on her face.

Ye Zichen felt his heart shake at the depressed figure!

Dingdong.

Your affability level with Su Yan decreased by 10. Current affability level: 500.

She really does know something.

Ye Zichen looked at the closed ward door blankly.

At the same time, Xia Keke also blinked, “Susu couldn’t have noticed something, right?”

A woman’s sixth sense was always strangely accurate, and Xia Keke was certain that Su Yan must have noticed something from her expression.

“What should I do? Should I return to the dorm tonight? How about we get a room?”

Ye Zichen looked speechlessly at Xia Keke’s look of anticipation and rolled his eyes, “Rest properly. Didn’t you say that the dragon race has rules? You got addicted?”

“Tsk, who the heck is addicted,” Xia Keke wrinkled her nose and jumped off the bed before sticking her tongue out at Ye Zichen. “Hmph, don’t even think about touching me for the rest of this life!”

Then, she frantically escaped from the room with a pout. Ye Zichen smiled, got off the bed as well, then left the military hospital and returned to Xiao Yumei’s place.

Another week passed by in the blink of an eye.

Ever since Huo Da was taken away by the military, Xiao Yumei no longer got into any dangerous situations. That was enough proof that Huo Da did set up the car accident.

Elder Su did not go back on his words, and did pursue Huo Da's responsibilities completely.

The Huo family wanted to cut Huo Da off, but they were still affected. During their attempts, they continuously tried to use their contacts, but even after spending all their money, they were still unable to prevent the bleakness that befell the Huo family...

Since a once glorious family collapsed in the blink of an all, it suddenly became the topic of many gossips.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen was not particularly surprised by it all.

Even if Huo Da didn't do any crap like that, his family would still end up falling with the God of Fortune acting behind their backs.

What he minded more was... Su Yan.

During the entire week, she acted as if she was intentionally avoiding Xia Keke and him. She did not stay in her dorm, nor did she attend class much. She even turned off her phone and refused to reply to WeChat. It was as if she had evaporated off the face of the earth.

"Ye-zi, I don't really thing to say about my little sister and you,"

Su Yiyun shook his head in front of his sportscar. “I can’t intervene, nor do I have any methods of doing so. Just let nature take its course!”

Ye Zichen nodded with a sigh. Ever since the affability level dropped to 500, it no longer dropped anymore.

However, Su Yan ignored him, and he couldn’t do anything about it.

She wouldn’t even go out to meet him when he went over to the Su household to see her.

“Oh yeah, here’s your shitty sword sheath back,” Su Yiyun handed Ye Zichen the sword sheath wrapped in the cloth and smiled. “I have a date, so I’ll stop wasting time with you.”

“Date? You?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. “You sure you don’t mean a f*ckbuddy? You can actually have a proper date? Which rich family’s young lady has been targeted by you this time?”

“Am I that sort of person?” Su Yiyun retorted.

“Yes. If you don’t believe me, ask our roomies whether you are or not,” Ye Zichen smiled playfully.

“I was just young and naïve back then. My heart wandered as I was unable to find a home for my soul. Let me tell you, I’m serious this time!”

“When do you not say that? You’re gonna end up with a new one in less than a week,” Ye Zichen shrugged.

“It’s serious this time!” Su Yiyun said with an expression filled with sincerity. “This girl isn’t any rich girl. She’s different from other people.”

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but start to doubt himself when he saw Su Yiyun’s expression, “You sure?”

“Why would I lie to you! Alright now, if I talk to you any longer, I’m going to be late for my date.”

With that, Su Yiyun got into the car and drove off.

Ye Zichen shook his head, then got into his own car with the sword sheath and returned to the apartment. Due to Third Fatty Jin recently cultivating the Immortal Heart of Pure Yang, he had broken through from his power level of zero and reached the spiritual body stage.

However, Ye Zichen had already leveled up to the False Earth Immortal stage.

There was definitely something to take note of, and that was the Dragon God Ring.

If it wasn't because of the Dragon God being too powerful, Ye Zichen would have definitely beaten up the shameless bastard. It was absorbing spiritual energy from his fingers, and that had directly affected the experience he gained each day.

The experience he gained per day was originally 10, but due to it, the experience gained now turned to 8 per day.

It was exactly the same as before the effects of the Worldly Daoist Robe.

“Boss Ye!”

The moment Ye Zichen opened the door, Third Fatty Jin, who was sitting on the sofa, ran over.

“You got handsome in just a few days. If you go out on the streets, you would definitely turn a huge number of heads. Even I am starting to fall in love with you.”

“Hehe... But why didn't anyone look at me when I was coming?” Ye Zichen glared at Third Fatty Jin with dead fish eyes.

“That's cuz they're blind!” Third Fatty Jin raised his eyebrows. “Since you are so handsome, such a jock and such a stud, they're just not looking because they feel terrible about themselves!”

“...”

If this brat was in a company, he would definitely to pretty well. His kiss ass and being fickle skills are truly top-notch.

What's more, this brat had another positive side. He could show off!

What's more, he shows-off so well that even I kind of have to submit.

“You used all the words you learnt on me, didn't you?” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes. “Stop kissing ass here, it isn't useful on me.”

“Everything I said was the truth from the death of my heart. If there is any falsity in my words, I...”

“You what?”

“I'll gain another five kilograms.”

Third Fatty Jin didn't dare to say anything too extreme. The stuff like Laws of the World were too mysterious, god knows if it was in effect or not each day...

“Hehe! If you gain any more weight, you're going to turn into a ball,” Ye Zichen could only laugh coldly in response.

Third Fatty JIn also smiled coyly. I didn't kiss ass properly, it

seems like I have to do it in another way next time.

At that moment, he noticed the cloth-wrapped sword sheath in Ye Zichen's hands and asked curiously, "Boss Ye, what treasure are you holding?"

Third Fatty Jin was truly capable at what he did since he flattered the target of his words with both the stuff he said and the way he acted.

Basically, he had a really high EQ!

On the other hand, Gu Tian might have said something along the lines of "what sort of crappy thing are you holding? Why did you actually bother to wrap it up with a cloth?"

Ye Zichen placed the sword sheath onto the tea table and unwrapped the cloth...

The rusted sword sheath appeared in front of their eyes.

"What-What treasure is this?" Third Fatty Jin raised his eyebrows.

Ye Zichen was frowned for a moment, before he spoke, "You don't know either?"

I thought Third Fatty Jin would know, otherwise, I wouldn't

have come here!

Third Fatty Jin shook his head.

At that moment, Di Tian, who was scrubbing the floor suddenly twitched his eye, “I know what it is!”

Chapter 307 – Xuan-Yuan Sword's Sheath

Di Tian stood in front of the tea table, with the apron around his waist as his eyes glittered.

Ye Zichen glanced over at Di Tian. After doing it for so long, it seems like he's already got used to doing the chores. He looks so natural with that towel in his hands.

“You know? Then tell me what it is!”

“I'm worried that it would scare you to death if I do,” Di Tian flung his braids, which nearly slapped Ye Zichen across his face.

“I really want to cut off your braids,” Ye Zichen pushed up his sleeves to catch him.

Di Tian hurriedly stepped backwards, with a vigilant look he said, “You can't cut my braids!”

“Then hurry and say it!” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes in annoyance.

Di Tian yammered, “God knows who taught you to be so bossy when you are asking others for a favor.”

“Boss Ho...” Third Fatty Jin immediately noticed. The chance to kiss ass was here.

The moment he opened his mouth, Di Tian reached over to cover it. He had been taught plenty of lessons by the Hou brothers. What's more, the injuries from the previous time had not healed yet, he did not want to get beaten up once again.

“Don't shout!”

Since the hand was the one holding the towel, Third Fatty's face instantly turned green.

Bang.

He pushed Di Tian away and shouted, “Boss Hou!”

Zoom.

The Hou brothers instantly appeared in the living room. It was clear that they had a tacit understanding of each other as they walked towards Di Tian without any questions asked.

“If they hit me, then don't even think about knowing what this is!”

“Are you threatening me?” Ye Zichen glared, then gave a cue to the Hou brothers. “Teach him a lesson!”

Ding dang dong.

A terrible scream echoed in the room. Di Tian clenched his teeth and waved the towel in his hand, as if he was raising a white flag...

The moment the Hou brothers saw the towel in his hand, they immediately stopped.

It seems like this isn't the first time something like this happened.

"Stop beating me. If you beat me anymore, then I really can't endure it anymore," Di Tian pushed himself up from the ground and sat cross-legged on the floor. At the same time, he chunked the towel to the side. "If you guys are going to keep on beating me like this, then just directly kill me."

"You still dare to make threats?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

However, Di Tian finally acted like he had nothing to lose anymore as he shrugged, "Hit me, beat me to death. I've gotten sick and tired of getting beaten up every day. I admit that my status is the lowest among everyone here, and I did do some outrageous things before. I'm here to redeem myself. However, I have looked into the law here. Even murderers don't get beaten up like this in jail!"

"Tsk, you are right on that count," Ye Zichen squinted his eyes. When Di Tian shrugged, Ye Zichen could clearly see through the opening of his sleeve that the brat's body was covered in bruises.

It seems like he has truly gotten beaten up a lot. Otherwise, there is no way that he would be like this.

“Then directly tell me what this is. If you give me a satisfactory answer, then I’ll tell them not to beat you up again in the future.”

“Are you for real?” Di Tian’s eyes lit up. He no longer had any huge dreams.

After getting beaten up for this prolonged period of time, even his temper was gone. All he wished for was not to take revenge, but to not get beaten anymore.

“Of course!” Ye Zichen nodded. “You can tell me now, right?”

“Then I’ll tell you,” Di Tian crawled up from the floor and reached out to trace the patterns on the sheath with a solemn expression. After a long time, he finally responded. “This is a primordial divine item, it is the sword sheath of the Xuan-Yuan Sword.”

“F*cking bullshit, who are you trying to trick?” Third Fatty Jin raised his eyebrows. “Everyone knows that the Xuan-Yuan Sword was lost during the war between the Yellow Emperor and Chiyou, and the sword sheath was cut in two. This is clearly a complete sword sheath. You’re saying that this is the Xuan-Yuan Swords?”

“Did you see that with your own eyes?” Di Tian squinted his eyes.

Third Fatty Jin instantly stopped talking.

“Rumors did say that the Xuan-Yuan Sword was lost, and the sword sheath was cut in two, but nobody has ever seen that. Everything is but a rumor. It is very possible that the rumor of it being cut in two developed as the rumor spread. It might have just been lost with the Xuan-Yuan Sword.”

Di Tian acted with a powerful demeanor as he spoke of the Xuan-Yuan Sword, ‘What’s more, the Xuan-Yuan Sword is a primordial divine item. Everything has a spirit, and naturally that includes the Xuan-Yuan Sword. Do you dare to say that the Xuan-Yuan Sword’s sheath doesn’t? It could very well be the case that after the sword sheath was broken, the broken sword sheath became one once again due to the influence of the spirits! On what basis do you say that I’m bullshitting?’

Ye Zichen glanced towards Di Tian, then towards Third Fatty Jin.

It was clear that Di Tian was very confident in his reply while Third Fatty Jin was far less so, since he was unable to retort at all.

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes and glanced at the sword sheath on the table!

Xuan-Yuan Sword was the weapon I used before I reincarnated. If it really is the sword sheath of Xuan-Yuan Sword, then it should resonate with me.

For example, Soul Pearl Yiyuan had acted very intimately with me the moment it saw me after reforming.

But this sword sheath did not react the entire way at all. It merely laid within the cloth.

“How can you prove that it really is the Xuan-Yuan Sword’s sheath!” Ye Zichen asked.

“My words are proof,” Di Tian’s eyes were filled with a crazed fan’s passion. “Those of us of the Rogue Immortals pretty much all treat the Yellow Emperor as our idol. I am no exception! I know everything about the Yellow Emperor. I naturally researched a lot about the Xuan-Yuan Sword, which was the divine weapon that always accompanied the Yellow Emperor. The sheath’s pattern is partially covered by rust, but I am still certain that it is the Xuan-Yuan Sword’s sheath!”

“...”

Helplessness crept up Ye Zichen’s face.

I never expected this brat to be the Yellow Emperor’s fan. But he actually opposed me. I wonder if he will be devastated if he found out that I’m the Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation.

“Why are you looking at me like this? You don’t believe me?” A hint of rage was displayed on Di Tian’s face. “You actually suspect me of misidentifying the Yellow Emperor’s divine artifact. That is

the greatest insult you can throw at me!”

“ ... ”

Ye Zichen’s face displayed utter speechlessness.

After a long while, Ye Zichen wrapped up the sword sheath with the cloth once again.

Seeing that, Di Tian instantly got worried and stopped Ye Zichen, “What are you doing? Even if it is merely the sword sheath, you can’t just recklessly move the Yellow Emperor’s weapon!”

“Then what should I do? Worship it?” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes.

“That’s not a bad idea,” Di Tian nodded after a slight bit of hesitation. “I’ll put up a plate for the Yellow Emperor later. Just place the sheath in front and worship it.”

“Stop being retarded,” Ye Zichen snorted. Then, when he saw that Di Tian was still going to insist on his own ways, he glared. “I think that you still want to get beaten up?”

“Don’t, I don’t want to get beaten up,” Di Tian hurried raised his hands, then found a way out. “Keep the Yellow Emperor’s sword sheath if you want. It isn’t much use to you. Even if the Yellow Emperor gets angry, he will be looking for you, it has nothing to do with me.”

“Then what are you blabbering on about!” Ye Zichen kicked Di Tian on the butt and took out his phone in order to exchange a Spring-Returning Pill for him.

However, at that very instant, his phone vibrated.

“Bro, help!”

The one who sent the message was True Lord Erlang!

Chapter 308 – Great Dao of Heaven’s Birth

Ye Zichen was slightly shocked when he saw Erlang Shen’s message, but he still quickly replied.

“What’s happened?”

Yet, he still did not see Erlang Shen’s response after a long wait.

Feeling worried, Ye Zichen suddenly thought of the secret scripture in his Treasure Chest.

Great Dao of Heaven’s Birth!

Withdraw.

Would you like to learn the Great Dao of Heaven’s Birth?

Yes.

An astronomical amount of information surge into Ye Zichen’s brain, causing him to be completely stunned for quite a while.

When he finally came back to himself, he raised his eyebrows and called out silently in his heart.

Great Dao of Heaven’s Birth, activate!

Activating Great Dao of Heaven's Birth requires a large amount of cultivation experience, do you wish to proceed?

Yes!

Please select the target for activation.

True Lord Erlang Yang Jian.

Zoom.

A small window of an image appeared in front of Ye Zichen's eyes, which displayed an wasteland without anyone in sight.

Meanwhile, he was also able to hear some levels of squabbling...

"Monkey... Just... Wait!" Erlang Shen's face was covered in bruises, while the Howling Celestial Dog laid on the ground with its tongue out as if it was going to die.

"Hehe, my son, do you submit after fighting your grandpa Sun!?" Great Sage Sun stood on a huge boulder and held out his Jingu Bang.

They had already fought for three thousand rounds merely for the grudges derived from the events that occurred during Yue Lao's new show.

One would definitely not think that Erlang Shen was merely single-handedly getting beaten up. He wasn't the captain of security in the Heavenly Court for nothing.

The Monkey King also lost many patches of fur, while his hair was slightly scorched as smoke arose from it.

“Hehe... Laozi can't be bothered with you,” Erlang Shen squinted his eyes and took a step back. “This was a draw at most, do you understand?”

“My son, you still dare to act cocky with your Grandpa Sun!?” The Great Sage swung down with his Jingu Bang, causing Erlang Shen to hurriedly raise his lance...

Bang.

A huge sound reverberated across the wasteland, and the vibrations from the lance caused Erlang Shen to drop it to the ground.

“F*ck this, monkey, you aren't doing things logically. Laozi isn't going to play with you!” Erlang Shen beckoned towards the lance, then shouted towards the Howling Celestial Dog. “Howling Celestial Dog, bite him!”

“F*ck you,” the Howling Celestial Dog, who laid on the ground, suddenly retorted with human speech. “I told you before coming

here to not fight the Great Sage and again to not fight the Great Sage. You just refused to listen! That's great now isn't it? We've both been beaten up!"

"But he didn't get beaten up!" Erlang Shen glared. "Are you throwing a tantrum at me right now?"

"So what?" the Howling Celestial Dog stood up from the ground with a wobble and morphed into a long-haired man as he cursed. "Just look at what I'm like right now. You're still telling me to go and bite him!? I'll f*cking bite your grandma!"

The image immediately turned towards the Howling Celestial Dog...

Just how should I describe his condition? Ye Zichen thought about it for a long time, then concluded that he could only describe it as pitiful.

Not only was his face bruised, he even lost two teeth, while his clothes were even more tattered than the hobos who lived underneath overpasses.

"You barely got beaten up. Just look at how much that monkey beat me up!"

"So what? Aren't we bros!" Erlang Shen glared. "Shouldn't you be happy when you got hurt for your bro?"

“Are you two done yet?”

A voice leisurely sounded out behind them.

The Great Sage appeared a meter away from them with the Jingu Bang in his hands, while his eyes flashed with a gold light...

“Save the infighting for later, laozi...”

Sun Wukong plucked a monkey hair from his neck and blew on it!

Thousands among thousands of yellow monkeys suddenly appeared in the wasteland!

“My kids, beat them up!”

Erlang Shen looked at the wave of monkeys in front of him, then thought about the lack of celestial spiritual energy due to the prior fighting with Sun Wukong...

He immediately shouted out, “Bro, save me!”

“Save your ass. Kids, hit him!”

The Great Sage took charge and ran forward. Erlang Shen wanted to resist, but he was unable to muster up any strength...

Rumble.

Thunder rolled across the wasteland. The Great Sage stopped at looked up, while the monkeys around him did the same.

“I think we can leave everything at this!” A voice sounded out from the sky.

The Great Sage squinted his eyes and snorted towards the sky, “Who are you? Stop hiding like a coward, come out and fight!”

Ye Zichen, who sat on the sofa, shrunk his neck. Great Sage really does have a terrible temper. If I didn’t speak up just now, Erlang Shen really would have been beaten up.

“Great Sage, give me face. Just stop fighting with Erlang Shen.”

“Heh, who’re you to ask I, Old Sun, to give you face? Even if this son’s real uncle, even if that geezer Jade Emperor came, I, Old Sun, would still give him the stick!

The Great Sage lifted Jingu Bang with a dominating aura.

The eyes of Erlang Shen, who was panting heavily on the ground, lit up, “Bro, that’s you, right?”

“It’s me,” Ye Zichen answered slightly dazedly.

If he did not have the image conjured by the Great Dao of Heaven's Birth, Ye Zichen would never believe that his jerk of a bro was actually such a noob...

He actually got beaten up by the Great Sage to this degree!

And earlier, he even ask me confidently to wait for the news of his triumph return. This...

“Who... Just who are you!” The Great Sage snorted with the stick in his hand. “If you are his bro, then come down and fight I, Old Sun!”

“... I am Sky Sovereign Nameless!” Ye Zichen sighed.

Sky Sovereign Nameless.

Hearing that, the Great Sage paused, then scratched his head, “Are you really Brother Nameless?”

“Then how am I supposed to prove it? Does your stealing food at my secret location count?” Ye Zichen licked his lips.

The Great Sage's face immediately reddened as he chuckled, “You really are Brother Nameless!”

Secret location?

Erlang Shen, who was laid out on the ground, raised his eyebrows, “Monkey, you went over to Brother Nameless’s?”

“None of your business!” The Great Sage glared, then gave him a menacing look.

Erlang Shen rolled his eyes, then went off to the side.

“Since Brother Nameless came to find I, Old Sun, then I, Old Sun, will give you face,” the Great Sage put away Jingu Bang and smiled. “Bro, how about you come down for us to have a chat?”

“... Uhm... This sovereign is still in that secret location. I merely used the Laws of the World to talk with you guys. Both of you are good friends of this sovereign. This sovereign does not wish to see you guys like this. If there is a chance, then I think it is possible for the two of you to become friends!”

“Laws of the World?” Erlang Shen and the Great Sage were both shocked. “You have already started to understand the Laws of the World?”

Ye Zichen was surprised when he saw their shocked expressions. Could I have said something wrong?

Were the Laws of the World not easy to pry into?

However, since he already said so, he could only continue, “I did gain some understandings of it.”

“Amazing!” Erlang Shen raised his thumb towards the air, then chuckled. “Monkey, do you submit? My bro has already pried into the Laws of the World before reaching the complete stage of the Sky Immortal Stage. Take a look at yourself! You’ve already stayed at the early stage of the Sky Immortal level for ten thousand years... Embarrassing!”

“You still dare to complain? Take this!”

The Monkey King waved Jingu Bang and smashed it towards Erlang Shen.

Chapter 309 – Astronomical Spending

If Erlang Shen Yang Jian did not shoot his mouth off, he wouldn't have gotten hit by the stick a few more times.

That being said, deities are really good at taking a beating. I remember Sun Wukong had pretty much took out one yao with a hit on TV. Erlang Shen had taken several hits already, but he merely grunted a few times without any actual problems.

“Monkey, stop!” Erlang Shen quickly held up his hands. Even though he wouldn't die, he really couldn't endure that much beating. “Let's talk properly. Only peaceful lives can help to build up a peaceful home. As the ones standing at the top of the Heavenly Court's fighting forces, we can't always attack each other recklessly.”

“It's cuz you deserve it with your mouth!” the Great Sage cursed.

“Bro!”

“...”

Didn't he ask for this beating!?

Ye Zichen had already felt like Erlang Shen was rather full of himself when he saw how the shameless bastard talked in the group, but since those deities in the group could not match his prowess, he was able to become a reputed flamer in those circles.

However, if one wanted to act shameless against the Great Sage...

The Great Sage would actually beat him up.

Yet, Ye Zichen could not stand idle either, so he could only force himself to intervene.

“Great Sage, stop! Yang Jian is right, both of you are the peak of the Heavenly Court’s fighting force. It’s not good for you to waste each other’s stamina like this. What if those in the Underworld attack right now?”

“If they dare to come, then I, Old Sun, will definitely send them back crying,” The Great Sage said in a dominating tone. Then, he shrunk the Ruyi Jingu Bang once again, returned it to his ear, then twitched his mouth towards Erlang Shen. “My son, since Brother Nameless asked for me to spare you, then I, Old Sun, will leave you alive!”

He then placed his hands up in front of him in respect and looked towards the sky, “See you!”

Thus, he leaped up and disappeared.

Only then did Erlang Shen, who still laid on the ground, curse in annoyance, “Damn monkey, see how I beat you up when laozi breakthroughs into the Sky Immortal level! You merely broke through slightly earlier than me, what are you acting cockily for!?”

“Stop pretending!” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes at Erlang Shen. “Stop getting into fights with the Great Sage, you can’t beat him. Do you actually enjoy getting beaten up? Back then, you said to me confidently that you were going to beat him up, so I thought that you really could. If it wasn’t because I used the Laws of the World to look, I really would have been tricked!”

“Hehe... ehe...” Erlang Shen laughed dryly, patted his butt and stood up once again with a smile. “Bro, you might not know, but I really can beat him at times. It’s just that I have been lacking in my cultivation recently so the monkey surpassed me.”

“Whatever, I don’t want to care. Hurry back and heal yourself!”

“Alright. Seriously, thank you for this time.”

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Erlang Shen increased by 100. Current intimacy level: 400.

Dingdong.

You activated the Great Dao of Heaven’s Birth for 1367 seconds. It costed an average of 100 cultivation experience per second. Total cultivation experience cost: 136700!

This consumption has already been deducted from the Celestial Plate.

“ ... ”

Ye Zichen looked at the notification on his phone blankly.

The intimacy level notification was something he expected since he did save Erlang Shen's life. It really wouldn't make sense if it didn't increase the intimacy level.

However, it was the cultivation experience cost that made Ye Zichen speechless!

This is too outrageous. I merely activated it for twenty something minutes, and it cost me a hundred something thousand cultivation experience.

The secret scripture truly did not lie. It really meant astronomical when it said so!

The stuff I saved with so much effort was all spent on it.

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes speechlessly. I need to keep my usage of it to the minimum from now on. No one could actually afford to use it daily.

When he returned to the mansion from the apartment...

He held the Xuan-Yuan Sword's sheath in his hands. It was something he needed to find a place to store. It was impossible for him to store it in the apartment since it was highly possible for Di Tian, that crazy fanboy, to steal the sheath and run away.

"Hey, why haven't you come home these past few days?" The moment he entered the bedroom, Liu Qing, who laid on the bed, flew over with an unhappy look and pouted. "You stuffed me in here and don't ever come over to play. Why are you so mean!?"

"I really have been a bit too busy recently," Ye Zichen raised his hand to rub her head, then placed Xuan-Yuan Sword's sheath onto the shelf at the head of his bed.

"What is this?" Liu Qing asked curiously.

"This is an amazing thing. Do you know of the Xuan-Yuan Sword?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

"Of course, isn't that what the Yellow Emperor used?" Liu Qing blinked. "We literature students have studied it. Yellow Emperor is one of the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors, he made huge contributions to mankind's development!"

"His weapon was called Xuan-Yuan Sword. It is a legendary divine weapon. It was also named the Xuan-Yuan Xia Yu Sword. It was a sword of the sacred dao. Apparently, it was forged for the Yellow Emperor by the gods with the bronze of the first mountain, and the Yellow Emperor later passed the sword to [Xia Yu](#). One side

of the sword was engraved with the sun, moon and stars, while the other side was engraved with the mountains and woods. One side of the hilt was engraved with agriculture methods, and the other with a strategy to unite the four seas. Later on in history, the sword was acquired by [Tang of Shang](#). Over all, the Xuan-Yuan Sword is a divine sword containing endless powers to slay demons and monsters!”

“You really know quite a lot!” Ye Zichen smiled. “This is Xuan-Yuan Sword’s sheath!”

“Oh, oh, oh, oh!” Liu Qing nodded without even a hint of shock in her eyes.

“You’re not surprised?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

Liu Qing shrugged like it was nothing, “What is there to be surprised about? What does it being the sheath of the Xuan-Yuan Sword have to do with me? What I care about is just when you’re taking me out to play. I really am going to be bored to death from staying here all the time!”

“Don’t be anxious. It’ll be very soon!” Ye Zichen rubbed her head. “The Sacred Water of Yiyuan will be finished soon. Then I’ll take you to the Underworld and revive you. You can play however you want after that!”

“I just want to play with you!” Liu Qing pouted.

“No problem. You can play with me if you want. I’ll take you to the roller coasters and the rest of the theme parks!” Ye Zichen caressed her hair with a chuckle.

“Then it’s a promise,” Liu Qing giggled and stuck out her pinky.

Ye Zichen reached out his own in response and pinky swore with her, “It’s a promise.”

After getting the promise, Liu Qing flew around the room excitedly like a child. Meanwhile, Ye Zichen sat on the bed and focused on Xuan-Yuan Sword’s sheath placed on the shelf.

If it really is the Xuan-Yuan Sword’s sheath, then why is it not resonating with me at all?

It should at least give me a tiny bit of reaction!

I don’t think Di Tian looked like he was lying either when he said with such confidence.

But why isn’t it reacting to me? Could it be that my appearance changed, so it doesn’t recognize me?

Ye Zichen scratched his head, while his phone rang.

He took out his phone, then raised his eyebrows when he saw the caller ID.

It's here!

I've been waiting for this call for way too long!

It's finally here!

Xia Yu (夏禹) – One of the most famous kings in Chinese history. He was famous for flood control.

Tang of Shang (商汤) – The first ruler of the Shang Dynasty. He was a benevolent emperor that was revered by the people. He was also someone who built the palace to remember the Xia Dynasty.

Chapter 310 – Strange Fatty

Bingcheng International Airport.

Xiao Yumei stood by Ye Zichen's side in the boarding hall with eyes filled with her reluctance to part, then said in a manner asking to be spoiled, "Why do you suddenly have to go to the capital? What if I miss you!?"

"Naturally, I have stuff to take care of in the capital!" Ye Zichen caressed her beautiful cheek, then put on a naughty smile. "If you miss me too much, then you can come and find me in the capital. It doesn't take too long to take a flight from here to there!"

"So you want me to go through such a long journey just to give myself to you?" Xiao Yumei smiled dazzlingly. That alluring smile instantly caused a nameless fire to be ignited in his heart.

This woman is really a fairy. Even though I've been with her for so long, I really have zero resistance towards her seduction.

"Stop teasing me. What if I can endure it anymore on the plane and find a stewardess! Then wouldn't you be at a loss!?"

"You dare!?" Xiao Yumei smiled, then patted Ye Zichen. "If you dare to cheat on the plane, then when you come back... Hehe..."

She formed a scissor gesture with her hand, as if she was saying...

I'll cut yours off.

Ye Zichen felt a chill run down his leg. This woman...

“Hehe, I’m just kidding. The broadcast just said that you should be boarding now, so hurry up and go. Otherwise, you might end up running back to me in tears since you missed the flight!” Xiao Yumei said with a smile. “Try to avoid getting into more relationships with girls. I don’t mind if you bring a few little sisters back for me, but I’m worried that the other little sisters might be unhappy.”

“Am I that sort of person?” Ye Zichen shrugged.

“Are you not?” Xiao Yumei said with a meaningful gaze. “The girls over in the capital are so much cuter than the ones here in Bingcheng!”

“You girls are the most beautiful in my heart!”

As he said that, the boarding announcement sounded out once again.

As the reluctance to part in Xiao Yumei’s eyes became more and more obvious, Ye Zichen wrapped his arms around her neck and kissed her lips, “Wait for me to come back!”

“Mm, I’ll always be waiting,” Xiao Yumei nodded.

At the same time, within Ye Zichen's mansion.

Ye Rong sat on the sofa with a look of worry on her face. Ye Zichen had told her that he was going to the capital right before he left.

She had wanted to stop him, but...

She did not say anything in the end.

“He really did go. I hope you won't bump into those people. I really don't know how to face them!” Ye Rong sighed, then stood up from the sofa and returned to her room.

Ye Zichen had chosen to purchase a business class ticket. When he arrived at his seat, he saw a twenty-something years old fatty wearing an eye mask in his seat.

“Dude!” Ye Zichen patted the fatty.

The fatty took off his eye mask with a look of confusion.

It seems like he was asleep just now.

“What is it?” The fatty spoke with a standard accent of the capital, wearing a confused look.

“You seem to be sitting in my seat,” Ye Zichen pointed at the ticket in his hand.

The fatty was stunned for a moment, then after taking a glance at the ticket and the seat number, he quickly moved over by one seat, “Sorry, I was too tired just now...”

“No worries!” Ye Zichen nodded with a smile and sat down.

It was Ye Zichen’s first time in an airplane since he was only able to afford train tickets with the amount of money he had before.

Ye Zichen looked around the plane curiously.

Meanwhile, the fatty suddenly chuckle, “Bro, you are going to the capital for...”

Ye Zichen looked at the fatty vigilantly in response.

Seeing his expression, the fatty quickly explain, “I don’t mean to pry. Let me introduce myself, I’m Yin Qiong. I’m from the capital! I just like to make friends, and since I say brother looks proper and does not seem like a normal person, I just wanted to get to know you.”

“Gu Zichen!” Ye Zichen said plainly.

Gu!

The fatty revealed a look of surprise.

“Brother Gu, it really is fate for us to sit in the same airplane. How about letting brother treat you to a meal after we land?”

Ye Zichen felt rather uneasy by the fatty’s sudden intimacy.

It was his first time meeting the fatty. Why is he so intimate from the get-go as if we are really familiar with each other?

Most people like that aren’t good people.

Ye Zichen ignored the fatty and closed his eyes to rest.

However, the fatty did not give up, “Brother Gu, it isn’t easy making friends when you’re like that.”

“You fatty is seriously a bit weird!” Ye Zichen glared at him. “Am I really familiar with you? You immediately went ‘Brother Gu’, ‘Brother Gu’, but we’ve known each other for less than five minutes, right? Even if you are someone that easily gets acquainted people, you can’t be like this!”

“Five minutes is enough time for us to know each other, right?” the fatty squinted his eyes and smiled. “Meeting is fate, and us sitting together is even more so!”

“I really want to beat you up!” Ye Zichen clenched his fist and glared at the fatty. “Then according to that logic, everyone on the plane is your bro. Just stop sitting here and go to make friends. I saw a few cute girls when I was boarding, you guys might even be able to get to know each other thoroughly!”

“Haha, bro, you really are the same kind of person as me!” The fatty laughed.

Same your ass!

The heck did I say to make him think that? Ye Zichen stopped wasting his breath and turned around to ignore the fatty.

“Hey, bro! Bro!” However, the fatty continue to call him on the side.

Ye Zichen could only pretend as if he didn’t hear anything and shut his eyes.

Seeing that, the fatty smiled, then stopped talking.

“Hello, fellow passengers on the flight!”

A playful laugh sounded out in the cabin. Ye Zichen opened his eyes, and saw a bunch of men holding guns had appeared at a time he didn’t notice...

The surrounding stewardesses and stewards squatted on the floor holding their heads, while the other messengers revealed expressions of unease, or were outright screaming.

Plane hijacking!

What kind of bullshit plot is this? A plane hijack?

Also, how did they get the guns on the plane? Did the security not check them before boarding!?

“We are the Great Thieves Big Babol, but don’t worry, our target is not you. You only need to sit properly in your seats, fasten your seat belts and pretend like nothing is happening!”

The playful laughter sounded out once more, causing Ye Zichen to curl his lips...

What the heck?

This isn’t a plane hijacking!?

Ye Zichen subconsciously looked to the side, and saw that the fatty, who sat beside him had disappeared.

Bang.

At that very moment, a loud noise sounded out at the front of the plane.

Not long later, Ye Zichen saw a man as fat as a ball run over panting heavily, while holding a woman on his shoulder...

“Bro, help!”

Chapter 311 – The Cute Criminals

All of the criminals in the cabin were stunned by the incident, and when the man got closer, Ye Zichen finally managed to recognize that the man was the slightly retarded fatty who sat beside him.

The fatty's forehead was covered in sweat, while the woman on his shoulders continuously struggled in his grasp, kicking as much as she could.

“Bro, help!”

Everyone in the room were shocked by the call. Then, several people with the same clothes as the criminals in the cabin also followed him out.

“Capture that fatty, the mission target is on his shoulders.”

Hearing that, the criminals in the cabin immediately raised their guns, causing the ones chasing after the fatty to shout, “Don't f*cking shoot, actually go and capture him!”

Although the fatty was very fat, he was an agile fatty. With several turns, he was able to avoid the criminals easily, all the while running to Ye Zichen's side and throwing the girl on his shoulders into the seat...

“Bro!” He panted heavily and collapsed on the floor as he pointed

at the criminals. “Help!”

“What’s going on?”

“How would I know... Didn’t you say that there are plenty of cute girls on the plane? I went to chat them up. This is the one I got interested in, but then a bunch of guys with guns suddenly appeared. F*ck... They’re here!”

“Hand the person over to us, and we can pretend like nothing happened!”

It was very hard for Ye Zichen to imagine that these criminals did not immediately rush over to grab the person, and instead asked for the person to be handed over very politely.

“No!” Hearing that, fatty turned around and glared at the criminal. “You guys dare to take laozi’s girl as well? Laozi will kill you!”

“I’ll kill you!” the criminal pointed a gun at fatty’s head, but the fatty did not show any signs of fear on his face.

Ye Zichen was stunned by this. Am I supposed to call the fatty brave or idiotic? Damn, the gun is pointed at his head and he’s not afraid at all.

“Do you think I, Lord Fatty, is gutless? When Lord Fatty was playing with guns, you weren’t even f*cking born yet! Don’t use a

shitty toy gun to scare me, f*ck off. Otherwise, Lord Fatty's going to slap your ass around!"

The moment the fatty finished, the eyes of the criminals twitched, and even their hands holding the guns shook.

Slap.

Another criminal patted his companion's hand, "Don't use a gun!"

Then, a shimmering dagger slid out from his sleeve. It was clear that that criminal was an expert with knives, since the dagger continuously spun around in his hand as if it had a soul.

Not using a gun when they had one, and instead he chose to use a knife...

This is rather thought-provoking.

The security wouldn't make a mistake. They were definitely unable to bring guns onto the plane. However, knives were kind of possible...

Then it became rather apparent that their guns were truly fake like fatty had said.

"Stop showing off, be careful of slicing your hand!" the Fatty

couldn't help but retort.

“You f*cking speak too much,” the criminal kicked the fatty and pointed the dagger towards him. “If you bullshit anymore, then I’ll kill you!”

He pressed the dagger against the fatty’s neck, causing the latter to immediately shut up.

Then, he tried to drag the fatty to the side, only to discover that the fatty was a bit too heavy, so he was unable to do so.

“Gimme a hand!” the criminal shouted to his companions. The nearby criminals immediately walked over to help, but they found that they could not drag him away either.

“F*ck, did this grandson grow up eating fodder!” One of the criminals cursed.

The fatty immediately spoke up in response, “You’re the one who grew up eating f*cking fodder. No, you grew up eating dog food... You’re retarded like a dumb dog. You don’t even know what you’re doing as a criminal and you want to fight over a person with your Lord Fatty!”

“You’re still bullshitting!?”

The criminal pushed the dagger up against the fatty’s neck once more...

The fatty immediately shut up again.

However, Ye Zichen did notice something. Although these criminals spoke rather fiercely, they did not have any intentions to kill.

From the very beginning, they merely threatened people, and did not act like murderous criminals!

These criminals...

Ye Zichen couldn't help but shake his head with a smile and recall the name they announced in the cabin!

Great Thieves Big Babol.

Big Babol?

How about Doublemint!

Do they think that they're gum?

But thinking about that, these criminals are kind of cute.

"Bro, help!" the fatty who was being dragged by the criminals shouted out.

Hearing that, the other criminals immediately squinted their eyes and threatened, “Brat, sit there and don’t move. This doesn’t have anything to do with you!”

“I feel the same. You guys better kill this fatty. This grandson was just f*cking annoying me the moment I got on the plane. Hurry up and kill him! Just kill him! Also, take this woman away if you want. Just make sure the pilot keeps piloting the plane, I’m in a hurry!” Ye Zichen said impatiently.

The girl was stunned as she stared at him meaningfully.

“What are you looking at me for? Do I know you?” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes towards her, then ignored her. Instead, he cursed at the criminals, “Can you hijackers respect your job more? Don’t you all have guns? Just shoot this fatty! Since you already hijacked the plane, how can it be intimidating if you don’t kill someone? What’s more, plane hijacking was a serious crime. If you get caught, then it would at least be a lifelong sentence in jail!”

“You said that there’s police on the plane?” At this moment, a man with a scar on his face walked over and asked with a countryside accent. “Bro, it’s mah first time hijacking a plane. Why didn’t I see police on here?”

“...”

Is this guy retarded?

Ye Zichen stared at the criminals, who stopped what they were doing and looked at him.

“There’s no police on the plane!” Ye Zichen replied.

“Then you were f*ckign lying to laozi!” The scar-face cursed. “If there’s no police, then why are you f*cking scaring laozi? I nearly pissed myself.”

“But doesn’t the plane need to land? Do you think it can just keep flying in the sky?”

“Oh yeah, that’s right!” the scar-face suddenly hit himself on the head. “Thank you so much, I didn’t even think of that. Bro, how should we thank you? It’s our first time doing this... We don’t know anything!”

“...”

What the hell was with these criminals!?

Are they the criminals, or am I? They actually didn’t sort everything out beforehand, and instead boarded the plane to ask a guest on the plane!

All of a sudden, Ye Zichen was extremely worried.

“Do you guys know how to pilot a plane?”

“How is it possible? We all know how to drive tractors, and we’re damn good at that,” the scar-face said rather proudly.

“Then who’s in control of the plane? Where’s the pilot?”

“They-They got kicked to the side. No one’s controlling the plane right now!”

Bang.

Ye Zichen sent the scar-face flying with a kick.

“F*ck you, do you want to die!?”

Chapter 312 – The Undefended Dog Food

I seriously don't know where these idiots came from. They actually came to hijack a plane without bringing anyone capable of piloting one.

Do they really think that planes can fly on autopilot the entire way without manual control?

This isn't a drone, which is fine with a preset program and is not afraid of accidents.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen's kick completely shocked the scar-faced man.

He stood up and patted his butt, "You dared to hit meh. Brothers, beat 'im up!"

All of the hijackers in the cabin rushed over, while Ye Zichen cracked his neck...

Bang bang bang bang bang!

All of these hijackers fell to the floor with just a few kicks.

"If you don't want to get beaten up, then squat there. If anyone dares to move, then I'll beat you to death!" Ye Zichen glared.

However, there were naturally individuals amongst the criminals with a bad temper. Just as that individual wanted to stand up, scar-face immediately stopped him.

“Idiot, don’t go over. We can’t beat him.”

The individual thought about it, and found truth in scar-face’s words, so he didn’t rush up and instead squatted down obediently beside his comrades.

“Fellow passengers. In order to ensure your safety, I’ll be leaving these criminals to you guys. If they dare to move, then use the power of the crowd to beat them. I have to hurry over to the cockpit. Otherwise, we’re all screwed!” Ye Zichen shouted towards the passengers in the cabin.

The passengers nodded in response.

They understood that the criminals were actually just pretending and had used fake guns to scare them.

“Hurry up, we’re here already!” Several male passengers shouted out.

Ye Zichen nodded in response and ran towards the cockpit.

The door of the cockpit was standing open, and when he entered he saw a criminal playing on his phone.

“Who!”

The criminal was clearly of a slightly higher-level compared to the others. At least, he was in terms of vigilance.

When he turned around and saw Ye Zichen at the entrance, he raised his eyebrows...

“You’re a passenger, right? You can’t enter, the bathroom is on the right. Go!”

Although he was vigilant enough, his intelligence was still pitiful.

Ye Zichen grabbed his collar, pushed him to the ground, stepped on him, then took a glance at the terrified pilot and copilot in the corner of the cockpit.

“Find a place to land, I’ve already suppressed the criminals in the cabin.”

“Okay, okay, okay,” neither the pilot nor copilot noticed that the criminals were speechlessly lacking in intelligence, so they looked at Ye Zichen gratefully before returning to their positions and requested commands from air traffic control.

Bang.

Ye Zichen picked the criminal up and chucked him beside the bunch of criminals in the main cabin.

“What happened with you guys? Why are you all squatting here!”

“Can’t you tell? We got beaten up,” the scar-face man cursed in annoyance. “I told you we should have stayed at home and farmed, but you insisted on taking on this big job and do something great. That’s great, we’ve completely failed!”

“It doesn’t matter. Isn’t it possible for crops to wilt? We’ll just treat it as our crops wilting. When we get off the plane, we’ll just go and apologize properly to our wives. It’s no big deal!”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Ye Zichen wasn’t the only one speechless. Everyone who heard what the man said was dumbfounded.

Do they really don’t know about laws? They actually think that they can go home after getting off the plane...

However, Ye Zichen did not want to tell them the truth. People take desperate measures when they’re pushed against into a

corner. If he was to tell them that they would be taken away by the police after landing, they might crazily retaliate, causing the passengers in the cabin to be endangered.

Ye Zichen glared at the criminals, then returned to his seat to sit down.

“Thank you,” the one who spoke up was the cold lady. Ye Zichen glanced at all, and noticed that the woman had kept a plain demeanor the entire time.

Her face was calm even when people did not notice the criminals’ lack of intelligence.

Yet, what surprised Ye Zichen were her words of thanks.

“Hey, Xiaohua, I was the one who saved you from the abyss. I’m truly depressed that you actually thanked him. Could this world be one that looks at faces?” The fatty squatted on the floor and complained.

The lady immediately snorted coldly, “I’ll say it again. I’m not called Xiaohua, I’m called Hua Zhiru! Also, as for the... harassment against me just now, I will send you a letter from my lawyer after returning to the capital. Fatty Yin, don’t think that I don’t dare to do anything to you just because you got a few shits in your family.”

Hearing that, Ye Zichen realized that the girl and the fatty seemed to know each other!

“Xiaohua, this is where you are wrong. Why am I, your Yin-ge, on this plane? Isn’t it to protect you? Didn’t I already tell you not to get on this flight during boarding because it was dangerous? You just refused to listen!”

“Hehehe... A hundred and ten percent of what you say is false. Do you think I would believe you?”

“But didn’t you get into danger?” the fatty raised his eyebrows with a smile. “This is my seventh time saving you. Even if you were ice, you should have been melted by my fire. Why are you still like this to me?”

“Like what?” Hua Zhiru twitched her mouth. “Don’t try to get with me from now on. Didn’t your parents set up a marriage target for you? It’s that girl from the Qi family... Also, it wasn’t you who saved me this time, it was this guy beside me.”

“He’s my bro!” the fatty hooked his arm around Ye Zichen’s shoulder and said in a familiar tone. “If he wasn’t my bro, do you think he would have saved you? As for the girl from the Qi family, I can only chuckle...”

The fatty’s expression suddenly darkened, “That woman... Has so many lovers outside, but she still f*cking pretends to be a tender little girl in front of my parents. I really want to ignore her!”

“That’s your fault. You were the one who loved her to no end before!”

“I was young and naïve...”

“Then don’t try to get with me now. I get annoyed just from looking at you!”

As the two spoke, they begun to argue once more.

Ye Zichen became completely astounded, “Err... Can you mind the others around you when you flirt? You truly caught me off-guard with all the dog food!”

“Who’s flirting with him!” Hua Zhiru glared.

Meanwhile, the fatty chuckled on the side, “Naturally, that would be you!”

“F*ck off...”

When the plane finally landed, the criminals were taken away by the police to nobody’s surprise, while Ye Zichen and the others were also taken back to the station to make a statement.

Originally, the police had wanted to reward him for his actions, but since Ye Zichen was in a rush, he refused it with a smile, then took the quickest flight to the capital.

What made him rather shocked was that the fatty and Hua Zhiru

also went with him...

What made him even more amazed was that his seat was right in the middle of theirs, and they argued for the entire journey.

“Seriously, the dog food...” Ye Zichen sighed. He truly regretted not buying any earplugs before boarding.

Yet, it was fortunate that it did not take long for the flight to land.

The capital...

I’ve arrived!

Chapter 313 – Mysterious Fatty

At the capital's airport.

As Ye Zichen walked out of the airport, he saw ten-odd cars parked right outside, while a line of people held up black umbrellas.

“Young Lady.”

One of the thirty something years old man walked over, and nodded towards the fatty when he saw him.

“Young Master Yin.”

“Why black umbrellas?” Hua Zhiru's expression changed drastically. “Grandpa...”

“Young Lady, let's not talk about these outside. Hurry up and return. The household is in a mess, and awaiting you to take control,” the man said with a frown. “But Family Head's second daughter returned, she...”

“Alright, speak no more. We're heading back!” Hua Zhiru frowned.

Yin Qiong also frowned, “Xiaohua, if you need help, then contact me. I'm in charge of the Yin family right now!”

“We’ll see!” Hua Zhiru sighed softly, then smiled towards Ye Zichen. “Big Brother Gu, see you.”

Then, she waved and entered the car.

Ye Zichen licked his lips, “You two are pretty amazing in the capital. This set up... incredible!”

“Haha, my family is just a small one. Rather, her family is the one that is actually rather amazing,” Fatty Yin said softly. “Something has probably happened to their family’s old man. It seems like her family would have quite a bit of problems, but I believe that Xiaohua can deal with it properly.”

“Mm, being able to deal with it is for the best,” Ye Zichen nodded in agreement.

“Bro, meeting you was fate. How about I take you out for a meal?” Fatty Yin chuckled.

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes, “Just go away off to the side, you said that plenty of times. I’ve already got sick of it.”

“But what I said was the truth. Are you going to say that it’s not? On the plane...”

“Don’t mention the plane to me. If it wasn’t for you, there

wouldn't have been so much trouble!" Ye Zichen snorted and rolled his eyes in annoyance. "Hurry up and screw off. I have a friend coming over to pick me up. I don't want to worry about you."

"Then I'll wait for your friend with Brother Gu."

Fatty Yin acted like his shadow and refused to leave. Ye Zichen glanced at him, then disregarded him before taking out his phone to call Gu Tian.

"Brother Ye, you've arrived?" Gu Tian answered the call.

Ye Zichen glanced at the fatty beside him, "Yeah, I've arrived. Wow brat, you actually didn't come and pick me up!"

At that moment, Gu Tian sat on the sofa with several elders behind him. All of them had a look of solemnness and rage on their face as they stared at Gu Tian, who was on the phone.

Gu Tian glanced at the people beside him and revealed a helpless expression, "I really can't get away right now. Can you find a nearby hotel? I'll immediately come and find you when I'm free."

"Gu Tian, do you think that we old people have a lot of spare time? You actually call your friend while chatting with us?" the person who spoke was a square-faced old man.

"Lil' Tian can call whoever he wants. How is it bothering you

guys?” the white-haired old man opposite the square-faced old man snorted. “We didn’t beg you to come. It was you guys who insisted on coming over!”

“Hmmp, yeah. You guys only came over because you don’t get respected at the other young master’s places. You guys actually have such a temper. If you can, then leave, go and show off with the other young masters. We two old fellows are enough for Lil’ Tian,” Elder Hua, who had always been with Gu Tian, added.

“The competition for the Junior Clan head is very soon. We only came due to giving you face...” said the square-faced old man. “All of the other young masters have plenty of supporters. Gu Tian only have you two old guys. Even though we came, you actually did not greet us with smiles, and instead dared to let out a tantrum upon us!”

“Stop arguing!” Gu Tian covered the phone’s mic and shouted. “Gu Tian naturally welcomes the seniors who have come over, but don’t be too outrageous. I, Gu Tian, do not lack a few supporters like you guys!”

Gu Tian quickly spoke into the phone once again after snorting coldly, “Brother Ye, I have things to deal with here. Just endure a hotel for now. I’m really sorry, this...”

“Alright, just busy yourself!”

Ye Zichen was able to tell from the call that the situation was quite dire for Gu Tian. Thus, he did not waste any more of Gu

Tian's time and instead hung up the call.

The fatty beside him raised his eyebrows with a smile, "Your friend isn't coming?"

This fatty...

Ye Zichen felt a bit helpless. After the period of contact, although Ye Zichen did not know the fatty rather well, he was certain that the fatty wasn't a bad person.

But having a shadow-like person stick with him was way too annoying.

"How does my friend coming or not matter to you?"

"Hehe, Brother Gu, you have to improve your temper," Fatty Gu pursed his lips and smiled. "You should be someone from Bingcheng, right? You might be rather capable there so it is fine for you to speak rather recklessly. But don't forget, this is the capital..."

"So?"

"In the capital of the country, there are plenty of capable and amazing people. Not everyone has got as good of a temper as me. If you are always like this, then wouldn't you be in a pinch if you offend someone you can't deal with?" Fatty Yin smiled faintly with a meaningful look in his tiny eyes...

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes, then raised his eyebrows as he looked at the fatty, “Then what do you think I should do?”

“We should have a meal together,” a smiled bloomed on Fatty Yin’s face.

Ye Zichen raised his hand, and covered the fatty’s face, before pushing him, “F*ck of!”

Then he immediately hailed a cab and left.

Fatty Yin chased after the car for a while, and only when the car disappeared from his sights did he shake his head with a faint smile, “He’s got a temper. I, Lord Fatty, likes that!”

Fatty Yin took out his phone as he hummed, “Help me protect someone called Ye Zichen. He might be under the alias of Gu Zichen. Do not let him get into any danger in the capital. Remember, I said any... As long as anyone does as much as points at him, even if it was indirectly, squish them dead!”

Then, he hung up the phone. At the same time, the fatty frowned and shouted, “Geezer, what exactly do you want? You took over my body and flirted with the Hua family’s girl. Do you want to screw me over? Sis Qi will definitely scold me to death!”

“Damn fatty, you don’t recognize good will!” the fatty suddenly cursed. “Laozi is helping you.”

“Helping me my ass. The one I like is Sis Qi!”

“That slut has lovers outside. [Your head is fucking growing moss now](#), and you’re still calling her Sis Qi. The Hua family’s girl is amazing, she acts without any hesitation. I think that girl is rather suitable for you.”

“I don’t like violent women.”

“You don’t have a choice!” The fatty smiled playfully. “I think she’s suitable for you, so you must be with her. What’s more, I have the control of your body right now!”

After a while, he spoke up once more, “Be a good boy. When Ye Zichen leaves the capital, then I’ll return the body to you!”

In Chinese, a man wearing a green hat is when his lady has sex with another man, and this is taking it one step further.

Chapter 314 – Troubled Brothers

Ye Zichen chose to stay in an express inn nearby. When he got into his room, he laid on the bed and thought about what the fatty had said. He had chosen to ignore the fatty because the brat was just too annoying.

However, when he calmed down and thought about it, the fatty's words did have some truth to them.

Indeed, he was able to act in a powerful manner in Bingcheng. That was because he had Wei Chen and the Hou Brothers protecting him. Even if he faced something that he couldn't deal with, they would be able to deal with it.

However, he was a complete foreigner in the capital. It would be embarrassing if he failed at showing off in front of someone with a really powerful background.

A more important point was that Bingcheng did not have many Rogue Immortals. However, there were plenty of hidden families in the capital. If Ye Zichen bumped into them and got bullied, he could only suffer silently.

Since he had nothing better to do, he took out his phone and opened WeChat.

Ye Zichen saw that plenty of friends in real life had sent him a message. Most of them asked him why he didn't come to class, and after replying all of them, he set his gaze upon Su Yan's message.

“You went over to the capital?”

Ye Zichen did not mention going to the capital with anyone except Su Yiyun.

The fact she knew clearly meant that Su Yiyun had told her.

“Mm, I did.”

The moment he sent the message, Su Yan instantly replied.

“Did you arrive yet? Do you have some place to stay? Be more careful over there. Don’t be too eye-catching. You’ve got a temper, so don’t cause trouble.”

The warm words caused Ye Zichen to raise the corner of his lips slightly. Since she had intentionally avoided him for so long, he did not expect that she would actually talk to him just because he had went over to the capital.

“Understand, I’ll stay put.”

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and took out a Thousand-Li Tracking Sigil from the Treasure Chest.

Target lock on.

Not long later, a scene appeared in front of Ye Zichen's eyes.

Su Yan hugged a brown teddy-bear in a dark room. The light from the phone's screen illuminated her beautiful face. However, there was no hint of a smile on it at all, as her eyebrows knitted together in a look of worry.

Ye Zichen subconsciously raised his hand to help smoothen her brows, but when his hand touched the image...

He realized that it was just an image.

"That's good," Su Yan's face displayed her worrying cease as she sent the reply to Ye Zichen.

"Mhmm. Take good care of yourself in BIngcheng. If you have anything on your mind, then talk to me about it."

Ye Zichen replied in a testing manner.

"I'm fine, I don't have anything on my mind."

After sending the message, Su Yan stretched lazily.

"Alright, it's getting late, so I'm going to rest. Sleep earlier, and don't stay up too late."

“Okay.”

In the image, Su Yan put her phone onto the shelf by her bed, then laid down on the bed with a wry smile.

Ye Zichen frowned when he saw her like this.

She is obviously in a bad mood right now. Why is she deliberately hiding it from me? Could it be that she's in some sort of trouble that she didn't want to tell me about?

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes, then used his phone to dial Wei Chen's number.

“Boss Ye, you landed safely?” Wei Chen chuckled.

Ye Zichen answered simply, then raised his eyebrows at Su Yan's look of worry, “I landed safely. Oh yeah, help me find out if Su Yan is in some sort of trouble. If there is, then deal with it for me.”

“Su Yan? Sure, no problem!”

After finishing giving Wei Chen orders, Ye Zichen laid on the bed and slowly closed his eyes as his eyes as he looked at the image of Su Yan in front of him.

Early next morning...

Pale light shone through the window onto Ye Zichen's face. He woke up blurrily, then after a simple wash-up, he picked up his phone from the shelf next to his bed...

Dingdong.

His phone suddenly rang. Ye Zichen opened WeChat, and saw that someone new had sent him a friend request.

He took a look.

Marshal Horse has sent you a friend request.

Who the hell is Marshal Horse?

Ye Zichen examined the person's profile picture closely, then notice that it seemed to be Horse-Face of the Underworld.

Accept.

"Big Brother Ox-Head, do you think he will lend me the money when I ask him?" Horse-Face sat on a stone chair, while Marshal Ox-Head sat opposite him.

"How would I know? You maxed out your card while picking up girls, so you came to me, but it isn't like you don't know what sort of situation I'm in. Think about how long we haven't worked for.

Since you don't have the money, did you really think I would?" Ox-Head said helplessly.

"I just thought that you might have some savings? I didn't expect that you borrowed it from others as well," Horse-Face sighed. "Also, why hasn't the rich ghost servant that you talked about added me? Do you think that he might know I want to borrow money, so he didn't accept the request?"

"That little brother isn't someone like that," Ox-Head said with confidence. "If you need help, then he will definitely help. He was the one who lent me the money when the bank dunned me."

"Ai, then I hope he will accept my friend request later!"

The moment he said that, the communication device in his hand that looked like a phone buzzed.

I have accepted your friend request. Let's chat!

"Big Brother Ox-Head, that little brother added me. Hahaha..." Horse-Face opened his mouth wide.

Ox-Head smiled plainly, "I told you he would accept, right? Tell him about your situation. Remember, don't mention me. I still owe that little brother money, so you asking him as well isn't that great of a thing. Oh yeah, lower your status when you speak as well..."

“When have we put on airs before?” Horse-Face sighed.

Even since the Underworld’s and the Heavenly Court’s relationship worsened, Ox-Head and his days in the Underworld just got worse and worse.

“That’s true,” Ox-Head let out a long sigh, giving off a pitiful feeling to onlookers.

“Marshal Horse-Face, I wonder what business do you have with this little one?”

Ye Zichen was not familiar with Marshal Horse. He had seem Marshal Horse talk a lot in the group, but they have never chatted there before.

But his intimacy level is alright!

Friendly.

At least it isn’t cold, so he definitely did not come to cause trouble.

“Little brother, I wonder what you’re doing?”

Horse-Face started off like a friendly neighbor, causing Ye Zichen to be confused. Since he didn’t know Horse-Face’s true thoughts, Ye Zichen could only smile and reply.

“Waiting!”

“I see!” Horse-Face smiled, then eyed Ox-Head who was beside him.

Ox-Head continuously gave signals towards him, so he clenched his teeth.

“Bro, let me tell you the truth. Actually, I want to borrow some merits from you!”

...

What’s going on?

Ox-Head had just borrowed some from me a few days ago, and now Horse-Face too?

They really are troubled brothers.

But since I don’t have anything to do with the merits, then alright. What’s more, I can even be their debtor, so if I go to the Underworld in the future, or have some business with the Underworld, it’ll be easier to handle.

“Alright, tell me, how much do you want to borrow?”

Chapter 315 – Temper

“Look!”

Horse-Face stuck his phone excitedly in front of Ox-Head, as if he was showing off that Ye Zichen had agreed to lend him money.

Ox-Head merely smiled in response, “I told you that little brother would lend you money!”

Horse-Face nodded like a pecking chick and laughed, “Big Brother Ox-Head was right!”

“Alright, go on and chat with him. Actually, borrowing the money is the way to go,” Ox-Head patted Horse-Face’s shoulders. He nodded, then replied to the message nervously.

“Little brother, how much can you lend me?”

“Just tell me how much you need. If I have it, I will happily lend it to you.” Ye Zichen replied.

“I want fifty thousand!” Horse-Face clenched his teeth after a brief hesitation.

Dingdong.

The moment he said that, a red packet appeared on his screen.

You received Beanbun's red packet.

Heaven and Earth merits x50000.

Horse-Face nearly jumped up in his excitement when he saw the number.

I really managed to borrow it.

I just wanted to say a higher number so that it would be easy to bargain if he refused. I didn't expect him to actually send that much over.

"I've already sent fifty thousand Heaven and Earth merits. Please confirm."

Ye Zichen replied with a smile

Seeing the message, Horse-Face quickly confirmed it.

"I got it, got it. Thank you so much, little brother. I will repay you the money as soon as possible."

"Mm, it's good that I can help Marshal Horse," Ye Zichen smiled. "If there is nothing else, then I'll be off. I have other things to do here!"

“Okay, okay, then go and busy yourself!”

A smile bloomed on Horse-Face’s face.

Seeing that, Ye Zichen smiled, placed his phone back into his pocket, and got up from the bed.

It was his first time in the capital, so he wanted to go out and around the city. Even though he lacked a tour guide, he felt fine with wandering around by himself.

Ye Zichen pushed open the door, and just as he walked out, a young man looking at his own phone with his head lowered bumped into him.

Ye Zichen frowned, but what made him even more speechless was that the young man actually shouted before he had even said anything, “Are you f*cking blind? Can’t you see that I, your grandpa, am walking forward? F*cking hell, it hurts so much. Hurry up and move aside!”

The young man had an idol-like face, very white and tidy teeth as well as high-class clothes.

However, the way he acted so full of himself made Ye Zichen scowl.

“The f*ck are you looking at? Can’t you hear that I’m telling you to f*ck off? Can’t you hear me? God damnit, this is so unlucky. I actually met a retard so early in the morning!” He raised his hand pushed Ye Zichen’s shoulder as he cursed...

Slap.

Ye Zichen grabbed the young man’s stick-like arm, then glared at him in displeasure.

“F*ck you, you dare to grab laozi’s hand? Hurry up and release laozi. Otherwise, laozi will kill you!”

“Hehe...”

The cold smile on Ye Zichen’s face became ever more apparent. I swear that I didn’t want to cause trouble, but I always meet these sorts of retards.

“Smile your f*cking ass,” the young man cursed as he tried to struggle out of Ye Zichen’s grip.

“Do you believe that if you talk bullshit one more time with me, then you don’t need your arm anymore?” Ye Zichen glared at the young man. The young man still wanted to curse, but when he met Ye Zichen’s cold gaze, he immediately swallowed his words. “From now on, wipe your shit-eating mouth before you speak. I can smell the stench on your breath.”

He kicked the young man out of the way, then patted his hands in disgust before snorting and leaving.

After a long while, the young man stood up from the floor. He gazed at Ye Zichen's back with a dark look. At that moment, his phone rang, and the caller ID showed someone named "Darling". He smiled coldly, then answered the phone in a troubled manner, "Darling, I got bullied."

The capital was definitely the center of Huaxia's economic development. One could tell how developed city was just from the huge buildings and tall bridges.

Ye Zichen had originally thought that Bingcheng was pretty good, but when it was compared to the capital, the difference was like that of a village and a city.

Ye Zichen stretched his neck as he wandered on the streets. The young man from that morning did not affect Ye Zichen's good mood. Just as he was about to find a place to rest, an expensive sportscar stopped in front of him.

The car's license plate number was 66555, making it blatantly obvious that the person inside was no ordinary person.

Not long later, a woman wearing beautiful clothes and high-heels while thick makeup coated her face, walked out.

"You..." The woman's tone carried an underlying disgusting

pride, and her high and mighty attitude displeased people quite a bit.

“You’ve got business with me?” Ye Zichen glanced over. The woman looked kind of pretty, but he did not like the thick make-up, nor her tone, which made her seem like a queen and everyone else was subservient to her...

“Of course I have business with you!”

At that moment, the car door opened once again.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, then his expression immediately grew dark. The person who got out was no other than the young man who cursed him that morning.

“Darling, this is the grandson. He actually dared to curse me.”

“Hehe...”

Seeing that, Ye Zichen finally understood. The girl should be the person the young man got to help him get back at Ye Zichen. What Ye Zichen despised most was the flattering look of the grandson, who acted just like a sugar baby.

He wasn’t acting like a man at all. He’s just bringing shame to all men.

“You two came to cause trouble for me?” Ye Zichen swept his gaze over the woman’s face.

The woman nodded, “It isn’t exactly causing trouble. My honey just told me that he had been troubled. I just came to help him get even.”

“Then!?” Ye Zichen smiled.

The woman frowned when she heard his cold tone, and let out a long sigh, “I don’t like your tone at all.”

“Who cares if you like it or not? You aren’t my wife, so why do you care?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, then snorted at her and the young man beside her. “I don’t like your attitudes either. So? Come at me, I can take it.”

“Zeze, you’ve got a temper!” the woman smiled playfully.

“You really are right. I don’t have anything else, except temper,” with that, Ye Zichen stepped forward and slapped the young man. “I found your little shitty act really annoying this morning. I wanted to give you a chance, I didn’t expect you to get a woman to cause trouble for me. So f*cking shameful.”

After the slap, Ye Zichen kicked him, causing him to fall on his back. Then, Ye Zichen took a step back and looked at the woman in front of him with a faint smile, “This is my temper. So, what do you think?”

Chapter 316 – A Woman Shameless to the Core

The woman's expression turned ugly, but she did not speak.

The sugar baby, who had been kicked to the floor by Ye Zichen, stood up, and cursed immediately, "Little bastard, you f*cking dare to hit me!?"

Slap.

Ye Zichen's response was another slap. Ye Zichen tilted his head and smiled at the young man, who now covered his face, "I told you this morning that you should wipe your mouth after eating shit. I'm very annoyed by the stench that comes out of your mouth!"

"You..." the young man glared at Ye Zichen, then walked up to the woman in a troubled manner. "Baby, he bullied me!"

Slap.

The woman slapped him with the back of her hand, "Don't you know how to fight back!? What are you acting shameless to me for? You are completely bringing shame to me!"

The young man did not dare to curse after being slapped by the woman. He merely held his face in a troubled manner, clenched

his teeth, then smiled, “Baby, don’t get angry. It’s not good for your body.”

“F*ck off!” the woman kicked the young man’s stomach. Since she was wearing heels, the kick hurt the young man much more than Ye Zichen’s kick had.

The young man held his stomach and painfully squatted on the ground. At the same time, the woman also took out a card and chucked it in front of the young man, “F*ck off.”

“Baby!” The young man maintained his grandson-look.

“I told you to f*ck off!” the woman glared at him. The young man shrunk his neck in a slightly terrified manner before picking up the card from the ground and scrambling off.

Ye Zichen watched their internal conflict with interest.

When the young man finally left their sight, the woman walked in front of Ye Zichen with a look of admiration, “I like a man with a temper.”

“But I don’t like you,” Ye Zichen smiled with his hands in his pockets.

The woman ignored his reply, took out a name card from her bag and handed it over, “Qi Cheng, nice to meet you!”

“It seems like you aren’t well liked in your family, right?” Ye Zichen laughed playfully, and did not accept the name card.

“Why do you say that?” Qi Cheng revealed a curious smile.

“I could tell it from your name, Orange, why aren’t you called Mango?” Ye Zichen smiled playfully.

“Hehe...” Qi Cheng’s smile froze, then she glanced at Ye Zichen. “I like a man with a temper, but not a man who dares to use his temper on me.”

“Girl, you thought too much!” Ye Zichen tilted his head with a mocking smile. “Did you really think that I was chatting you up? Laozi told you from the start, laozi isn’t interested in types like you. Just back off when it’s suitable, why did you have to ask to get insulted!”

Creak.

The woman’s expression grew sullen. At the same time, another sportscar stopped in front of them, and an extremely handsome man climbed out of the car.

“Lil’ Cheng, what are you doing here?”

As the man looked towards Ye Zichen, his eyes radiated a hint of

hostility.

It was as if he was worried that Ye Zichen would take his place.

“I’m interested in this guy,” Qi Cheng said without any hesitation, and smiled with no regards towards the handsome man’s dark expression. “He’s got a temper. I like that a lot.”

“Got a temper?” the man raised his eyebrows.

“Mhmm!” Qi Cheng smiled, and licked her lips. “It is only an accomplishment when I dominate this sort of man with a temper. He’s so much more powerful than you guys.”

Ye Zichen put on a shocked expression when he heard that.

What’s going on?

Could the man that scuttled off just now not be the only sugar baby she has? This brat in front of me as well? What’s more, she said you guys...

Wow!

That’s kind of amazing.

This woman truly heavy tastes. Just how many guys are there at

night!

Qi Cheng ignored the man and looked towards Ye Zichen with a mesmerized look. She lifted her hand in order to touch his cheek, but he quickly dodged it.

God knows what this woman has touched with her hands. What if I get a disease from letting her touch my face?

“Baby, come with me. I can support you, I can give you mansions and sportscars. You can even like other women! As long as you are in the capital, I can help you deal with any issues. The only condition is that you have to listen to me!”

The handsome man beside her trembled in anger, but he didn't dare to speak up.

He understood very clearly that he was merely a dog being toyed with in Qi Cheng's eyes.

“Oh yeah,” seeing that Ye Zichen did not speak, Qi Cheng spoke up once again after taking a glance at the man beside her. “As long as you are with me, I can tell them all to f*ck off from my side! How about that? I've already compromised a lot. As long as you nod, mansions, good cars, and beauties are all yours. A chicken turning into a phoenix is talking about this moment!”

Qi Cheng continuously licked her lips, “My tongue is very good as well, and so is my technique. If you want, we can go to a hotel right

now to try it out!”

“ ... ”

This damn whore is really shameless.

Just what sort of family environment could produce a monster like her...

Helplessness covered Ye Zichen’s face, while Qi Cheng looked at him in anticipation.

“Hehe, f*ck off!” Ye Zichen said towards the woman, rolled his eyes, then walked away.

Hearing that, Qi Cheng’s expression grew petulant. She squinted her eyes and blocked off Ye Zichen’s path with a smile, “There is no man, who I, Qi Cheng, wants, that has not accepted my offer. I already gave you a lot of face when I didn’t cause trouble for you when you hit one of my men in front of me. Don’t take a mile when given an inch, and attempt to challenge my already low bottom line!”

“Let me return the words directly to you,” a cold light flashed in Ye Zichen’s eyes. “Laozi is even disgusted when I speak to a slut like you.”

“You are the first one who dares to continue talking to me like that after hearing that I’m Qi Cheng. If this is your way of getting

close to me, then you have succeeded. You have already piqued my interest. You heard my promise just now as well, that is my sincerity. Let me remind you, don't be too outrageous!" Qi Cheng maintained a warm smile on her face, but acted as if she had a split personality, as she acted softly at times, and cold at others.

"Are you insane? If you aren't going to f*ck off, then I'm going to leave!"

Ye Zichen took a step to the side, only to find a bunch of black-suited bodyguards surround him.

"There are only two choices in front of me. Either be with me, and become a dog! Or, we'll chat about the problem of you causing me to lose face just now," Qi Cheng walked over with a faint smile, while the young man beside her did the same.

This brat really does not recognize appreciation, so my status is not in danger.

At that moment, he truly wished for Ye Zichen to start fighting with the bodyguards, as only then would his position be truly safe.

"You seriously trampled on my bottom-line," Ye Zichen glanced at the bodyguards. "You actually dare to act so cockily in the capital, do you really think that laws don't exist?"

"The words of Qi Cheng is the law in the capital!" Qi Cheng smiled, then traced her fingers over her lips. "Tell me your

choice!”

Chapter 317 – Lord Fatty’s Arrival

Ye Zichen truly pitied Qi Cheng’s parents for having a daughter like her.

The bodyguards were clearly used to this kind of situation. They were unable to interfere with Qi Cheng’s private life. The only thing they needed to worry about was...

Her safety.

“Answer, I feel like you will give me a satisfactory answer.”

What Qi Cheng did was a technique that she often used. All men that she got interested in would become her dog in the end through threats and rewards. One example was the handsome young man beside her. He was originally the owner of a small company and had lived a pretty good life in the capital, but he still became her dog in the end.

“Answer?” Ye Zichen smile playfully, then slapped Qi Peng so hard that she fell over onto the ground. “I never hit women, but I really can’t endure it when facing a bitch like you. Give you an inch and you take a mile. You didn’t f*ck off when I told you to. You really think that laozi has a good temper?”

“Young Lady!” The bodyguards were stunned, while the handsome young man also helped her up

“What are you guys spacing out for? Hit him! I’ll take responsibility if he kills you!” Qi Cheng screamed. She had never been hit before. She was the darling daughter, the princess, in her home! Nobody dared to hit her!

Ye Zichen not only slapped her face, what he slapped was her pride as well. She had to make a man who hit her like Ye Zichen had pay.

Yet, for some reason, aside from causing pain, the slap nourished another emotion in her heart.

She couldn’t help but clench her legs together, while a hint of redness surfaced on her face.

“Little Brother, sorry.”

The bodyguards knew how outrageous their employer’s actions were, but they had no choice. Since they took the salary, they had to work for it. Even if it was something that went against their moral code, they still had to do it.

“No worries, I will try my best to take care of you guys later!”

Ye Zichen could feel like the bodyguards were very strong, but no matter how strong they were, they could not be at the level of a False Earth Immortal.

Just as Ye Zichen got ready...

Bang bang bang.

“F*cking hell, someone actually dares to make a move on Lord Fatty’s Brother. Are you guys sick of living!?” a cocky voice rang out.

Ye Zichen looked up and saw that Fatty Yin had walked over from behind the bodyguards with seven or eight hulks with him.

All of them had a beer bottle in each hand and had smashed them onto the bodyguards’ heads.

“F*ck, why didn’t you guys ask around who Brother Gu is brothers with? You actually dare to block off my bro? If Lord Fatty doesn’t beat the shit out of you, it just means that your asshole’s too tight.”

The people the fatty brought were clearly way more civilized than Qi Cheng’s bodyguards...

Not long later, the people the fatty brought over had knocked down all of Qi Cheng’s bodyguards.

At that moment, the fatty also turned around and walked over, “Bro, you didn’t get scared, right? I’m so sorry, I actually let you meet this sort of situation!”

“Why did you come?” Ye Zichen had a look of speechlessness on his face.

The fatty scratched his head and chuckled, “I had wanted to grab a drink with you, but my subordinate told me that someone wanted to beat you up, so I brought my crew over.”

“...”

Ye Zichen did not reply out of shock.

Yet, Qi Cheng ran over with lit eyes, “Yin-gege.”

“Qi Cheng!” the fatty frowned. Isn’t this the girl that the brat I’m in likes?

“Yin-gege, hurry up and tell your people to stop. Those are all my people. This brat bullied me, swore at me and even hit me. Look at my face... It’s beaten red,” Qi Cheng continuously spoke coquettishly.

However, the fatty merely glanced at her...

“F*ck you!”

He raised his hand and slapped Qi Cheng’s face, causing her to be completely stunned.

Impossible, how could the fatty hit me?

“You already got f*cking engaged to laozi, yet you still have some sugar babies outside. Moss is already growing on my head now, and you are still acting shameless with laozi! Do you really think that laozi doesn’t dare to slap you!? Go away and stay there!”

The fatty waved his hand, then quickly took out a piece of paper towel to wipe his hands as he muttered, “F*ck, I actually touched her. I have to wipe it off quickly, then go and get disinfected at the hospital later. It really would be terrible if I got tinea.”

Qi Cheng’s expression turned even stiffer...

The handsome man beside her immediately became unhappy. He took a step up and pushed the fatty.

“Apologize to Lil’ Cheng.”

“Where did you come from?” the fatty squinted his eyes, then swept his gaze over the man and Qi Cheng. “You are her f*cking sugar baby, right!?”

With that, he grabbed a beer bottle from the ground and smashed it onto the man’s head.

“F*ck you, a lover actually dared to act cocky in front of laozi. Laozi’s gonna beat you to death!”

Bang, bang, bang.

As he kicked the man on the ground over and over again, the sound of bones shattering could occasionally be heard. The man continuously coughed up blood, but Qi Cheng did not even do as much as look at him.

He was just a dog to her, his life did not matter to her at all.

However, Ye Zichen could not accept it any longer.

He quickly said to the fatty's bodyguards, "Hurry up and call the ambulance and the police. Otherwise, your family's young master is going to beat the guy to death"

Immediately afterwards, he held the fatty and dragged him back. Ye Zichen took a look at the man on the ground... The man continuously coughed up blood as his cheekbone also appeared to be indented...

"Bro, what did you pull me back for? Let laozi beat this son of a bitch to death!"

"If you beat him more, then he'll die. Isn't there something f*cking wrong with you if you want to go to prison after he dies?"

Ten-odd minutes after Ye Zichen finally comforted the fatty,

several police cars and an ambulance stopped beside them.

When the police walked over, Ye Zichen was stunned.

“Lin Xiyue!”

No wonder I haven’t seen her around Bingcheng. So she actually come to be a police officer in the capital.

Lin Xiyue, who was in police uniform, was also stunned. She looked at Ye Zichen with an expression full of shock, “Why are you here?”

Then she glanced at the man who was just put onto the stretcher, “This isn’t the result of your work again, is it? Say, why do you cause so much trouble? This is the capital, and not Bingcheng. Even though we’re familiar with each other, I can only do everything by the books!”

“...”

Ye Zichen was speechless.

Why was my image so terrible that other people would think that I did it at first glance?

“If I say that I didn’t hit him this time, would you believe me?”

“Then who did it?” Lin Xiyue glanced at the fatty and Qi Cheng, who stood on the side.

When the fatty met her gaze, he immediately stuck up his chest, “I, Lord Fatty, did it. It has nothing to do with my Brother Gu!”

“Gu?” Lin Xiyue was surprised.

Ye Zichen quickly gave her a look, causing Lin Xiyue to nod ever so slightly, before shouting at the policemen behind her, “Arrest him and take him back to the station.”

“Don’t just arrest me. The girl over there is also related,” the fatty shouted towards Qi Cheng as he held out his hands and allowed the police to take custody of him.

“Take them away together,” Lin Xiyue shouted.

“You guys can’t arrest me. I’m Qi Cheng! Qi Cheng of the Qi family!” Qi Cheng screamed.

However, Lin Xiyue merely revealed a hint of disdain, “Qi family? Is that amazing? Capture them all!”

Finally, she set her gaze upon Ye Zichen.

“Fine, I’ll go as well.”

Chapter 318 – You Should Help Them Lose Some Weight

Ye Zichen, Qi Cheng and Fatty Yin sat inside the police car together, while a policeman escorted them.

Qi Cheng continuously stared at Ye Zichen within the car as she licked her lips. Seeing that, Ye Zichen's face turned as dark as charcoal.

Too shameless.

The situation is already like this and she still isn't f*cking giving up?

At that moment, the fatty wrinkled his nose, "What's that smell? Bro, do you smell the stench of a slut?"

"Yin Qiong, shut your damn mouth," Qi Cheng blushed in anger.

Only then did Fatty Yin raise his eyebrows, "F*ck, you really are shameless. Why didn't I notice it before? Slapping you a few times actually gave you an orgasm. No wonder there's a stench. Your pants are all wet, aren't they? Hurry up and go home to get your mom to help you get changed."

"Yin Qiong, I told you to shut it!"

“Hey, why should I, Lord Fatty, shut it? You’re the slut, and not Lord Fatty. Lord Fatty isn’t contaminating the environment just by speaking. Look at these white teeth! Smell it, what nice breath!”

The fatty revealed his teeth as he spoke.

Ye Zichen elbowed the fatty and told him to stop talking.

However, the meaning behind the action completely changed in Qi Cheng’s eyes.

“This gege is so much better. Gege, I like you so much!”

“Fatty, stop cursing her. I hope that you can hit it!” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes.

“Alright,” with that, the fatty stood up from his seat.

Seeing that, the police frowned, “Sit down. Where do you think this is? Sit down properly, otherwise, you’re in for a treat when we get to the station.”

“Tsk, it’s as if you can lock me up. Dude, I’m Yin Qiong!” the fatty chuckled in disdain.

The police officer did not reply, but merely sighed in his heart.

The police were in the worst spot possible in the capital. They might have to arrest those people they can't afford to offend all the time. Even if you took those people to the station, it was merely a formality since they would just leave after a while.

But apparently Captain Lin had a background as well. I wonder if she can subdue these military, governmental officials and rich second generations.

When the police car arrived in the police station, Lin Xiyue said to the policemen beside her, "You guys are in charge of interrogating these two kids. I'm going to take a look at this one."

"Captain Lin, these two kids definitely aren't normal people, how can we..." the police revealed a troubled expression.

Lin Xiyue frowned, "Don't be afraid of the powerful. Do I need to teach you guys that? Just go when I say so, why so much bullshit!? If you don't get anything, then contact their families to take them back. Do you really think that we can make them stay here?"

"That's true," the other policemen sighed with a nod, then walked respectively into the fatty's and Qi Cheng's room.

One policeman remained in front of Lin Xiyue.

Lin Xiyue frowned, "What are you standing here for?"

"I'm going to interrogate the guy with captain!" the officer

replied.

“No need, I’m enough,” with that, Lin Xiyue walked towards Ye Zichen’s room. Right before she entered, she glanced at the policeman. “Do not come in while I’m interrogating him!”

“Oh!”

When Lin Xiyue finally entered the room, the policeman raised his eyebrows and snickered, “Captain can’t have gotten interested in that guy, right? Zeze... This is huge news!”

Bang.

Lin Xiyue threw her notebook onto the table with a lot of force, then slammed the table and snorted, “Name!”

“We’re already so familiar... Seriously... Is trying to scare me like that fun?” Ye Zichen sighed helplessly. “Hurry up and release me from these handcuffs, it feels terrible.”

“Sir, please cooperate. We are merely police officer and criminal here,” Lin Xiyue answered seriously.

“Wow, you really have no conscience. I didn’t do anything, and you’ve already determined me to be a criminal. Fine, fine, fine. I’m called Ye Zichen, I accept my punishment!” Ye Zichen said helplessly.

Haha.

Lin Xiyue couldn't help but snicker, then immediately nodded with a straight face, "Alright, Mr. Ye. Everything you say here will be used in court. Since you have accepted your punishment, then this case is solved. Due to the crime you committed being intentional assault, we will hand this case over to the court of justice after the victim's injury report is out, and let the court pass a verdict."

Slam.

Lin Xiyue put away her notebook, then begun to walk out.

Ye Zichen quickly stuck out his leg. Due to being caught unaware, Lin Xiyue fell towards him.

"Get up quickly, you're suffocating me!"

Ye Zichen continuously stared at Lin Xiyue's breasts, causing her to frantically get up...

"I said it already, your boobs are too big. Hurry up and help them lose some weight. You nearly suffocated me!"

"Go and die!" Lin Xiyue punched Ye Zichen's chest, then snorted. "You still aren't acting properly after so long!"

“Hehe,” Ye Zichen chuckled dumbly, then listed the handcuffs. “Hurry up and take these things off...”

Lin Xiyue rolled her eyes and unlocked the handcuffs.

Ye Zichen stood up from the chair, then stretched lazily, “Seriously, my entire body is sore. Oh yeah, why did you come over to the capital? Wasn’t your job going well over in Bingcheng?”

“My family told me to come back,” Lin Xiyue giggled. “You? Why did you come over to the capital? Did you cause enough trouble over in Bingcheng, so you decided to find another place to do the same?”

“You guessed it right!” Ye Zichen chuckled. “I was merely following Officer Lin’s footsteps. I’ll cause trouble wherever you are. Only then can you get promoted and not lose your job!”

“So, you did it for me?” Lin Xiyue snickered.

“Mhmm, you can put it that way. I’m just a person that is super thoughtful for someone,” Ye Zichen nodded with certainty.

Since they were old friends, Ye Zichen naturally had plenty of things to chat about with her after seeing her in another place.

After they chatted for a good half an hour or so, Ye Zichen pursed his lips and sat on the chair, while he placed his feet on the table, “How’s it going with your boyfriend?”

“Him?” Lin Xiyue, who leaned on the interrogation desk suddenly stiffened, then smiled faintly. “We’re about to get engaged!”

“Yo, this is great news!”

As he spoke, Ye Zichen fumbled around his pockets.

Not long later, he scratched his head in embarrassment, “I didn’t bring my chequebook. How about you give me your WeChat? I’ll give you a huge red packet and use that as my present for you two!”

“Can I interpret that as the way of you tricking me for my WeChat?” Lin Xiyue smiled with a hint of playfulness.

Even though Ye Zichen did not have that intention, in order to my their conversation more interesting, he put on a look as if he was found out, but was still denying it, “No way, I’m such a proper person.”

“Alright, I’m just teasing you,” Lin Xiyue’s face was full of smiles when she chatted with Ye Zichen. However, when she thought of that person...

“Actually, I don’t want to get engaged to him. I’m... regretting

it!”

Chapter 319 – “Breaking Off An Engagement” Trend

Ye Zichen licked his lips and did not say anything when he saw Lin Xiyue’s gloomy expression.

An uncorrupted official can’t help with family matters. Lin Xiyue’s relationship problem with Zhao Ziming was not something that Ye Zichen could stick his hands into. Even though he had been annoyed by that brat from a long time ago, and judged the brat to not be a good person, just what could Ye Zichen do about it?

Lin Xiyue smiled faintly as she stood up from the interrogation desk, “Why am I talking about all this to you?”

“Just talk if you want. Although I can’t help you with anything, I can be a trash can. My mouth is tight, so I definitely won’t tell others what you tell me,” Ye Zichen smiled with a kind gaze.

“Never mind, there’s nothing to be said. I asked for it,” Lin Xiyue shrugged, then smiled. “It’s getting late. The fighting didn’t have anything to do with you, so you can leave!”

“You’re not arresting me?” Ye Zichen was shocked. This is not like Officer Lin at all. Back in Bingcheng, her greatest joy seemed to be arresting me.

“Hurry up and leave before I change my mind. Or else, hehe...” Lin Xiyue chuckled as she crossed her arms in front of her.

Sensing the hostile gaze, Ye Zichen quickly jumped up from the chair, then ran towards the entrance of the room with a coy smile, “Then I’ll leave quickly.”

“Mm, oh yeah, let me remind you. The people here aren’t quite the same as in Bingcheng, you have to be careful. Also, neither Yin Qiong nor Qi Cheng are normal people, so don’t get too close to them.”

“I feel like you aren’t a normal person either, should I stay away from you too?” Ye Zichen smiled plainly, then waved towards her. “Don’t worry, I’m extremely cowardly, so I do everything very carefully. Nothing will go wrong. I’m off!”

Lin Xiyue’s gaze were focused on Ye Zichen as he left the room.

Meanwhile, the terrible expression on her face became ever so apparent...

Zhao Ziming.

I really don’t know what it’s going to be like in the future if I really marry him.

After Ye Zichen walked out of the interrogation room, he saw that both Fatty Yin and Qi Cheng had come out before him. A man and a woman stood respectively beside them, both of whom seemed to be the people that their families sent to bail them out.

“Bro, you finally came out. If you didn’t come out soon, I would have rushed in with my guys,” Fatty Yin walked over to Ye Zichen with a passionate gaze, then shook his shoulders. The moment he got near Ye Zichen, he leaned over and said mysteriously, “What were you doing inside just now? It was so long that it was enough for going at it once. You and that big boobed officer seemed rather familiar with each other, she can’t be your... Oh wow, bro, that’s amazing!”

Ye Zichen felt completely speechless when he heard the fatty’s shameless tone. When he shoved the brat away with a roll of his eyes, he saw that Qi Cheng had already walked over to him.

“I am starting to fall for you. It’s not the desire of conquering you, I am truly starting to like you.”

“... Is there something wrong with your brain?” Ye Zichen snorted with a frown.

“Don’t... If you hit me here, you have to get interrogated by the police again. I don’t want you to be troubled,” Qi Cheng’s eyes displayed a passion that could not be hidden. “You can go to the Qi household to find me if you make up your mind. As long as you come, I’m yours!”

With that, she turned around and got in the car.

After they got in the car, the golden-framed glasses wearing woman beside Qi Cheng raised her eyebrows, “Young Lady, that

fatty just now was Young Master Yin Qiong, right? If you said that...”

Qi Cheng nodded, then said playfully, “So what if I said it? That fatty is a pussy. Grandpa merely agreed to the marriage due to face. But since I don’t like him, that means I don’t like him.”

“But...” the woman wished to continue, but was interrupted by Qi Cheng.

“No buts. I feel like the guy just now is great. I like him a lot... Don’t talk to me about the rest. Driver, start driving!”

As the car slowly drove away, Fatty Yin stood on the curb with an indifferent expression.

“Bro, you have to stay away from that slut. You’ll be in tears if you end up getting some sort of disease!”

“I’m not interested in her,” Ye Zichen shrugged with a smile.

“Young Master!” the man beside them raised his eyebrows. “Miss Qi Cheng is engaged to you!”

“Screw off. Go back and tell my dad that I don’t want to get engaged to the bitch Qi Cheng anymore. I’m going to break off the engagement tomorrow. I always feel like there’s moss on my head when I’m tied to her,” Fatty Yin cursed in annoyance.

“You...”

“You what? Recently, you’ve gotten a bit too much to say, I don’t like it at all. I’m telling you, laozi going to break off the engagement is to face slap him. Have you not heard of this trend? Back then Nalan Yanran broke off her engagement with [Xiao Yan](#), that was so shameful! I’m going to help men gain face,” Fatty Yin said proudly. “A man should break off engagements!”

“...”

The man was confused. Just what is he talking about? But since one of their names had two characters, it might be the child of a large family.

Thus, under the fatty’s urging, the man also drove away.

Leaving Ye Zichen and Fatty Yin...

“Bro, now we can grab a drink together, right?” Fatty Yin said in anticipation. Ye Zichen looked at him speechlessly. “Why must you drink with me!?”

“Hehe, that has been my wish for a longtime!” The fatty replied mysteriously.

“...”

Although Ye Zichen had not yet understood just who the hell the fatty was and what he wanted, since he said that coupled with the fact that Ye Zichen did not want the fatty to pester him every day, Ye Zichen could only nod helplessly, “Then let’s go.”

“Oh yeah!” the fatty smiled excitedly. The two then proceeded to walk out of the police station side by side. Just as they were about to walk out of the front gate, a sportscar stopped in front of him...

“Ye Zichen!”

Ye Zichen subconsciously looked up and saw that the driver was no other than Zhao Ziming.

“Why did you come to the capital?” Zhao Ziming had a sullen look on his face.

Ye Zichen disregarded it and smiled, “Isn’t it normal to come to the capital? Or is it that I’m not allowed here?”

Then, he suddenly remembered the words that Lin Xiyue said to him in the interrogation room... “Be nice to Lin Xiyue, since you guys decided to get engaged, then stop flirting around. She’s a good girl!”

“There’s no need for you to remind me. She’s my wife!” Zhao Ziming essentially screamed out.

Ye Zichen merely smiled in response before turning towards Fatty Yin with a smile, “C’mon, let’s go and eat!”

Just as they were about to leave, the door to the sportscar suddenly opened. Zhao Ziming jumped out of the car and grabbed Ye Zichen by his collar.

“Tell me exactly why you are in the capital!”

Reference to Battle Through the Heavens.

Chapter 320 – Ye Zichen’s First Advertisement Failure

Zhao Ziming’s veins popped up as he grabbed Ye Zichen’s collar tightly and stared at the latter with bloodshot eyes.

“Grandson, let go!” the fatty raised his hand to smack Zhao Ziming’s hand away. However, Zhao Ziming pushed the fatty with his left hand, knocking the fatty aside as he cursed. “F*ck off! If you come over here one more time, laozi will kill you!”

Zhao Ziming’s hint of madness in his eyes caused Ye Zichen to frown.

Although Zhao Ziming wasn’t any good person before, at the very least, he had a bit of tolerance. He would never make his emotions so painfully obvious. Just how did he become like this...

“Tell me, what did you come to the capital for!?” Zhao Ziming roared.

Ye Zichen licked his lips and sighed, “I merely came to handle some business in the capital. You seemed to have thought too much into it.”

“Handle some business?” Zhao Ziming curled his lips, then laughed mockingly with a sinister gaze. “You are just a f*cking poor student from Bingcheng. Handle some business in the capital? Do you think that laozi is a goddamn retard? Be honest,

did you come to the capital to fight over Lin Xiyue with me!”

“There’s something wrong with you!” Ye Zichen frowned.

“Yeah, there is something wrong with me,” Zhao Ziming laughed and opened his mouth wider and wider. “Laozi is sick. I’m sick!”

Bang.

Ye Zichen frowned and smacked Zhao Ziming’s hand away forcefully, “Don’t come and go crazy with me even if you are sick. No wonder Lin Xiyue said that she doesn’t want to be with you. Who would dare to be with you when they see your retarded look?”

“You two already met?” Zhao Ziming glared. “Since you two already met, you’re still telling me that you didn’t come to fight over her? Ye Zichen, I’m telling you, Lin Xiyue is someone belonging to me when she’s alive, and she’s my ghost when she’s dead! Even if she’s dead, she has to die in front of my eyes. Don’t even think about getting between us. Otherwise, I’ll cause you and your family to die...”

“You...” Ye Zichen grabbed Zhao Ziming by the collar forcefully.

At that moment, the police in the station ran out the door alongside Lin Xiyue.

None of them knew how to handle the situation when they saw

it.

Lin Xiyue also ran over with a frown, “What are you guys doing!?”

“Lil’ Yue, you’re here,” a bright smile instantly covered Zhao Ziming’s face. “I just met savior, and spoke a bit to him, but the moment he heard that we were getting engaged, he immediately got angry...”

This shift of blame...

Lin Xiyue bit her lips and looked over. Ye Zichen pushed Zhao Ziming backwards, “I wish you both happiness.”

Then, he immediately turned around to leave, while Fatty Yin also followed suit after giving Zhao Ziming the middle finger.

Zhao Ziming stared closely at Ye Zichen’s fleeting back, while a sinister look filled his eyes. After a long time, he turned around with a bright smile, then held Lin Xiyue’s hand, “Lil’ Yue, why didn’t you tell me that savior came?”

“I didn’t know that he came to the capital,” Lin Xiyue retracted her hands from his with a replused look. “I still have a case to follow, so I’ll talk to you later.”

As Zhao Ziming watched Lin Xiyue leave, his gaze became more and more sinister.

Bang.

He punched towards the sportscar door, causing a huge dent to appear, then drove away with a gloomy look on his face.

“Bro, what was wrong with the grandson just now?” Fatty Yin frowned unhappily in a hotel room. That brat actually dared to push me. F*ck, he’s too cocky.

“Officer Lin’s boyfriend,” a hint of worry appeared on Ye Zichen’s face when he mentioned Zhao Ziming.

Right now, Zhao Ziming really is a bit crazy. Could he have gotten some sort of mental scar? Why did he turn like this?

“F*ck, that grandson...” Fatty Yin snorted angrily. “He actually dared to push Lord Fatty! Bro, how about I find a chance to kill him off. That way, you and Officer Lin can also... And Lord Fatty can be relieved of anger.”

“Please don’t...” Ye Zichen quickly stopped him. This fatty truly isn’t scared of things getting out of control. He actually wants to kill the guy off.

Zhao Ziming clearly isn’t a normal person. If he is killed, then there might be some sort of trouble later on. What’s more, you can’t just decide to kill off a normal person either, since it is a human life after all...

“This is no good, that’s no good, then did Lord Fatty get bullied for nothing!?” the Fatty opened his eyes wide and downed the glass of wine. “Oh yeah, bro! Why did that brat call you Ye Zichen just now? Isn’t your surname Gu...”

“I...”

Just as Ye Zichen wanted to explain...

“Nameless!” a soft call sounded out in Ye Zichen’s mind. He subconsciously blanked out for a moment, then immediately realized that the person who spoke should be Chang’e.

“I’m here, what is it?” Ye Zichen replied.

“Nothing, I miss you,” Chang’e smiled softly. “You didn’t contact me at all these past few days, so I was worried that you are busy. That’s why I didn’t dare to disturb you.”

“I have been a bit busy recently.”

“I know you’re busy,” Chang’e smiled. “Oh yeah, those things on my face all calmed down.”

“Were the treasures I gave you pretty good?” Ye Zichen chuckled. If the modern day products are good for the deities in the Heavenly Court, then I can find a chance to advertise it there.

“It’s alright, but I didn’t use it,” Chang’e replied.

When Ye Zichen sent the products over to her, she truly thought that it was some sort of treasure. However, right after using it, she felt like it was truly a lot worse than the pills that maintains beauty and youthfulness from the Heavenly Court.

There was a huge difference in both the ingredients used and its effects.

However, what she could not deny was that the product did have a tiny bit of effect on removing pimples, but that effect was almost negligible.

“Why didn’t you use it?” Ye Zichen was confused.

Thus, Chang’e told her all about the products’ issues. Ye Zichen’s first reaction after hearing the issues was...

How’s that possible!

All of the products I chose to sell in the Heavenly Court, in terms of both food, phones and diamonds...

They are all able to gain the favor of the deities in the Heavenly Court. Why doesn’t cosmetics work?

Then, Ye Zichen immediately understood.

Ingredients and components!

No matter what, the Heavenly Court was a place where deities resided. Any simple plant there would be a treasure in the mortal realm. Meanwhile, no matter how good something from the mortal realm was, it was still a mortal product.

The reason that the food and phones could sell so well was because the phones had plenty of functions, while other ones in the Heavenly Court found the food rather new and refreshing.

As for diamonds, those were selling well only because women like shiny things.

On the other hand, products like cosmetics were way too low of a quality for the deities in the Heavenly Court.

It seems like I have to be more careful when I gift treasures to the deities in the Heavenly Court in the future. Ye Zichen said quietly to himself.

However, the next thing that Chang'e said in Ye Zichen's mind completely shocked him!

Chapter 321 – Chang’e Is Descending To The Mortal Realm

“You said you’re descending to the mortal realm!?”

Chang’e’s words caused Ye Zichen to shout out in surprise.

Ye Zichen, who was holding a wine glass, shuddered, spilling the wine some of the wine out.

“Bro, what are you talking about!?” the fatty was completely confused.

Ye Zichen ignored him, sat down and replied in his mind, “You said that you want to descend to the mortal realm. Why did you suddenly have that kind of thought?”

“What’s so strange about it? Aren’t you in the mortal realm?” Chang’e said proudly. “I wasn’t just sitting idle during this period of time that you didn’t contact me. I have been deducing your location, and from the result just now, I found out that you are at that abandoned place!”

Abandoned place?

Is the place where we’re living an abandoned place of the Heavenly Court?

“Why aren’t you saying anything? Are you surprised that I actually managed to find you?” Chang’e said like a little woman.

“I am indeed a bit surprised,” Ye Zichen replied plainly, while a tsunami coursed through his heart.

I’m not just a bit surprised, I’m utterly shocked.

If the news of Chang’e descending to the mortal realm to find me wasn’t surprising, then that would definitely be strange.

“Actually, I’m really nervous right now.”

Within the Moon Palace, Chang’e’s face was bright red as she sat by the window and gazed at the ancient tree outside the Moon Palace. Ever since her and Ye Zichen declared their relationship, Wu Gang had never went to chop would by her palace again, allowing her to rest extremely well, and let her skin become much better.

“We already confirmed our relationship so long ago. It’s time that we meet,” Chang’e transmitted her voice with a blush.

Meanwhile, the Jade Rabbit muttered on the side with a packet of spicy gluten in her hands, “Sis, why is your face so red?”

“Just go and eat your spicy gluten,” Chang’e said in annoyance.

The Jade Rabbit stuck out her tongue, then skipped away with the packet of spicy gluten.

“Me-Meet.”

Ye Zichen stuttered, while feeling strange about Chang’e’s determination to descend.

“I’m preparing to descend three days from now. I have to organize some things during these few days. You have to wait for me,” Chang’e giggled.

“Oh, okay!”

“Hehe, then see you in the mortal realm!”

After Chang’e transmitted her message, she clenched her beating heart with her right hand as she bit her lips with a look of joy, while settling everything that she had to.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen turned completely shocked in the room.

She really is going to descend.

“Bro, what happened?” Fatty Yin raised his hand and waved it in front of Ye Zichen’s eyes. “Why are you so shocked? If you give me a heart attack like this, I’m going to ask you for compensation.”

“...”

Ye Zichen maintained the look of shock on his face.

“Bro, bro...” Fatty Yin waved his hands in front of Ye Zichen a few more times.

Only then did he return to his senses and turned to look at Fatty Yin, “What happened?”

“Your shocked appearance seems like you just got cooked by someone,” Fatty Yin revealed a look of helplessness. “You still didn’t tell me why that brat called you Ye Zichen!”

After a long when, when Ye Zichen finally calmed himself down, “That? The name I told that brat was my artist name. My artist name is Ye Zichen...”

Fatty Yin immediately acted like he understood, “So it’s like that.”

However, he couldn’t help but retort in his heart.

You’re still pretending? I’m going to see how long you can keep the act up for. Artist name? Do you really think laozi doesn’t know what you’re really called?

After a few rounds of drinking, Ye Zichen and Fatty Yin left the

hotel.

Actually, Fatty Yin was not satisfied by the drinking at all, since Ye Zichen had maintained the look of shock the entire time, causing the fatty to get rather annoyed.

“Bro, how about we change a place to drink a few more rounds?”

“Nah, I’m a bit tired, so I want to go back to the hotel.”

With that, Ye Zichen hailed a cab and left.

When Ye Zichen returned to the room at the inn, he laid on the bed and stared at the ceiling blankly.

Chang’e is really going to descend?

The reason she fell for me might have been due to how mysterious I am. If she descends and sees that I’m just a normal person, she’ll definitely be very disappointed.

What’s more, how would I find the time to take care of her if she really descends?

I already have enough women by my side, if another one appeared, then those girls would definitely beat me to death.

Ye Zichen licked his lips, then took out his phone to seek out Taibai Jinxing.

Since he's the head butler of the Heavenly Court, if I ask him, he might have a way to stop Chang'e from descending.

"Geezer, geezer..."

"What is it? I'm busy," Taibai Jinxing directly replied with a voice message.

Busy?

Ye Zichen immediately activated the Great Dao of Heaven's Birth and targeted Taibai Jinxing.

At that moment, Taibai Jinxing was sitting within the principal's office of the Heavenly Court school. He frowned, while looking at the reports that the teachers and class tutors sent over.

"These little bastards, seriously..."

The establishment of the school was decent, and that fact that the students were managed by others meant that the celestial second generations no longer laid idly around, and instead had something to do.

Yet, even though the celestial second generations were quite

responsible, the little ones didn't know how to study properly!

They merely only knew how to play every day without doing anything else.

“What happened, those midgets aren't listening to you?”

Ye Zichen sent a voice message plainly. Not long after that, laughter suddenly sounded out in Taibai Jinxing's room.

The laughter completely shocked Taibai Jinxing...

“Who, who dares to pry at this sovereign!”

“Who? I'm Sky Sovereign Nameless!” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes speechlessly as he looked at the shocked Taibai Jinxing. “If there's a problem with the school, come and find me! I accept consultations any time, but obviously we have to talk about the fees!”

“You-You begun to understand the Laws of the World?”

Taibai Jinxing's expression was full of shock

Hearing that, Ye Zichen was also momentarily stunned...

I seem to recall Monkey King and Erlang Shen mentioning prying

into the Laws of the World when I went to resolve their conflict.

“So what? How could you tell!”

“Prying into the Laws of the World, that’s exactly what you’re doing. This sovereign cannot feel your existence, but can receive your voice transmission, that’s utilizing the Laws of the World...”

Taibai Jinxing’s expression as beyond speechless. When he thought about how he had been a deity for over a hundred thousand years...

He was still merely a late-stage Sky Immortal, while the old brat, Old Lord Taishang was merely a complete stage Sky Immortal.

But anyone that can pry into the Laws of the World were definitely half a step into the level of an Immortal King.

Yet, the brat I targeted was just a normal mortal, how is it possible for him to...

“Tell me the truth, just who exactly are you? Why can you actually pry into the Laws of the World while living in the abandoned place!”

“I can only say that I don’t understand what you’re saying,” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows speechlessly. “I am just a mere mortal. Laws of the World? Are you trying to scare me? Oh, I get it. Do you want to scare me so that I’ll decrease the consultation fees? We’re

acquaintances, so I definitely won't rip you off!"

"Don't be vague. Say it! Are you the reincarnation of a heavyweight!"

Taibai Jinxing stood up, slammed the table and frowned.

Chapter 322 – Taibai Jinxing Who Gets Angry At The Mention Of Kids

Taibai Jinxing's eyebrows knitted closely together. He was certain that his spokesperson in the mortal realm was definitely a normal person.

Then, there was only one possibility for him to be able to pry into the Laws of the World...

He was the reincarnation of a heavyweight.

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes. Just what's going on with Geezer Taibai?

He said that I'm the reincarnation of a heavyweight?

Could this old guy know that I'm the reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor? But from his tone, he doesn't seem too sure. That's why he's asking.

"Geezer, stop trying to scare me. If I really am the reincarnation of a heavyweight, then would I be trying to be a grandson in front of you? Wouldn't I just directly smack you dead?"

I can't tell this geezer about me being a reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor. Great Emperor Qingming told me that the relationship between the Three Realms are very tense right now.

I really can't do anything if I told him carelessly, and this old guy decided to cause trouble for me.

Although Ye Zichen did not know how strong the geezer was, since the geezer was the head butler of the Heavenly Court, he would at least have to be someone of the Sky Immortal level. If he was hitting me, then he could smack me to death with just one slap.

“No? Impossible!” Taibai Jinxing was extremely stubborn, so he insisted on his belief that Ye Zichen was the reincarnation of a heavyweight.

Just like Xuanzang was the reincarnation of [Golden Cicada](#) of the Buddhists...

All of Xuanzang's disciples were fierce people that have now become Sky Immortal experts, while Golden Cicada also became a Sky Immortal expert when he regained his Buddhahood.

But, I haven't heard of anyone in the Heavenly Court deciding to go through reincarnation recently!

Then he's clearly from the other two realms...

“I really am not. Geezer, how can I make you believe what I say!”

Ye Zichen also displayed a helpless expression.

Actually, Taibai Jinxing was not that confident in his judgement. If Ye Zichen was truly the reincarnation of a heavyweight...

Then someone from the other two realms would definitely protect him properly. However...

“You say that you’re not, then how are you able to transmit your voice to me?”

“I just sent you a voice message. If you don’t believe me...” Ye Zichen muttered, then sent a screenshot of the voice message in the chat. “Look, I merely sent you a voice message. God knows what’s going on at your side. I’m in the mortal realm, I can’t see what’s going on in the Heavenly Court.”

What Ye Zichen was doing was to pretend that he was truly wronged. He had to make himself seem extremely low, while he stared closely at what Taibai Jinxing was doing.

After the old brat saw his screenshot, a sign of relief appeared on his face.

Not long later, he smiled faintly and replied.

“Hmmp, even so, you cannot prove that you’re not the reincarnation of a heavyweight. This old man can help you keep the secret, but only if you help me deal with my problem at no

cost!”

This old guy!

It was clear that Taibai Jinxing no longer suspected Ye Zichen of being the reincarnation of a heavyweight, but he still chose to reply as if he didn't believe Ye Zichen.

He thought that Ye Zichen did not know what was going on. Yet, what he did not know was that Ye Zichen saw everything.

Of course, that was not something that Ye Zichen could say...

Since I finally calmed the geezer down, if I tell him that I can see what's going on at his place, the matter would only indefinitely continue.

“Say it, what problem do you want me to help you deal with?”

F*ck, it truly pains me to be in a losing position.

“It's the problem with the Heavenly Court's school. The school is established, but the kids just play all day. I got plenty of cultivation secret scriptures from the deities, but the students aren't studying! Plenty of deities said that their children only became more wild after going to school, so they want to let their kids quit!”

Taibai Jinxing frowned. If these deities decided to suspend their

kids' studies, then I'll have to refund them quite a bit.

I don't want to spit out the money that's already in my hands.

“Do you still need to ask me for such a simple problem? Ye Zichen rolled his eyes in annoyance. “Aren't exams going to solve everything?”

“Exams?” Taibai Jinxing did not understand.

“Your geezer brain really doesn't know how to think logically,” Ye Zichen sighed softly. “All of you employees of the Heavenly Court have a year end examination, right?”

“Since the staff will get tested, can't you do the same to the students?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. “Just make an examination system for the students. Implement monthly exams, mid-term exams and term exams. If they fail, then tell their parents. I think these kids should be terrified of you doing that, right? Also, if they fail, then make them retake the exam. Make them pay for the retake fees every single time. If they have to retake twice, then make them repeat the year. Doesn't that solve it?”

“It's that simple?” Taibai Jinxing was stunned.

“How hard can it be? Geezer, I don't think you have any descendants, right? If you have kids, then you might be able to understand their thoughts more,” Ye Zichen smiled. What he did

not know was that his words completely prodded Taibai Jinxing where it hurts.

“F*ck off!” Taibai Jinxing cursed.

“You’re cursing me?” Ye Zichen did not know about Taibai Jinxing’s background, so he raised his eyebrows. “Since you cursed me, I’m not going to help you anymore!”

“F*ck off, this old man told you to f*ck off!” Taibai Jinxing glared. “if you don’t, then this old man is descending to the mortal realm!”

“... Fine, fine, fine. I’ll f*ck off!”

Seriously, why did this geezer get angry so quickly?

After exiting the chat, Ye Zichen stared at the image and frowned.

Maybe this geezer was just pretending to be angry and didn’t walk to talk about the price. However, what he did not expect was that when Taibai Jinxing stopped talking, he actually threw the phone to the side and started to silently wipe away tears from his eyes with a sigh.

“It can’t be. Did I say something wrong?” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes.

At that moment, Erlang Shen sought Ye Zichen out.

“Bro, thank you for last time. Otherwise, I really would have been crippled by the monkey.”

Since Erlang Shen was rich now, he was able to spend money to get it treated. He didn't have to be like before, where he would have to hid at home every time he gets hurt and just use his celestial spiritual energy to heal himself.

He was originally able to beat the monkey, but it was because he always had to use his celestial spiritual energy to heal, it caused his cultivation level to drop.

“No worries, we're brothers!” Ye Zichen smiled faintly. Then he glanced at the weeping Taibai Jinxing and asked Erlang Shen. “Bro, I've got something to ask you!”

“Ask away!” Erlang Shen replied.

“Does Taibai Jinxing have some hidden secret? When I was talking to him just now, he suddenly got angry at me!”

“Angry? No way. Geezer Taibai always have a smiling face on like [Maitreya](#), how could he get angry?” Erlang Shen frowned. However, then he immediately added. “You can't have talked about children or wife with him, right!?”

“What’s wrong with that?”

Ye Zichen was stunned. He did mention that, but it was merely chitchat. He only intended to tease the geezer.

“It can’t be. Bro, you really said it!?” Erlang Shen was completely shocked. “The fact that you’re still alive makes you so very lucky!”

“I should’ve have talked about it?”

“No, you shouldn’t talk about it to him!” Erlang Shen replied resolutely. “It is a forbidden topic for Taibai Jinxing!”

Golden Cicada (金蝉子) is a disciple of the Gautama Buddha.

Maitreya (弥勒佛) is the Buddha of the Future. In some variants of his legend, he is also the Laughing Buddha.

Chapter 323 – Erlang Shen is Also Descending

Forbidden topic.

Could Taibai Jinxing be impotent?

Ye Zichen thought evilly. If that's really the case, then come to the mortal realm.

[No need to worry about impotency, come to the third floor of Victoria!](#)

But if I think about it logically. They can change their looks and develop their bodily functions, so Taibai Jinxing should not be troubled by a simple problem like that.

“What happened to Taibai Jinxing's wife and children?”

“Bro, I'm only going to tell you cuz we're really close. Don't ever tell other people, nor let others know that I told you. Otherwise, Taibai Jinxing will definitely beat me up,” Erlang Shen replied nervously.

“Alright, tell me. I definitely won't tell other people,” Ye Zichen replied with certainty.

“Actually, I heard this from Old Lord Taishang,” Erlang Shen

licked his lips, then chased away all the maids and guards around him. “Taibai Jinxing’s wife and children all died in a war!”

What!?

Ye Zichen rolled over and sat up from the bed as he looked at the information in shock.

It definitely won’t be false since the news came from Old Lord Taishang, but... died in a war, that’s way too shocking.

“I was not yet a deity back then! Actually, not only was I not a deity, I wasn’t even born. I heard that there is a realm above the Celestial Realm called the Divine Realm. During the Great War of Gods and Demons, those from the Divine Realm fought the Demon Realm’s Demon God and his subordinates. Taibai Jinxing fought in the war alongside his wife and daughter, who both died in battle...” Erlang Shen said carefully. “In the end, Taibai Jinxing returned alone, then fell down to the Celestial Realm’s Heavenly Court and became Taibai Jinxing. He always maintained a warm smile, but... when someone mentions children to him...”

“Let me put it this way. Back then, a deity that just ascended to the Heavenly Court said something to Taibai Jinxing, possibly about his children, causing Taibai Jinxing to directly kill the guy. After that, the Jade Emperor personally dealt with the situation, then decided to seal the information, while Taibai Jinxing received no punishment at all!”

Ye Zichen’s eyes twitched when he heard everything from Erlang

Shen. If what Erlang Shen said was all true, then I was truly in luck that I wasn't killed by Taibai Jinxing earlier.

Great War of Gods and Demons... I heard it from that ancestral dragon as well...

I heard that it was a terrible war, but I never expected Taibai Jinxing to actually be one of its victims.

“Taibai Jinxing is actually rather pitiful. He has no children right now, nor does he have a wife. He never remarried, and has remained single the entire time...” a feeling of pity uncontrollably surged up in Ye Zichen's heart.

I never expected the smiling Taibai Jinxing to have such a backstory. I am definitely unable to understand his pain.

But that sort of pain was definitely a kind of heart-wrenching pain.

Ye Zichen bowed deeply towards the scene of Taibai Jinxing, then closed the image.

Dingdong.

The Great Dao of Heaven's Birth consumed 176500 cultivation experience this time.

Ugh.

Ye Zichen wanted to cough up blood.

At the same time, he did notice something noteworthy. The base amount of cultivation consumed for observing different people were different. I didn't actually take a look at Taibai Jinxing for too long, but it consumed so much...

It seems like I have to take my time to figure out the consumption rate of this technique later.

“Alright, stop talking about that matter. Just don't mention it to anyone either,” Ye Zichen left out a soft sigh. “Oh yeah, what did you seek me out for?”

When he finally deleted all the messages, he let out a long sigh, then sent a playful message.

“I heard that Chang'e is going to descend to the mortal realm to find you. Bro, you're in the mortal realm right now?”

“...”

How did Erlang Shen know!?

“Chang'e told you?” Ye Zichen asked. “You guys do get along really well. She actually tells you that sort of thing as well!”

“Bro, don’t think too much into it,” Erlang Shen replied with a smile. “Chang’e and I are just pure friends. She is your woman, so as your bro, I definitely wouldn’t stick my hand in!”

“Mhmm!” Ye Zichen replied plainly.

“Actually I found out about this news just now from Chang’e because she left little sister jade rabbit with me, and asked me to take care of her for you.”

“That’s pretty good. She helped you create an opportunity. When a lameass bachelor likes you meets a moe girl like the jade rabbit... Zeze!”

Ye Zichen replied evilly.

“Hey, am I that sort of person? I refused!” Erlang Shen raised his eyebrows.

“Refused? I think that you just fear the inability to control yourself, right!” Ye Zichen laughed playfully.

However, Erlang Shen did not retort, “I found out about your location from Chang’e!”

“ ... ”

F*ck!

What does this brat want to do!?

Ye Zichen gulped furiously, and replied with his heart beating loudly, “Why did you ask for my location? What do you want!”

“Hehe, monkey went over to yours last time. No matter what, we’re sworn brothers, do I have to go and meet you once!” Erlang Shen chuckled. “Chang’e and I are thinking about descending together to see you. She’s finding her love, while I’m searching for my bro!”

“I...”

At that moment, Ye Zichen was unable to say anything. Chang’e descending alone was troubling enough for him.

Why the heck is Erlang Shen Yang Jian coming along as well?

“Is there something wrong with you? The Heavenly Court needs you for security. What if the Heavenly Court needs you when you descend to see me?”

“I already told the Canopy Marshal everything. He had wanted to and see you to, but I told him no. He agreed to help me take care of the Heavenly Court, but only if we take a few photos together so he can see what you look like!”

Erlang Shen sat on a chair casually as he ate the fruits his maid sent over, while holding a cigarette in his mouth.

“You... I... You guys...”

Ye Zichen did not know how to reply at all.

Seeing the message, Erlang Shen smiled faintly.

“Bro, no need to get excited.”

Excited!?

How the f*ck am I excited!?

Ye Zichen was about to breakdown. Is there something wrong with every single one of these deities? Why do they insist on descending to see me? It's not like there's something wrong with my face.

It was whatever when the monkey did since he was stubborn as hell. I managed to settle him down with a bunch of snacks.

But if Erlang Shen and Chang'e also descend...

Especially Chang'e, since she will definitely stick close to me if

she descends.

I really can't imagine what would happen if Su Yan and co. finds out.

"Bro, let me trouble you for something," Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. Since the trouble had already appeared, the only thing he could do was make it as trivial as possible.

"What is it?" Erlang Shen smiled.

"You can descend, and I'll receive you. Can you make it so that Chang'e doesn't descend? Find a way to make her stay in the Heavenly Court," Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

"Why?" Erlang Shen did not understand. Chang'e descending in person to find someone was a great thing for anyone.

"Don't care about why. Just say if it's alright or not!" Ye Zichen clenched his teeth.

The first half of the sentence is a stereotypical slogan starter for impotency cures in China, but I'm not 100% sure about the second half. Initially, I thought it was just referencing David Beckham 'appearing' in an anti-impotency advert in China (since his wife is called Victoria), but I'm having second thoughts about that.

Chapter 324 – Kick Me

I definitely cannot let Chang'e descend. If she descends, then everything's going to be messed up.

Chang'e has plenty of fanboys and fangirls in the Heavenly Court. If she descends, then her 'guardians' would definitely follow.

Those that can work in the Heavenly Court would at the very least be experts of the Human Immortal level.

If they come, then there is nothing I could do.

Of course, it definitely is not because I'm a pussy. I'm just worried that too many deities descending would affect the order in the Heavenly Court. Yes, I'm someone that likes to think about others.

“Not letting Chang'e descend isn't so good, right?”

Erlang Shen, put down his crossed leg, and raised his eyebrows.

“I already agreed with Chang'e to descend together in a few days.”

“Don't bullshit so much. If you take her with you when you descend, then don't come and see me. Don't doubt me. I have ten

thousand ways to prevent you guys from finding me.”

Ye Zichen replied with a hint of threat.

Erlang Shen thought about it for a moment, then replied.

“Kay, then I’ll try.”

The two of them chit chatted a bit more until Erlang Shen had a card game match starting. Thus, Ye Zichen laid on his bed, looked outside the window, and sighed...

He did not dare to go out, since Qi Cheng, that dumb woman, might be blocking his way outside.

Since he had nothing better to do, Ye Zichen took out his phone and downloaded the iReader app.

The moment he opened the app, he saw a trending novel called “Red Packet Server”. Since it looked quite interesting, Ye Zichen clicked on it.

“Oh wow, this author is a god. Isn’t this about me?”

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows in interest. However, before he could be completely satisfied, he realized that he had finished the latest chapter.

I must hurry the author!

Ye Zichen left a few messages in the comments section, and noticed a [monthly ticket group](#).

Join.

“Monthly ticket ID screenshot.”

A group member called This Sovereign Zhi Xin immediately sent him a PM.

“I came to hurry the author up with the release speed. Are you the author? How can I make you release more?”

“Screenshot!” This Sovereign Zhi Xin had quite a temper, so he only replied Ye Zichen with one word.

Ye Zichen was rather unhappy. He was someone that even the deities had to tread carefully. This brat actually dared to do this to me!

“I’m asking you how can I get you to release more. Isn’t it just five monthly tickets? I’ll just send it to you later.”

Bang.

You have already been removed from the Red Packet Server Monthly Ticket Group.

Ye Zichen took a look at the message on his phone and blanked out for a long while before getting angry.

Wow, putting on a very strong front!

He's got a temper!

Ye Zichen returned to the comments section, then saw a message Zhi Xin had sent before.

“A thousand monthly tickets per extra chapter!”

Isn't it just a thousand monthly tickets?

We'll see who has the worst temper!

Ye Zichen smiled coldly, clicked open the top-up function, and directly top-upped a hundred thousand yuan's worth of monthly tickets.

Kick Me sent 1000 tickets this month.

Kick Me sent 2000 tickets this month.

Kick Me sent 3000 tickets this month.

...

Kick Me sent 10000 tickets this month.

Ye Zichen finally left a message in the comments section after he sent all of his monthly tickets.

“Bros, I sent a hundred thousand tickets. The author said a thousand tickets per chapter. Hurry up and contact him to tell him to release the chapters! I want to read!”

Not long later after he posted the comment, he saw that it was liked over a hundred times followed with a string of replies.

“Divine riche guy!”

“Great job. Chapter! Chapter!”

“Big brother is handsome and amazing!”

“I’m already contacting Lil’ Xin!”

...

At the same time.

The Red Packet Server Monthly Ticket Group exploded.

“@This Sovereign Zhi Xin, hurry up and post additional chapters. Someone gave you a hundred thousand monthly tickets!”

@This Sovereign Zhi Xin, a thousand tickets per chapter. Hurry up and post!”

“@This Sovereign Zhi Xin, author come out right now!”

Zhi Xin, who was fighting a battle of life and death against characters, instantly felt his head ring after he saw the message in the group and the hundred thousand tickets.

You’re kidding me!

He opened the iReader app to take a look, and saw that the top comment in the comments section was sent by Kick Me.

Then he took a look at the monthly ticket ranking.

Ugh.

He coughed up blood.

“Everyone, please wait a moment. This puny one will post

updates right now.”

Zhi Xin continuously wiped away the sweat dripping from his forehead, then went on his computer to take a look at the stockpile he saved up for a long time through lots of hard work.

“Brothers, I’m sorry!”

Tap, tap, tap.

Zhi Xin sent out his stockpiled chapters, which he had struggled through thick and thin in order to write.

He had wanted to post them when he found a chance to go on a date and pick up a girl, but now he had to post them all.

After he posted the chapters, Zhi Xin rubbed his temples, then starting to type furiously.

Approximately half an hour later, Ye Zichen’s iReader app loaded up all the chapters.

Ye Zichen glanced at the chapter updates, thought back to how Zhi Xin kicked him out of the group, making him rather annoyed.

“Didn’t you kick me? Watch me tire you to death!”

Then, without saying anything else, he topped up a hundred thousand yuan's worth of tickets once more!

Kick Me sent 101000 tickets this month.

Kick Me sent 102000 tickets this month.

...

Kick Me sent 200000 tickets this month.

While he felt really good after giving all the tickets, the comment he had posted earlier exploded.

“Divine riche guy did it again. Lil’ Zhi is screwed this time.”

“Divine riche guy, please stop. Lil’ Xin is just a child.”

“Morning news. The famous webnovel author Zhi Xin has put himself in grave danger for literature. According to this channel’s journalist, the famous webnovel author, Zhi Xin is fatigued...”

“We can definitely read our til we’re satisfied this time. Zhi Xin, hurry up and update!”

As Ye Zichen took a look at the plentiful replies, he noticed that the fans were actually pretty nice to Zhi Xin.

They worried that he would get tired out, so they continuously sent messages to tell Ye Zichen to stop.

Ye Zichen did understand that writing chapters used a lot of brainpower, and since he liked the novel a lot, he didn't want the author to die of fatigue.

Ye Zichen thought about it for a moment. I should crawl back up where I fell down.

I'll join the group again.

This time, he directly sent the screenshot of the monthly ticket IDs over to This Sovereign Zhi Xin before he was sent any message.

“Can I stay in the group this time?”

Zhi Xin, who was typing away furiously, heard the notification from the group chat. He had wanted to ignore it, but due to his mindset of fans above all else, he immediately went to take a look.

The person who sent him the message was the one who he got the admins to kick...

He took a look at the screenshot!

“My lord, please stop. Do you want to fatigue this puny one by

giving monthly tickets like this!?”

Humph!

Ye Zichen wrinkled his nose, then typed out his reply.

“Weren’t you amazing just now? Didn’t you kick me? Can’t I only enter the group if I give monthly tickets!? Now I did, I’m asking you, can I stay here!?”

“Yes, yes, yes, you can definitely stay here!” Zhi Xin replied after wiping away the sweat on his forehead.

The world of rich people was definitely not something that a puny author like me can understand. That was two hundred thousand due to a mere argument. Did their money appear out of nowhere?

“I thought I couldn’t, but that’s alright. I’ll send a hundred thousand more tickets later...”

“Don’t, please don’t!” Zhi Xin’s head was about to explode when he saw the message. He did not doubt the words of this fan at all.

He’s already sent two hundred thousand, what’s another hundred thousand to him!?

“My lord, what do I need to do to make you stop giving monthly

tickets? If you continue on like this, Lil' Xin will truly die of fatigue. Lil' Xin is not a full-timer, so I have limited stamina!"

Zhi Xin begged pitifully as he typed up his message.

"Monthly Ticket" is the recommendation system on Chinese web novel sites.

Chapter 325 – Lu Lu, Who Has Come To The Capital

At that moment, Zhi Xin was completely speechless. I really am in happy and yet in pain after meeting a riche guy with so much temper.

Ye Zichen felt extremely good when he saw how speechless the author was. Thus, all of his feelings of anger and annoyance, including those he got from that retarded and shameless woman from the morning, disappeared.

“You give up now?”

“Divine Riche Person, please stop.”

Zhi Xin frowned. If I knew this would happen, I wouldn't have said a thousand monthly tickets per chapter. That's great now, now I owe them several hundred chapters...

“I'll let you off after seeing your sincerity!”

Ye Zichen smiled, then decided to close the app. However, right before doing so, he couldn't help but tease the author.

“I'm telling you, don't kick me. If you kick me, then it wouldn't just be two hundred thousand tickets.”

Then, Ye Zichen chuckled and closed the app, while Zhi Xin laughed wryly. After finishing his read on the latest chapter of the novel, he saw that the sky outside was already dark, so he decided to go to sleep.

At the same time, Zhi Xin, the author of “Red Packet Server, also continued to type away in the dark of night.

On the next day, Ye Zichen was woken up by his ringtone. He took out his phone to look at the caller ID, before completely waking up.

“Brother Ye.”

The person who called him was Gu Tian. He, or rather, the Gu family, was the reason Ye Zichen had come to the capital.

He had always been curious about the Gu family.

More importantly, it appeared that he had some sort of connection with it. In order to find out the truth, I have to go and take a look at the Gu family.

“You finally thought of me. I thought you already forgot about me,” Ye Zichen laughed.

Gu Tian stuttered for a moment, then chuckled, “I’m really sorry. The situation in the family has been a bit complex these few days. Even though I know it is a shithole, I have to force myself to

jump in since I'm part of the family."

"So your family is in a complete mess now?" Ye Zichen smiled.

On the other end of the phone, Gu Tian nodded, "More or less. Those guys are pretty much doing everything they can for the position of the junior family head!"

"And you didn't use some tricks? Don't tell me that you don't have any intention of competing. If that's the case, then I had no reason to come!" Ye Zichen said with a smile.

"I naturally have to fight for it. If I don't, then with their personalities, they might be the complete end for me. I am purely doing this in self-defense. To be honest, I really don't have too much desire for the position of the junior family head. But, since you're here, even if I don't fight for it, those old guys will push me along," Gu Tian replied. He took a glance at the elders, who were in discussion in the room, and shook his head with a smile. "Where are you? I'll go over and get you to let you get a feel for this huge shithole!"

"Then I have to buy a gasmask!" Ye Zichen chuckled. "I'm at the inn near the airport. Come, call me when you're near."

Then, he hung up the call. After Ye Zichen cleaned himself up simply, he called down to the reception and asked for room service before he leisurely watched television on the sofa.

Approximately ten-odd minutes later...

Dong dong dong.

Ye Zichen chuckled the remote to the side. If there is no surprise, it should be room service. He stood up and walked to the door, and opened it.

A staff wearing a rabbit mask pushed the trolley in.

“Why aren’t you leaving?”

After the staff pushed the trolley in, she continuously stared at him. Ye Zichen was able to tell that she was most likely a woman from the area around her eyes.

“Hehe... Why do I have to leave? I finally got here.”

At that moment, the staff took off her mask...

“Lu Lu!”

Ye Zichen put down his raised hand in shock. Due to the giggle, he had thought that it was Qi Cheng, and thus nearly hit her before calling the police.

“Hehe!” Lu Lu closed the room door with a giggle, then glanced

at the hand Ye Zichen just lowered. “What are you doing? Were you going to hit me?”

“...”

Ye Zichen was completely speechless.

There’s no way I would dare!

The scene of her freezing the snakeman into an ice sculpture was still fresh in his mind, and just thinking about that made Ye Zichen shudder.

“Why did you come here? No, wait, how did you find me?”

Ye Zichen sat down on the sofa and changed the topic. Lu Lu followed him with her hands behind her, causing her to show a cute demeanor that made people want to spoil her, “I missed you, so I came to find you. Don’t forget, I can smell you with my nose.”

I nearly forgot about that. But seriously, Lu Lu’s nose is seriously amazing. It was whatever that she could smell me in Bingcheng, since we were still relatively close...

But the fact that she can smell me all the way in the capital... Should I say that her nose is too amazing, or that I smell too much?

“Alright, you’re amazing,” Ye Zichen shrugged helplessly. “Oh

yeah, where did you go a while ago? I didn't see you in school."

"Hehe, I'm not telling you. What? You missed me?" Lu Lu put both of her hands on Ye Zichen's thigh, while craftiness twinkled in her eyes.

"Haha... Read my lips."

Lu Lu instantly pouted after Ye Zichen mouthed "screw off", "You aren't cute at all. If it was the Zhang Junbao from before, he would definitely fall over as he laughed happily. I actually came so far to find you, and you're actually telling me to screw off... I'm unhappy!"

Lu Lu wrinkled her face as if she was about to cry.

At that moment, the door to the room was knocked on again.

"Who is it?" Lu Lu frowned, then gazed over Ye Zichen in a judgmental manner. "It can't be your little lover in the capital, right? Or perhaps, it's a hotel's call girl... Zezeze..."

Lu Lu squinted her eyes, then quickly ran over to the door and opened it.

"Bro, c'mon, let your brother take you out..."

The person who stood at the entrance was Fatty Yin, the one

whose face was covered in fat, and the same one that stuck to Ye Zichen like glue. He was smiling so much that his entire face was wrinkled, but when he noticed that the person who opened the door was actually a cute beauty...

“Uhm... I’m in the wrong room. Sorry, sorry!”

Fatty Yin looked at the room number with a coy smile, then was stunned.

I didn’t make a mistake!

He stuck his head into the room to look around once again. When he saw Ye Zichen, who was sitting on the sofa speechlessly, his face was covered in a smile once again as he ran over to Ye Zichen’s side.

“Bro, wow! You even hid a beauty in the capital!”

Fatty Yin’s face was filled with a smile, but at that very moment, the temperature in the room dropped.

A heart-chilling cold filled Lu Lu’s face, while a torrent of snow and ice appeared in her palm.

“Who are you!? Why did you take over someone else’s body in order to get close to Ye Zichen!”

Chapter 326 – An Oath by One’s Heart

Demon

As the temperature of the room plummeted, Ye Zichen, who sat on the sofa, looked up. He couldn’t help but shudder when he saw Lu Lu’s frosty face. This was exactly what she started with when she froze that snakeman.

A look of shock flashed across Fatty Yin’s face. Then he raised his eyebrows in confusion, “The room seems to have gotten colder.”

“Do you want to continue pretending in front of me?” Lu Lu squinted her eyes, while the torrent of ice and snow in her hands increased in size. “Answer me, why are you trying to get close to Ye Zichen?”

“Girl, you really are strange. I got along extremely well with him on the plane, and he helped me deal with a bit of trouble. How can you say that I’m deliberately trying to get close to him?” Fatty Yin puffed up his chest with a frown.

Lu Lu smiled plainly, “If you aren’t saying it, then die!”

Lu Lu smacked the torrent in her hands towards the fatty without any hesitation.

Ye Zichen tensed up and quickly grabbed her arm.

“What are you doing?” Lu Lu frowned. “Why aren’t you letting me kill him!?”

“Lu Lu, this is a peaceful society. Don’t always kill this and that. This fatty’s just a normal person. It’s illegal for you to kill him.”

Actually, Ye Zichen had already suspected the fatty to be someone that other races had sent over to kill him.

Ye Zichen was able to use his Fiery Eyes of Truth to determine that the fatty was a normal person. After that, he immediately stopped worrying and just thought that the fatty was someone who got familiar with people easily.

“Don’t forget your identity!” Lu Lu frowned, then snorted as she pointed to Fatty Yin. “This guy has two spiritual bodies in his body.”

“What?” Ye Zichen was shocked. He looked at Fatty’s Yin stiff face and gulped. “Two souls?”

“Others can’t tell, but I can,” Lu Lu protected Ye Zichen behind her, and stared straight at the fatty. “Tell me your intentions. Otherwise, die!”

Fatty Yin smiled coyly and revealed a confused expression in face of Lu Lu’s powerful demeanor, “What are you saying? Why don’t I understand?”

“I said it already, don’t pretend in front of me!”

All of a sudden, Lu Lu’s hand emitted a blue glow. She patted her hand against the fatty’s head with force, causing a spiritual body to be pulled out from the fatty’s sea of consciousness.”

“As expected of the Three Realm’s Ice Empress,” the spiritual body smiled faintly, then went back into the fatty’s body, before hugging his shoulders with his hands. “Actually, our goal is the same. I also have to protect him. There is no need for you to be so hostile towards me.”

...

Ye Zichen was already completely shocked. No matter what, he did not expect that the fatty actually had two souls.

And the other soul knows the Ice Empress of the Three Realms!

“Just because you said you’ll protect him? Don’t you think what you said was funny?” Lu Lu curled her lips. “You... cannot be left alive!”

She left forward and smacked her palm towards the fatty.

The fatty dodged Lu Lu’s attack with a feint, “It is still too hard for a mere Body Double to deal with me. Girl, I know you’re doing it for Ye Zichen’s good, but don’t generalize. There are... plenty of people that want to protect him.”

The fatty smiled faintly, then squinted his eyes, I swear by my heart demon that I am only getting close to Ye Zichen in order to protect him.”

Hearing the fatty’s words, Lu Lu took a step back.

When the fatty saw that, he chuckled, “Do you believe it now? Can you retract this freezing temperature? It’s too cold.”

“Humph, then I’ll force myself to believe you this once,” Lu Lu retracted the ice and snow using her hands.

The fatty put on a look of helplessness, “C’mon, if my oath by my heart demon was a lie, then I’m screwed.”

“Hmph,” Lu Lu snorted coldly.

“Girl, you really have a bad temper... Fine, since you are by Ye Zichen’s side now, then I don’t need to watch over him currently. Since I also need to help this little fatty deal with his relationship problems, then I’ll be off.”

With that, the fatty disappeared from the room.

After a while, laughter suddenly sounded out all around the room, “Oh yeah, I’ll come over again when I have time. Gu family... Let’s meet there. Hahahaha!”

The echoed laughter resonated in the room for a long time, while Ye Zichen squinted his eyes, then turned to look at Lu Lu...

“Is that fatty a good guy or a bad guy?”

“I’m not certain, but it’s more likely that he’s a good guy,” Lu Lu licked her lips. “He did swear by his heart demon. As long as he’s not trying to screw himself over, then what he said is most likely true.”

“What’s swearing by his heart demon?” Ye Zichen asked in confusion.

“It’s hard to explain it to you right now. You’re still too weak. When you reach the level of an Earth Immortal, you will come into contact with it.

“Alright.”

Ye Zichen was truly a bit shocked. If it wasn’t for Lu Lu, he might never find out that the fatty actually had two spiritual bodies within him.

It seems like the level 1 of the Fiery Eyes of Truth isn’t quite enough. When I find the time, I have to quickly get some cultivation experience to buy all of the remaining levels.

“Oh yeah, the fatty said that you are a Body Double just now?” Ye Zichen glanced at her.

“Mhmm,” Lu Lu nodded. “My main body needs to assume command in the Elk Race in the Three Realms. The situation there is too chaotic right now, I have to make sure that my tribesmen are safe.”

“Is the situation over there extremely bad?”

“It cannot be described as extremely bad,” Lu Lu twitched her mouth and snorted. The time of the Struggle for the Three Realms is nigh. The situation in the Three Realms will be changed, so the relationships between the realms are very tense.”

“I see!” Ye Zichen just replied randomly. Even if she told him about the situation there, he wouldn’t understand.

Struggle for the Three Realms...

It seems like my phone had this new function activated as well.

Am I supposed to get involved as well?

Ye Zichen scratched his head. At that moment, the door to the room was knocked on again, and Ye Zichen’s phone also rang.

“Brother Ye, I’m here.”

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, then quickly walked to the room door and opened it.

Gu Tian's stood at the entrance with his symbolic smoke-colored hair and a faint smile.

“Brother Ye.”

“Brat, you finally came,” Ye Zichen patted his shoulders.

At this moment, Lu Lu also walked over, “And who is he?”

“Brother Ye's life is truly great. You have a beauty accompanying you even in the capital,” with that, Gu Tian cupped his hands in front of his chest towards Lu Lu. “Gu Tian.”

“Don't bullshit so much,” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes at Gu Tian in annoyance. “Now... Let's go to the Gu household!”

Chapter 327 – Living to Eat

Ye Zichen desperately wanted to go to the Gu household.

The mystery of his identity had always bothered him. What's more, when Mother Ye mentioned the Gu family, she had avoided the topic together, while she kept silent during any talk of his biological father.

Old Man Lin had also mentioned the... true meaning of his name.

Ye!

Gu.

This was a mystery that can only be solved after going to the Gu household.

“Why is Brother Ye in such a hurry to go to the Gu household? It's better to go to that sort of shithole later,” Gu Tian said with a faintly smile and shrugged. “I finally managed to get away, so I was going to mess around outside for a few days first.”

“You really aren't interested in the junior family head position at all!” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes.

Gu Tian shrugged, “I said it already, I don't actually have very much ambition for the position of the junior family head.

Everything was forced onto me by the situation. There's no helping it!"

"Since you're so disinterested, then I don't have anything to say."

Even though Ye Zichen was desperate to go to the Gu household, since Gu Tian did not invite him over, then he couldn't be so straightforward.

He could not let anyone know about his true intentions for going to the Gu household, so everything had to be done secretly.

"Hehe, Brother Ye seems to care about it even more than me. Gu Tian is truly moved!" A smile filled Gu Tian's face. "Originally, I had wanted to tell Brother Ye to come a few days later. I didn't think that Brother Ye would actually come on the day right after the call. Gu Tian will definitely not forget this favor!"

"Don't say such pointless stuff. What do you want to do if not go back?" Ye Zichen squinted his eyes.

"Of course I want to go out and play," Gu Tian laughed. "My head's about to explode just from listening to those old bastards blabber these few days. I heard that there's a crowd over at Lihe Garden. Let's go over to take a look."

Ye Zichen subconsciously looked over towards Lu Lu, who blinked her cute eyes and muttered, "Go if you want, I'll just

follow you.”

Gu Tian stealthily gave Ye Zichen a thumbs up. Gu Tian had already known that Ye Zichen had plenty of girls around him.

The one in front of him was clearly a new one. The fact that Brother Ye could actually make such a cute girl so submissive...

His ability in picking up girls was definitely top notch.

Ye Zichen ignored Gu Tian's actions, smiled towards Lu Lu, then rubbed her head, “You truly have no opinions for yourself at all.”

“I just like following you,” Lu Lu tilted her head and giggled.

“Then let's go and take a look!” Ye Zichen said to Gu Tian, since he had nothing better to do at all. “I'm telling you, this is my first time in the capital, so you have to be a proper tour guide.”

“Alright, Brother Ye, just wait and see!”

The capital's traffic was even worse than Bingcheng's, so when they arrived at Lihe Garden, it was already midday.

After getting out of the car, Ye Zichen nodded as he looked at the classical structures, “This place isn't bad at all.”

“Ha, Brother Ye will definitely be shocked after we go in,” Gu Tian said with a faint smile, and took Ye Zichen towards the entrance.

At that moment, a loud shout sounded out, “Hurry up and f*ck off. You cannot enter without a membership card.”

“On what grounds are you not letting me in! Doesn’t it say that there is free food at noon here!? I already found out. If you aren’t letting me in, then I’m going to file a complaint against you guys!”

Ye Zichen glanced over at the place of the argument and saw a young man with his back towards him. The young man wore a white-checkered shirt, and two strands of hair stood up on his head.

Opposite the young man was a security guard with an extremely displeased expression, what’s more, the security guard’s thick arm clearly showed how much explosiveness the guard’s body had.

“Brat, you leaving?”

“You guys are too mean,” the checkered shirted young man frowned, reached out with his right hand, grabbed the security guard and threw him out. “Someone that can stop this lord from eating isn’t born yet!”

With that, the checker shirted young man ran into Lihe Garden excitedly, while shouting, “Time to eat good food.”

“ ... ”

Ye Zichen and co. were completely speechless.

Gu Tian also shook his head in amazement, “This rash kid. He’ll definitely be thrown out in a while.”

It was as he said, the sound of fighting could be heard from within Lihe Garden half a minute later.

The checker shirted teenager was being chased around by seven or eight security guards. The young man was holding a piece of bread in his mouth, while holding a piece of cake in his hands, as he continuously evaded capture.

However, since two hands could not defeat four, the young man was finally caught and thrown out.

Despite that, as he landed on the floor, the young man still carefully protected the cake in his hands, and muttered...

“I can’t waste food.”

Ye Zichen’s face was filled with speechlessness at the familiar scene. The young man was truly too similar to a person he knows.

“Let’s stop looking and go,” Gu Tian smiled faintly. It really is a

rare occurrence to see this sort of weirdo in Lihe Garden.

But just watching when there was a commotion was enough. There was no need to do that now everything has ended.

“Kind shopkeeper!”

At that moment, a call sounded out behind Ye Zichen and co.

As they turned their heads back, they saw the young man with a checkered shirt ran over with cake in his mouth.

“Kind shopkeeper, it really is you.”

...

No wonder, how could there be someone so similar to that weirdo I know. After everything, they are the very same person.

“Gou Yuzhan, why did you come over to the capital?”

“Kind shopkeeper, why did you come to the capital too? Since you aren’t watching over the supermarket, what if people steal all the food!”

In Gou Yuzhan’s mind, food was more important than anything!

“Brother Ye, you can’t actually know him, right?” Gu Tian looked at the weirdo who just fought with the security guards of Linhe Garden over food...

“Yeah!” Ye Zichen smiled helplessly. “Let’s bring him along!”

“Then... Alright!”

Gu Tian’s put on a troubled expression. He had just wanted to tell Ye Zichen that even if they wanted to take him in, it would be very difficult.

When they arrived at the entrance to, Gu Tian took out a platinum membership card and handed it over, “I want to enter. A platinum membership can bring three people in, right?”

“Sir, that’s right,” the receptionist smiled, but when he saw Gou Yuzhan, who stood behind Gu Tian, his face instantly froze. “He... can’t enter!”

That brat had been the nightmare of Linhe Garden in recent days. Today wasn’t the first time he came to grab food from Linhe Garden.

He came the last few days as well!

He’s already blacklisted now!

“Why aren’t you letting me? It was logical since I didn’t have a membership card, but now my friend has a card, why are you still not letting me in!?” Gou Yuzhan opened his eyes wide in annoyance. “This is truly bullying. I’m going to say it bluntly right now. If you guys don’t let me in, then I’ll trash your damn garden!

Chapter 328 – Linhe Garden

Gou Yuzhan was truly angry.

There are so many things to eat in Linhe Garden. I even felt really happy for finding this place after coming to the capital, but the people inside had always blocked my way and wouldn't let me eat.

It was whatever before, since I do admit that I didn't have a membership card...

But the guy that I don't know already took out a membership card, those people are still not letting me in.

"I'm telling you, hurry up and let me in. I'm not scared of you guys, if I actually get angry, even my dad's scared of me!"

The two strands on top of Gou Yuzhan's hair vibrated, while he glared at the receptionist fiercely.

"You broke into Linhe Garden. The fact that we didn't send you to the police station is already merciful. You still dare to act cocky with us... I'm telling you, they can enter, but you can't!"

The receptionist also glared at Gou Yuzhan fiercely. At the same time, Linhe Garden's security guards also came over, with hostility surfacing in their eyes the moment they saw Gou Yuzhan.

We just threw him out and now he's back again.

“Fine, do you really think I, your grandfather, doesn't dare!?”

Zoom.

A nunchuck suddenly appeared in his right hand in a magic trick like manner. Gou Yuzhan flung it around a few times, then posed like Bruce Lee.

“Take this!”

Slap.

Before he managed to fling the nunchuck, Ye Zichen directly smacked his head.

“Take your ass.”

“Kind shopkeeper, why did you hit me?” Gou Yuzhan wore a confused look.

Ye Zichen let out a long sigh, then turned towards the security guards, “Bro, this friend of mine might not have a particular good reputation here, but he doesn't have any ill intentions. He just wanted to grab something to eat. Since we have a membership card now, don't be too strict, and just let him in.”

“Sir, it’s not that we aren’t allowing him. It’s that he has been blacklisted by Linhe Garden,” said one of the security guards.

Hearing that, Gou Yuzhan became completely enraged, he immediately walked towards the entrance with his nunchuck in his hand, “Blacklisted? Fine, then let’s see after a good fight!”

“Stop for a moment,” Ye Zichen grabbed Gou Yuzhan by his collar.

At that moment, Ye Zichen suddenly smelled a faint fragrance of jasmine...

“Big Brother Gu,” a soft and confused voice called out. Ye Zichen turned over and saw that Hua Zhiru had suddenly appeared beside him.

“Lil’ Hua!” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“Can you not copy that damn fatty? Can’t you call me Lil’ Ru or Zhiru? Why do you have to call me Lil’ Hua!” Hua Zhiru pouted in annoyance.

At the same time, the security guards and the receptionist also quickly bowed in greetings, “Young Lady!”

Hua Zhiru nodded slightly towards the security guards.

Ye Zichen was stunned, “This is the property of your family!?”

“Mhmm, it is!” Hua Zhiru smiled plainly. “I understand the approximate situation already. Let’s go in together!”

The security guards blocking the way in front of them all quickly moved aside.

As they walked in, Gou Yuzhan rolled his eyes at the security guards like a jerk, “Block my way, keep blocking my way!”

When he saw that the security guards did not dare to answer, Gou Yuzhan snorted proudly, then walked in behind Ye Zichen and co.

As they walked, Ye Zichen could clearly feel the gazes that the people within Linhe Garden directed towards them.

More precisely, they should be towards Hua Zhiru, who walked behind him.

Ye Zichen could tell that she was extremely tired from her eyes, and thinking about what happened in the airport, it is very possible that it was caused by the situation of her family.

“Big Brother Gu, go around as you wish. There are some things I have to deal with,” Hua Zhiru suddenly stopped and smiled.

“Go, just do what you need to,” Ye Zichen nodded towards her.

After watching her leave, Lu Lu twitched her mouth then yanked the corner of Ye Zichen’s shirt with a frown, “Who is that woman? Why is she so close to you?”

“... Are you sure that she’s close to me? She doesn’t even know what my surname is. Do you really think that she’s close?” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes in annoyance.

Only then did Lu Lu mutter in sudden understanding, “Oh yeah, she called you Big Brother Gu just now.”

Ye Zichen patted her head and revealed a look of helplessness.

Gu Tian also smiled faintly as he glanced towards Hua Zhiru, who was walking to somewhere else, “Out of everyone in the Hua family, she should be the number one successor after Hua Lin dies. But it doesn’t seem like it’s going to be easy for her to inherit such a large family. As I expected, large families just have more stuff to care about.”

“Isn’t it the same for you?” Ye Zichen smiled. Large families are just trouble.

“Erm... Can I go and eat something?” Gou Yuzhan asked. He had no interest in inheritance or whatnot. His greatest interest was eating...

“Go, go, go. But don’t cause trouble,” Ye Zichen said in annoyance.

“No problem!” Gou Yuzhan ran out excitedly.

Then, Gu Tian decided to take Ye Zichen and Lu Lu around Linhe Garden.

Linhe Garden was actually a place for trading. There were professional appreciators for antiques as well as all sorts of flowers and plants...

There was no need to be worried about being tricked there.

As long as a person had enough money, they were able to buy anything they wanted.

After taking a wander around Linhe Garden, Ye Zichen merely ordered a bit of snacks. On the other hand, Gu Tian actually bought quite a bit of stuff.

“Kind shopkeeper!” At that moment, Gou Yuzhan ran over quickly with a chicken leg in his hand.

“Don’t call me kind shopkeeper, alright? Just call me by my name, Ye Zichen!” Ye Zichen frowned.

“That’s not important!” Gou Yuzhan shook his head. “That kind

girl is in trouble!”

“Kind girl?” Ye Zichen frowned.

Hearing that, Lu Lu closed her eyes, then opened them after a few seconds, that Hua Zhiru is indeed in trouble. Do you want to go over to take a look?”

“Hua Zhiru! Let’s go!” Ye Zichen frowned.

Gou Yuzhan instantly nodded, “Come with me.”

After going through two courtyards, Gou Yuzhan brought Ye Zichen and co. to the entrance of a large courtyard, which had two muscular men standing at the arched entrance.

“This isn’t a trading area. It is for staff only.”

The two hulks crossed their arms and blocked off the way, while a faint celestial spiritual aura was revealed.

Earth Immortal.

Ye Zichen’s eyes twitched. Bingcheng truly cannot compare up to the capital.

Even these guards are at the Earth Immortal level. It seems like

the capital is truly filled with talented people.

“Your young lady, Hua Zhiru is endangered inside. Let us in!” Ye Zichen frowned.

The two hulks in front of the door smiled, “That has nothing to do with us. Our mission is to stand guard here and not let anyone in!”

“Hua Zhiru is in danger...”

“Why waste your breath with them!” Lu Lu suddenly curled her lips, while a spiral of ice and snow appeared in her palm. “I’ll give you two two choices. Either f*ck off or die!”

Chapter 329 – Who Won?

Lu Lu was definitely a dominating person.

The title of Ice Empress was not just for show. Even though she looked petite and cute, if she actually became angry, everyone would tremble.

Lu Lu also gradually opened up her palm as the temperature of the surrounding area lowered.

“Rogue Immortal!”

The two hulks in front of the door frowned. They could already sense the danger that radiated from the young girl in front of them.

“Rogue immortals cannot use celestial spiritual energy above Earth Immortal level according to the rules. You are breaking the rules like this,” the bald man out of the two spoke up.

Lu Lu merely smiled, “Rules are for the weak. The rules are made by the strong. It is clear that I’m the strong one here, so your so-called rules don’t work on me.”

Gu Tian was completely shocked. He never expected that the petite and cute girl in front of him was actually so strong.

Judging from her aura, even the current family head of the Gu family cannot compare to her.

“Either f*ck off, or die. Now, choose!” Lu Lu glared at them.

The two hulks standing guard hesitated for a moment, then moved aside with their teeth clenched.

“Please!”

“Hmph, that’s obedient!” Lu Lu frowned, then turned to smile towards Ye Zichen. “Do you see that? Power is the proper way. You’re nothing but a little piece of trash, and are way too weak!”

Ye Zichen was very annoyed about being mocked, but he couldn’t say anything to counter it.

He was truly too weak, so since he couldn’t retort, he just shut up.

Gou Yuzhan, who was holding a chicken leg in his mouth, snickered. However, when Ye Zichen glared at him, Gou Yuzhan instantly lowered his head and avoided Ye Zichen’s gaze.

“Lil’ Ru, listen to second aunt. As a girl, it isn’t suitable for you to show yourself outside. We, the Hua family, aren’t a business-oriented family, meanwhile fighting isn’t suitable for you at all.”

Hua Zhiru stood alone in the center of the room while facing a middle-aged woman who had maintained herself rather well. That woman was Hua Zhiru's second aunt, Hua Lihua.

A hint of a mocking smile flashed across Hua Zhiru's eyes when she heard Hua Lihua's words, "Then you want to tell me that it is suitable for you to show yourself in the public all the time?"

Hua Lihua nodded, "There's no helping it. Our Hua family doesn't have any men, so the family head will have to be a woman. You are still young. How can second aunt let you take over my old man's dangerous job? Second aunt is going all this for your own good."

"Wow, for my own good," a coldness surfaced on Hua Zhiru's face.

Even though her surroundings were already filled with Hua Lihua's people, Hua Zhiru remained fearless as she scanned over everyone else in the room.

"You guys, also agree with what my second aunt said, right?"

Everybody paused for a moment. Out of them, there were some people that were assistants to the Hua family's old man back in the days of war. All of them clearly knew that Hua Zhiru was the proper successor of the Hua family.

However, the old man had already passed away. Hua Zhiru only

had a weak foundation. Since people should recognize the situation, they had to stand on Hua Lihua's side for their own benefits.

"If you aren't speaking, then you are silently admitting it."

Hua Zhiru revealed a terrible expression. These people...

Were the closest people to my grandfather, and the people that he trusted most.

On the other hand, Hua Lihua's face was filled with a confident smile. Inviting Hua Zhiru to this place was one of her ploys.

As long as Hua Zhiru dared to come, then she was confident that she could grab the position of the family head from her.

"Lil' Ru, listen to second aunt. Let go. That position is too high up, it isn't suitable for the current you."

"That position is truly really high," Hua Zhiru nodded, then said with a hint of ambition in her eyes. "But who doesn't want to sit in the highest position? Second aunt, am I right!?"

Hearing that, Hua Lihua paused for a moment, before putting on a sinister expression.

"Lil' Ru, you are forcing second aunt."

“But isn’t second aunt also forcing me?” Hua Zhiru’s face also turned cold. She spoke with confidence and determination, “Everyone knows that I’m the number one successor in the entire Hua family. Is second aunt trying to steal what is rightfully mine by inviting me here and telling so many people to surround me?”

“Your words truly hurt second aunt’s heart,” Hua Lihua put on a fake smile.

Hua Zhiru smiled mockingly, then turned around and disregarded the woman as she swept her gaze over the rest of the people in the room, “From now on, I’m in charge of the Hua family! If any one of you wants this position, then try and take it from me!”

With that, she started to walk forwards with a soft smile, “Anyone who dares to stop me will be blacklisted from the Hua family. From now on, it will only end with death!”

Hua Zhiru pursed her lips and stepped forward. Despite her calm demeanor, she was actually more nervous than anyone.

One step...

Two steps...

“Stop her!” Hua Lihua screamed. At the same time, malice filled her face, “Lil’ Ru, you forced second aunt to do this.”

Hearing the scream behind her, Hua Zhiru sighed, “Grandpa, sorry. I didn’t listen to you. Even though you clearly told me not to make a bet with other people, since I would only lose regardless of the bet, I didn’t listen. This time... I lost again!”

She had come without any backup plans, and purely wanted to bet everything on her actions.

Hua Zhiru shut her eyes submissively and essentially gave up her chance of resisting. Actually, it wasn’t that she wanted to resist, it was because she understood very clearly that resistance was futile.

“Lil’ Hua, giving up like this isn’t good, is it?” playful laughter rang out.

Hearing his voice, Hua Zhiru opened her eyes, and saw Ye Zichen standing beside her with a faint smile.

As for the crowd in the room...

“I’m going to beat you to death for bullying the kind older sister. Just stand still for grandpa...”

Gou Yuzhan chased after the people in in the room with a pair of nunchaku. Meanwhile, Gu Tian did not stand idle either. He continuously made his way through the crowd and knocked people out.

“Big-Big Brother Gu,” Hua Zhiru exclaimed with a smile.

She subconsciously reached her hands out to hold Ye Zichen’s arm.

However, a low voice rang out beside her ear, “Let go of him.”

As she turned back, she noticed Lu Lu staring straight at her with flames of jealousy burning in her eyes.

Hua Zhiru couldn’t help but shudder due to the cold.

“Sorry, I was too worked up,” Hua Zhiru let go with a coy smile. Then she calmed herself down and looked at Hua Lihua with a faint smile. “Second aunt, I won this time.”

“Little bitch, do you think that you’ve really won?”

Everyone could tell from Hua Lihua’s way of addressing Hua Zhiru that she was going to bring all her past grudges to the surface.

Hua Lihua’s sinister faze carried a faint bit of laughter, “You’re too naïve. Do you think that second aunt doesn’t have a backup plan?”

Clap, clap.

Hua Lihua clapped. Then, she bowed behind her as the smile on her face became more apparent, “Sir, I’ll be troubling you.”

“Hehe...”

A laugh suddenly sounded out in the room.

Not long later, a man holding a folded fan walked down from the second floor.

“My dear son, we finally meet!”

Chapter 330 – My Dear Son

The man who walked down from the second floor wore completely black clothes, while the folded fan was placed at his collar.

Nobody recognized the man in front of them, nor did they know who was the “son” that he was referring to.

Only Ye Zichen...

When he raised his head, he looked at the man in front of him in shock, while his hands trembled.

“What are you thinking? Aren’t you happy to see your father?” the man slowly walked towards Ye Zichen.

Gou Yuzhan and Gu Tian, who were both chasing the crowd in the room, also stopped...

“That uncle looks so similar to Ye Zichen,” Gou Yuzhan bumped Gu Tian’s shoulder.

“Indeed,” Gu Tian nodded.

“Ye Zichen!” Lu Lu prodded Ye Zichen.

Only then did he return to his senses, while he continued to stare

at the man in front of him, “You...”

“Call me dad. Did Gu Rong not even teach you the most basic of manners?” the man maintained his smile.

“Gu Rong,” Gu Tian, who was standing behind Ye Zichen was completely shocked. He looked at the man in front of him with surprise.

The man smiled faintly as if he felt Gu Tian’s gaze, “Someone from the Gu family is actually here. Why do you have that expression? Could it be that you’re very shocked to hear Gu Rong’s name? Yes, you made no mistake. I’m talking about the original Young Lady of the Gu family, Gu Rong.”

Gu Tian was completely dumbfounded.

Gu Rong.

That was a name he had only seen in the family tree, but it was a name which was crossed out by a red line.

He had once asked his father why her name was crossed out.

The reply his father had given him was...

That person was exiled from the Gu family.

Even now, he could still remember the wry smile on his father's face when he gave the answer.

Although Gu Tian was shocked, Ye Zichen was even more so.

He had always thought that his father was someone from the Gu family, but... Why was it mother?

Then, the man in front of me...

“Why do you have this sort of expression!” the man smiled. “Could it be that you're shocked from seeing your father? That makes sense. You've never ever seen me, so it is natural for you to be shocked from seeing me now. But... I... extremely dislike your current expression.”

What the hell!

What is this man in front of me saying?

Is he really my father? Why don't I feel any hint of intimacy from him? From the very beginning, the smile on his face was merely a meaningful one.

It was as if I'm not his son at all, and am merely a joke.

You're saying that this androgynous man is my father!? What a joke!

“I’m talking to you, my good son.”

The man suddenly raised his hand. Ye Zichen, who was several meters away from him, felt as if someone was strangling him before he was lifted into the air.

“You really are the same as Gu Rong. I... really don’t like your expression.”

“Ugh...” Ye Zichen grabbed onto the space in front of his neck tightly, as he tiptoed, and revealed a pain-filled expression.

Bang.

The man flung his arm with force, causing Ye Zichen to be swung to the corner of the room.

“Ye Zichen!”

“Brother Ye!”

“Kind shopkeeper!”

Everyone ran towards the corner of the room, while Ye Zichen laid on the floor, while intensely coughing and grabbing his neck. Furthermore, they were even able to see a faint line of blood on the corner of his mouth.

“Are you... seeking death!?”

Lu Lu, who squatted on the floor, suddenly stood up. After that, her hair turned a light blue shade, and a ferocious wind begun to spread outwards with her at the center.

Within seconds, the wind mixed with ice and snow, turning the entire room into a white world.

“Lu Lu!”

Ye Zichen, who laid limply on the floor, stood up from the ground with Gu Tian and Hua Zhiru’s support. He limped over to Lu Lu, then patted her shoulders and shook his head.

“Are you alright?”

Lu Lu’s words were of a completely caring tone.

Ye Zichen smiled, then shook his head before wiping away the blood from the corner of his mouth.

Then, he brushed off the support of the people beside him, then walked towards the man a step at a time.

The man smiled towards Ye Zichen, who was walking towards him, as if he didn’t take the threat of Lu Lu seriously at all, “It

seems like you have a lot to say to me?”

“Indeed, I had a lot to say to you before this,” Ye Zichen stopped ten centimeters away from the man.

They were of a similar height, and had a similar appearance.

At that moment, Ye Zichen felt like he was looking into a mirror.

“Then don’t you have anything you want to say now? My good son, you truly hurt dad’s heart,” the man squinted his eyes and mocked.

“Sad? My mom should be even more sad in comparison, right?”

“Her?” the man suddenly laughed. “Even if she is sad, it shouldn’t be because of me. Her sadness should be directed towards the family she was in. It was the Gu family that pushed her to me in exchange of a hundred years of stability. That’s all.”

“Hehe...” Ye Zichen smiled.

“I told you, I really hate your expression,” the man’s gaze suddenly turned dark. “You are furious and want to take revenge for your mother? My good son, you’re still too weak. Even if you want to take revenge, you should go and find your grandfather. If you don’t believe me, then go back and ask Gu Rong who is the person she hates most!”

“Is that so?” Ye Zichen smiled, while his gaze also turned sullen. “I don’t know who I’m supposed to blame. Nor do I want to open up mother’s past wounds. All I know is that... Right now, the person I hate most is you. That is enough!”

Ye Zichen clenched his fist while his hands glittered.

He swung his fist at the man’s face. Since the two of them stood too close to one another, the man was unable to evade in time, and had to take the brunt of Ye Zichen’s punch.

Bang.

Ye Zichen’s shoulders trembled after swinging the first.

His heart was already filled with an indescribable anger.

He doesn’t know about the past, but from the words that the man had said, and the man’s anger-inducing looks...

Ye Zichen could be sure that, he... let Ye Rong down.

“My good son, you’re not obedient at all. It is always the father beating the son, since when was the son allowed to hit the father?”

The man frowned. He swiped his finger over the corner of his mouth, then, while he saw the redness on his fingers...

“And I’m bleeding. This truly is outrageous!”

Boom.

All of a sudden, a suffocating aura of spiritual energy radiated out from the man.

“Then let me act out my duty as the father!”

Chapter 331 – Fight

The dominating aura from the man shot out, scattering the ice and snow that Lu Lu had created.

The eyes of everyone in the room twitched.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen squinted his eyes at Lu Lu and frowned, “Take good care of them.”

“Then what about you!?” Lu Lu’s expression drastically changed. In her mind, only Ye Zichen was worthy of her care. She did not particularly care about the others at all.

“Even though he is coming off strong, he’s just an Earth Immortal. He can’t do anything to me,” with that, Ye Zichen looked up at the man emotionlessly.

His dark irises lit up with a gold light, while a brownish-grey aura also surfaced on his skin.

Fiery Eyes of Truth, activate!

Unbreakable Body, activate!

“My good son, do you want to fight dad?” the man curled his lips, and chunked the folded fan up into the air...

Tat.

The moment the fan fell onto the ground, both Ye Zichen and the man moved.

Bang.

Two fists collided together.

A huge torrent of spiritual energy spread out with Ye Zichen and the man at the center.

Gu Tian and co., who stood at the back, were so impacted by the wave of spiritual energy that they could not open their eyes. If it wasn't for Lu Lu setting up a barrier in front of them, they might have been sent flying due to it.

However, Hua Lihua was not so lucky, because she was merely a normal mortal woman.

The moment Lu Lu activated the ice world, Hua Lihua could no longer endure it. Then, when the spiritual energy wave appeared, she was directly sent flying, before she hit the wall, causing her to cough up a large mouthful of blood.

“Is-Is this really Brother Ye?”

Shock filled Gu Tian's eyes, and even Lu Lu was surprised.

She had never seen Ye Zichen go out at full force. However, she could tell from he was of the False Earth Immortal level from the faint vibrations of spiritual energy around his body.

Yet, during that exchange...

It was clear that his strength was not just limited to that level.

“My good son, I didn’t expect you to not be particularly weak. Not bad, at least you did not inherit the weakness of Gu Rong in terms of strength,” the man smiled sinisterly.

Ye Zichen stared at him, “You really bullshit far too much. I feel like I’m going to get calluses on my ears just from listening to you.”

“Hehe...” the man smiled coldly, then suddenly poured more force into his arm...

Dong.

Ye Zichen, who had managed to match the man’s strength so far, was instantly sent flying into a wall.

“Did you really think that you are equal to daddy?” the man said angrily.

“Ye Zichen!” Lu Lu shouted out worriedly. At that moment, Ye

Zichen crawled up from the ground with blood flowing down the corner of his mouth. He wiped away the blood, then looked up with eyes filled with endless hatred...

This man in front of me is my father...

What a joke!

Ye Zichen roared, then shot out towards the man once again like a ray of light.

Bang bang bang bang.

Ye Zichen and the man exchanged blows so quickly that a normal person's naked eye could no longer capture their movements. The only way they could even identify the exchanges were the sounds of collision that echoed in the room.

Dong.

Dong.

Dong.

Ye Zichen flew out and hit the wall continuously, but he struggled and stood up every single time, before charging towards that man.

Ye Zichen had already forgotten about pain. He only had one thought in mind...

Defeat that man, and take revenge for my mother.

Normally, Ye Zichen did have a sort of happy-go-lucky attitude, so he would have at least a slight bit of mercy for everyone. However, when someone truly tramples on his bottom line, even if he knows that he cannot defeat the other person, and clearly knows that he cannot win...

He will still try!

“Is this a joke!”

Ye Zichen shouted out with his hoarse voice. At this moment, his irises also turned blood red as he manically charged at the man over and over again due to his grudge!

Nobody noticed that while Ye Zichen fought with the man, his hair gradually turned blood red, while his skin turned bronze...

Dong.

Ye Zichen was sent flying to the wall by the man once again. When that happened, blood already begun to uncontrollably gush out from his mouth.

He no longer had the strength to stand up. He could only lay on the ground, look in front of him with lost eyes, while struggling to lift his right hand.

“My good son, in the end, you’re still too weak.”

The man squinted his eyes and walked over with a playful smile. The hair of Lu Lu, who had been protecting Gu Tian’s group, instantly turned the color of ice...

“You’re seeking death,” the man roared. A black ball of energy suddenly appeared in his right hand, which he threw at Lu Lu’s chest without the slightest hint of hesitation.

Immediately after that, Lu Lu’s body turned feeble, while her hair reverted to its original color.

“Body Double, just stay to the side and watch. Do you think that a mere Body Double can be any kind of a threat towards me?” the man laughed recklessly.

Then, he ignored Lu Lu, who tried her best with that body of hers, and walked straight in front of Ye Zichen.

He put his a hand in his pocket, then reached out his hand towards the fan on the ground.

The fan instantly appeared in his hand. He fluttered the fan lightly, then smiled with a condescending attitude, “My good son.

You're still too young to try and beat your father!"

Then, a hint of mercilessness flashed in his eyes.

"Your existence itself was a mistake. Since it's like this, then just disappear!"

He kicked towards Ye Zichen's chest with his right leg without any sign of hesitation. At that very moment...

Bang.

The door was suddenly knocked open. A meatball-like fatty ran in threw the door and crashed into the man.

"Ouch, f*ck. Why is the threshold so high? It nearly tripped Lord Fatty to death. Hey, wait a moment, why is the ground so soft?" Fatty Yin subconsciously turned around and saw the man beneath him. He quickly scratched his head and smiled coyly. "Sorry, sorry. I didn't notice you there. Sorry."

He quickly got up from the man. Then he saw the white-out state of the room, and Ye Zichen and co. who were on the floor...

"What's going on? The houses in Linhe Garden can make artificial snow now? You guys were having a snow fight to the point of coughing up blood?"

He quickly ran to Ye Zichen's side, grabbed Ye Zichen's arm with his hand, then begun to pass along celestial spiritual energy into his body...

Yet, to the fatty's surprise, he was unable to pass along any celestial spiritual energy into Ye Zichen's body.

“How's it possible.”

“How's it possible?”

“How's it possible!?”

Ye Zichen muttered, wailed, then screamed. Then, when he looked up...

His hair completely turned the color of blood, just like his eyes, while his skin also turned a dark bronze...

“Ahhh...”

Bang.

A pair of pitch black wings spread out from behind his body.

Everyone in the room freaked out when they saw this.

What's more, Fatty Yin muttered to himself frantically, "Fa-Fallen!"

Chapter 332 – Fallen

“How’s it possible?”

Ye Zichen stood up from the floor emotionlessly, while the wings behind him continuously fluttered. The huge wind produced caused all the decorations to fly all over the place, while he...

“How’s it possible!”

Zoom.

Ye Zichen looked up.

He stared straight at the man in front of him. He had already lost his ability to think, and only knew subconsciously that...

He had to defeat that man.

“Fallen... Hahahaha, Fallen!” the man smiled crazily. I didn’t think that the weak woman and I would actually give birth to a Fallen. Hahahaha...”

Bang.

He suddenly stopped laughing.

Ye Zichen's first hit mercilessly landed on the man's stomach, and following that, Ye Zichen relentlessly swung his fists towards the man.

Domination!

He completely dominated the man.

At that moment, the man, who was beaten to the point of coughing up blood by Ye Zichen, could only struggle to defend himself. There was no possibility for him to fight back at all.

Despite that, he continued to smile in excitement.

“Fallen, as expected of the greatest bloodline of the demon race. It truly is so strong that it excites me!”

Dong.

Ye Zichen kicked the man, causing the man to hit the wall and crack it.

As the man coughed up blood, he still chose to speak up with a smile of anticipation, “My good son, come with daddy! Don't stay in a small place like the Modern Realm, this place will only cover up your talent as a Fallen.”

However, the only response was a merciless punch.

“My good son...”

Bang.

Another punch.

Only then did the man notice that Ye Zichen’s eyes were void of any consciousness. At that moment, Ye Zichen lacked the ability to think, he was merely acting based on instinct, just like how animals acted upon their instincts to hunt.

“You’ve lost yourself? Heh... So useless!” The man suddenly snorted coldly. Not long later, his hair and eyes also turned blood red, while his skin turned an even darker shade than Ye Zichen’s.

A vomit-inducing wave of spiritual energy spread out from his body.

Meanwhile, Fatty Yin, who stared closely at the two people in front of him hesitated to act.

“Trash is trash. I thought you could awaken and become a Fallen, but your consciousness was actually devoured,” the man cursed, while manifesting two black balls of energy from his hands. “It seems like I thought too much into it. How could a pure Fallen be conceived with that mere woman!?”

“Die!”

He combined the two balls of energy, which turned into a small ball of light with a diameter of one centimeter, and shot it towards Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen raised his hand.

The sneer on the man’s face became ever more apparent the moment he saw Ye Zichen raise his hand.

He actually wants to use his bare hands to grab the shot. This shot’s a condensed version, and even if a Human Immortal level expert grabbed it with their bare hands, it would still shoot straight through their hands.

Fatty Yin was also extremely shocked, causing him to roar, “Don’t...”

However, Ye Zichen could not hear his call. Ye Zichen merely reached forward with his hand...

The smile on the man’s face became more cruel, only to turn into shock moments later.

The energy sphere did not explode.

Ye Zichen grabbed it with a single hand, looked at it with a hint

of curiosity in his eyes, then popped it into his mouth.

“Impossible!”

The man shook his head intensely. No one should be able to consume the energy bombs that other people released. Even extremely powerful people were only able to capture them, but were unable to digest it, not to mention being able to do it so easily.

However, the truth was in front of his eyes after all. After the energy bomb was swallowed, Ye Zichen’s skin color appeared to be more nourished.

Burp.

Ye Zichen burped comfortably, then reached out his hand like a kid that just ate a candy that they like...

It was as if he was saying... Give me a few more.

“This is impossible!” the man no longer remained as laid back as he had initially. He shook his head forcefully, and manifested a bunch of energy bombs around him...

Zoom.

He shot them out without any hesitation, but Ye Zichen was able

to receive all of them.

And the moment he caught one, he popped it into his mouth, swallowed it, and digested it!

“This... This...” the man’s eyes twitched.

After Ye Zichen burped once more, he licked his faint purple lips with his crimson tongue...

Bang.

He smashed his fist against the man’s chest.

Crack.

The man’s chest instantly dented inward, while blood spurt out of his mouth uncontrollably. The purple blood became ever more apparent on the snow-white floor.

Bang.

Bang.

Bang.

As Ye Zichen swung his fists over and over again, the man had no

way of resisting at all. If Ye Zichen wished to, he could even smash the man's head with but a single punch.

But he didn't...

He only swung his fist at the man's body. It was as if the man was one of his beloved toys, and he didn't want to cause the man to be ruined so quickly.

A good ten-odd minutes later.

The man's arms and legs were already smashed to pieces, while his chest was completely indented. Normally speaking, these sort of injuries would have killed a person several times over already, but the man continued to stare closely at Ye Zichen with a hint of surprise.

"Ye Zichen, enough."

Fatty Yin walked over with squinted eyes.

Ye Zichen turned around stiffly and looked at Fatty Yin with his emotionless eyes.

Gulp.

Fatty Yin silently gulped. This sort of gaze is way too threatening.

Could this really be a Fallen? But didn't they say that the demon race is already extinct? Also, that man should be a descendant of the demon race as well...

F*ck.

I, Lord Fatty, have never dealt with a Fallen before.

As Fatty Yin looked at the deadly gaze of Ye Zichen, he licked his lips, then retreated with a coy smile, then pointed at the man, who was being beaten up, "Please continue!"

As he retreated in a flattering manner, his expression immediately turned sullen. God knows if Ye Zichen is going to break out of that Fallen status. If he continues on like this...

"Ice Empress, how long do you need to heal your body? Hurry up and freeze him!"

"I'm already trying my best!" Lu Lu frowned, while she answered with a solemn look on her face.

"What do you think is going on? Laozi has never come into contact with situations like this!" Fatty Yin said speechlessly.

"Ye Zichen is a normal person, but he probably has the blood of the demon race within him, which was activated for some reason.

Since his original form is not that of a demon it will be possible to wake him up. But... it can only be done by someone he holds close to his heart,” Lu Lu frowned.

“Close to his heart? Then I, Lord Fatty, isn’t going to work. He seemed like he was going to eat me just now. How about you give it a shot? Don’t you get along with him?” Fatty Yin asked.

“I’m not confident about that!” Lu Lu smiled wryly. “I don’t want to annoy him myself either.”

“Then what do you say we should do?” Fatty Yin had no idea what to do next.

Ye Zichen tilted his head to look at his beloved toy lying on the ground. Then, he set his gaze upon the man’s head.

He moved his arm.

Clap.

A white hand grabbed hold of his arm.

“Zichen, wake up!”

Chapter 333 – Nobody Was Wrong

The soft voice caused Ye Zichen to pause. He looked at the woman in front of him blankly. Then, a blood red tear flowed down from the corner of his eye.

“Mom...”

“You’re tired. Rest,” Ye Rong caressed his hair softly.

Ye Zichen’s blinked, while his eyes welled up with tears.

His blood-colored hair and irides gradually returned to their originally color, while his bronze skin also gradually returned to normal.

A wave of fatigue overwhelmed him, before he fell headfirst into Ye Rong’s arms.

“Why did you come to the capital?” the man on the ground squinted at her and asked.

Ye Rong smiled and looked at him, who had been beaten to a pulp by Ye Zichen, then smiled coldly, “If I were you, then I would be running away now. If I didn’t come, you would already be dead.”

“Ridiculous!” the man replied maniacally. “Our son has already lost the powers of a Fallen due to your call. Right now... Who can

actually stop me? Let me suggest to you guys. Hurry up and f*ck off before I finish healing myself!”

“Is that so?”

Bang.

Ye Rong instantly released rays of dazzling sacred light.

As she held Ye Zichen, she appeared like an untainted angel, who smiled at the man on the ground, “Do you really think that.... You can really match up to me?”

“You...” the man looked at the scene in front of him in shock.

He twitched his mouth and muttered a few words.

A pitch black wormhole appeared in front of him. At the same time, his body also was gradually sucked into it.

Right before he closed the wormhole, he smiled sinisterly, “You actually managed to awaken my good son from the state of a Fallen. It seems like your feelings as parent and child really do run deep. Due to this first time, he should be even more natural at controlling his Fallen powers. I definitely will not leave a treasure like him to you.”

“F*ck off... Before I change my mind,” Ye Rong radiated the

sacred light from her body.

The man's pupils contracted, then snuck into the wormhole. However, the room continued to echo his cold laugh, "I will snatch that brat away."

Zoom.

The wormhole disappeared.

Everyone looked at the scene in front of them in shock. Everything that happened was already up to the level of a huge blockbuster with wings and light emitting from their bodies...

It was as amazing as Hollywood's special effects!

"Are you guys Zichen's friends?"

Ye Rong carried Ye Zichen over to Gu Tian and co. She put her hand on Lu Lu's shoulders, causing the latter to be instantly healed.

"Body Double, I hope I can meet your main body when you have some time," Mother Ye smiled softly, then looked at Fatty Yin. "Two souls... Taking over someone else's body is not a good habit."

Lu Lu's and Fatty Yin's face were covered in shock, while Ye Rong set her gaze on Gu Tian, "Are you Ol' Three's child?"

“Aun-Auntie!” Gu Tian pursed his lips and replied in a testing manner.

Gu Rong smiled, then rubbed her head, “Good boy, you truly look exactly the same as your father. Back then, only your dad stood up against the old man’s decision.”

“Auntie, my father has always missed you. He said that you were the best to him when he was young.”

“Yeah, when we were children, your dad and I were great siblings,” Ye Rong smiled softly.

At that moment, Hua Lihua struggled up from the floor.

When she saw everything in the room, and that the man had disappeared...

“It seems like you guys have other things to take care of here, so I won’t intrude any longer. Zichen’s tired, I’m taking him back to rest,” Ye Rong smiled and left the room with Ye Zichen in her arms.

Everyone in the room looked at Ye Rong’s retreating back in shock, then set their gazes upon Hua Lihua.

“How’s that possible!”

Ye Zichen suddenly screamed and sat up from the bed. He looked at his surroundings in confusion, and noticed that he was no longer in Linhe Garden.

Fragments of memories appeared in his mind...

In those fragments, he grew wings from his body. He was very strong, and had managed to beat the man up to a pulp.

Then, Mother Ye seemed to have appeared at the very last moment.

Ye Zichen clutched his head in pain. At the same time, the door to the room was pushed open, and Ye Rong walked in with a towel and a basin of water.

“Zichen, you’re awake.”

Mother Ye’s tone remained as soft as always.

When Ye Zichen looked up and saw her kind smile...

“Mom, why-why did you come?”

“You’ve always been clumsy, so how can I not worry about you when you’re off by yourself?” Mother Ye smiled kindly. After that, she touched his forehead and nodded. “It isn’t hot anymore.”

Ye Zichen pursed his lips at his mother's kind smile, then frowned.

He had way too many things that he wanted to ask.

"I know there are loads of stuff that you want to ask about, but don't ask... okay?" Mother Ye begged.

Ye Zichen clenched his teeth and nodded, "Then can you tell me just one thing? That man..."

"He wasn't wrong!" Mother Ye smiled faintly, while forgiveness could be heard in her tone. "None of it was his wrongdoing. Perhaps, it was our union itself that was a mistake. However, it was not your grandfather's fault either. Discarding me for the family was the correct choice."

"Then you're admitting that I'm someone from the Gu family, right?" Ye Zichen forced a sad smile to his face.

"Actually, you already knew a long time ago, right?" Mother Ye smiled softly, then got off the bed and opened the curtains. As she looked down at the passing car, she spoke up once again. "As for whether you're someone from the Gu family, that's for you to decide. If you want... Then you are! If you don't want to, then so what if I say you are?"

"The only thing I know is that my surname is Ye," Ye Zichen said

with utter certainty. He held no goodwill towards the Gu family at all, even if Mother Ye forgave them and even went as far as to find excuses for them.

However, the truth is the truth. Even if they manage to put it in a completely different manner...

Mother Ye had become the family's sacrifice and ended up with a man like that.

"Then our surname will be Ye," Mother Ye turned back. "Actually, I like the surname Ye quite a bit. Ever since I left the Gu family, I fell in love with this surname immediately after being given it."

Creak.

Ye Zichen secretly clenched his fist. He could feel just how depressed Mother Ye was in her heart when she said that.

She became the family's sacrifice, and even had her own surname taken away from her.

Then had to endure being with a man she does not know!

"Gu family!" Ye Zichen frowned.

As he uttered that quietly, Mother Ye turned back with a smile,

“Don’t think about getting back at them for me. There is no need for that. I have already gotten past that a long time ago. By the way, I never actually expected you to meet someone from the Gu family.”

“Mm, the reason I came to the capital this time was to help Gu Tian gain the position of the junior family head!” Ye Zichen nodded.

“Junior family head...?”

Mother Ye’s soft smile suddenly froze, as she halted her words.

Chapter 334 – Son Of A Saint And A Demon

Ye Rong's gaze clearly displayed that she had something to say when Ye Zichen mentioned the position of the junior family head.

“What's wrong with helping Gu Tian get the position of the junior family head?” Ye Zichen frowned, showing his confusion.

Hearing that, Ye Rong paused for a moment before shaking her head with a smile, “Nothing, helping him get the junior family head position is good. But, mom does want to ask you something. What would you do if you could be the junior family head?”

“Me as the junior family head?”

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, and attempted to sit up against the pillow. However, he found that he was unable to muster up any strength at all. All he could do was lie on the bed...

“Your previous actions caused too much burden on your body, so you need to rest now,” Ye Rong caressed his head softly.

Ye Zichen did not believe her, and struggled to get up, but he found that he couldn't even muster up enough strength to lift his hand.

Could it have been because I turned into that thing with wings?

Ye Zichen frowned. His heart was filled with confusion. Why did a pair of wings grow out from my back? I'm not [Leizhenzi](#)...

“Try not to be clouded by hate in the future. Try to see past everything.”

“Are you afraid that I will become like that again?” Ye Zichen said weakly. “You should know something about it, right? Why did I become like that? I was unable to control my emotions nor my body in that state. I didn't even have the simplest bit of consciousness.”

“Mom can't tell you in detail. Everything is mom's fault, if it wasn't for me...” Ye Rong smiled wryly.

Twenty years ago...

“Waaa....”

A loud cry sounded out in a worn down temple. A woman sat within alongside a baby, who had just been born into the world.

“Baby...”

The woman struggled to sit up, and when she saw the child in front of her...

The child was bathed in a sacred and pure light. He was just like a

saint. Not long later, a bunch of animals ran into the temple, and stopped around a meter away from the child, while laying on the floor and displaying pleasure in their eyes.

“He inherited my bloodline,” the woman smiled softly and caressed the baby’s head.

However, not long later, the infant’s cries dampened, and his breathing weakened.

“Baby!”

Shock surprised on the woman’s face. She continuously shook the baby in her arms, and tried to do everything she could to make him cry. However, the baby refused the cry, while his face turned purple.

All of the animals in the room also surrounded them, and revealed their care for him in their eyes.

“What a pity!” An old man suddenly appeared in the temple. He shook his head slowly and sighed as he looked at the baby in the woman’s arms. “He should have been a saint, but his bloodline is too full of other things. Girl, your man should be... a demon, right?”

The woman paused, then revealed a hint of fear in her expression, “Master, what should I do? I don’t want my child to die just like this...”

“The combination of a saint and a demon is wrong, and the fact that the child could even be born was unnatural for the world. The advice this old man gives you is to discard the child...” the elder shook his head and muttered continuously...

A pity!

A pity!

“No... I will not give up on my child,” the woman shook her head madly. She held the baby in her eyes tightly and watched as his face turned redder.

“Actually, it is possible if you want to save him! But, it is very possible that if you do that, his existence will endanger the balance of the three realms, or even the six realms. If you really do that, then he will be burdened with endless sins. Are you sure... that you want this child to suffer all that?”

The old man’s gaze did not change at all. The woman glanced at the old man, then at the infant in her arms...

“I want my child to live. As for the sins, as the mother, I shall carry those for him.”

“it isn’t going to be as simple as you said!” the elder let out a long sigh. “Whatever, our meeting is fate. Since you want to save him, and I don’t want to see a saint fall just after being born in this

world, then I shall give you a bit of good fortune!”

Several minutes later, the elder left while shaking his head.

The woman in the worn-down temple hesitated for a long time, then a crazed look appeared in her eyes.

She reached into her pocket and took out a small glass vial.

The moment she uncorked it, all of the animals in the temple hurriedly fled from the temple in fright.

There was a purplish red droplet of blood in the vial, which emitted an oppressing aura.

“Baby, if you are going to hate anyone, then hate your mother!”

She dropped the blood within the vial into the infant’s mouth. In that instant, the baby’s body turned bronze, and blood-red hair grew from his scalp, while a pair of small wings protruded out from his back.

A ray of blood-red light mixed with a hint of sacredness shot up into a sky. Then, the infant began to weep loudly.

“Ai, what a pitiful woman and a pitiful child... A child of a saint and a demon, that’s a huge sin!” The elder who just walked out of the temple turned around and shook his head as looked at the ray

of light that shot up into the sky. “I should do something good till the very end since I already started the deed. The future will be on you guys.”

A huge handprint shot up into the sky and suppressed the ray of light until it dispersed.

The woman in the temple bit her lips tightly, placed the child on the straw mattress which she was on, then knelt onto the ground and kowtowed thrice in the direction that the elder left it.

Then, she picked up the baby and disappeared into the temple.

“Mom, mom...” Ye Zichen, who was laying on the bed, frowned as he shouted out towards his mother.

Only then did Ye Rong return to her senses. She smiled kindly, “What is it?”

“Nothing, what happened with you... You suddenly stopped speaking right in the middle of anything, and you didn’t react to my words at all,” Ye Zichen said a bit helplessly. “Did you suddenly remember something? Can you tell it to me? I don’t know anything...”

“What use is it for you to know so much?” Ye Rong raised her hand and caressed his air. “Just stay in this hospital and rest properly!”

“You are definitely hiding something from me. What is there to hide between us. Seriously...” Ye Zichen pouted in annoyance. Previously, he had felt rather bad about hiding some things from Mother Ye.

Yet, from the looks of things, Mother Ye also hid plenty of stuff from him!

Examples of her hiding things was the Gu family. Only now did he find out that her original name was actually Gu Rong, and was once the young lady of a hidden family in the capital.

“Seriously, you actually dare to criticize mom now?” Ye Rong knocked on his head.

Ye Zichen instantly smiled and put on the look of an obedient child, “Then I won’t ask. But, you do have to tell me why you asked whether I wanted to become the Gu family’s junior family head, right?”

Leizhenzi (雷震子) is an immortal being with wings that was created by a thundercloud.

Chapter 335 – To The Gu Household

“Mom was just asking,” Ye Rong smiled, then shrugged. “If mom hadn’t left the Gu family, then you might have gotten stuck in this competition for the junior family head. That’s why I was a bit curious about your opinion.”

Ye Zichen smiled, “So it’s like that. If you are just asking, then if I could become the junior family head, I would...”

“What would you do?” Ye Rong smiled softly.

“Destroy the Gu family,” Ye Zichen’s face suddenly turned cold, while his ice-cold gaze caused people to feel a chill in their hearts.

“Why would you make that choice?” Ye Rong’s smile froze, but she continued to ask in a calm voice.

“There is no need to have this sort of sickly family exist,” Ye Zichen’s gaze was filled with disdain. “I had heard that once upon a time, the Gu family was the leading family among the hidden families, but now... it is merely a second-rated one.”

“Perhaps the decline of the family has an unavoidable reason, but it is also due to the uselessness of the people who manage the family. More importantly, they treated you as a sacrifice! If I became the junior family head, then my job would be to destroy the Gu family,” Ye Zichen did not hide the grudge in his eyes at all.

Seeing that, Ye Rong sighed, then caressed his hair, “Mom said that nobody was wrong.”

“I’m not saying that anyone was wrong,” Ye Zichen smiled. “Weren’t you just asking? I’m just saying. It’s impossible for me to become the junior family head of the Gu family, so naturally, I will not destroy it.”

“You’re right,” Ye Rong smiled, then caressed Ye Zichen’s hair once again, and helped him pull up his blanket. “Rest well and don’t think too much. Mom is happy as long as I have you.”

Then, she left the room wearing a smile...

After Ye Rong walked out of the ward, she leaned on the door of the ward, and smiled wryly.

...

“Lil’ Rong, do you blame me?” the room swirled with suffocating smoke. A white-haired man sat on the sofa with a look of worry on his face.

“What’s there to blame as the eldest sister? Isn’t taking care of my siblings my responsibility?”

Back then, Ye Rong was still a young and beautiful girl. She dressed like a saint as she smiled brightly.

As she looked at the man's white hair, which had been completely black just a day before...

"Originally, you were the hope for our Gu family for the next hundred or even thousand years, but... the demons... I, the father, was truly too meek," the man put out his cigarette in the ash tray. His ancient face was covered in reluctance and helplessness, while his bloodshot eyes also glittered slightly... "Sorry!"

"It's okay!" Ye Rong shook her head plainly.

"After you get with Tuo Baye, you have to give birth to a son for our Gu family. If the child inherits your bloodline, then bring the child back. You shall inherit the position of the family head. In the future, the child will lead our Gu family back to the Three Realms after he grows up! If he inherits Tuo Baye's demon bloodline, kill him... Then, return to the family. You will still be my daughter!" Viciousness surfaced on the man's ancient face. He clenched his fist and teeth. "The demon race is the common enemy of the three realms. I cannot tolerate anyone in my family giving birth to a demon."

"I understand," Ye Rong's face was still filled with a kind smile.

As the man looked at her smile, his face turned stark white, "You really are very like your mother. You're both very kind... I know you carry too much of a burden..."

"No need to say anymore. I understand," Ye Rong smiled, then

took off her saintess clothings, and revealed the black clothes she wore underneath.

“From this moment onwards, my surname is no longer Gu, it is Ye... I’m called Ye Rong, and am no longer Saintess Gu Rong.”

She elegantly turned around and pushed open the door without any hesitation. What met her outside was Tuo Baye’s androgynous smile.

He lifted Ye Rong’s chin with his hand, then smiled towards the man in the room, “A hundred years. Remember that Geezer Gu, it is merely a hundred years!”

...

Huuuuu.

In that instant, Ye Rong’s eyes turned wet. She let out a long sigh and rubbed her nose, then glanced at Ye Zichen, who laid on the bed with a frown, through the glass of the door.

“I didn’t actually break my promise. This child... is not a demon! But... he isn’t a saint either. Since I didn’t return, you have been very troubled, right!”

Three days passed by in an instant. During so, Ye Zichen’s condition gradually improved. At the very least, he was able to walk on the ground, but he was still unable to gather any celestial

spiritual energy.

It was as if something was cutting off the connection between him and the celestial spiritual energy.

During those three days, Gu Tian and co. also visited Ye Zichen, and this group of people who visited him included Qi Cheng, who truly annoyed him. That being said, that woman was definitely adept at kissing ass, since she managed to make Mother Ye very happy.

Since Ye Zichen didn't find it right to expose the woman's true face in front of Mother Ye, he was only able to warn her not to be too outrageous in secret.

However, the woman merely smiled, and continued what she was doing.

"Auntie, my dad really wants to see you..." as a conversation could be heard outside the ward, Ye Zichen, who was watching a video on his phone, chuckled his phone to the side and looked up...

Then, saw Gu Tian and Mother Ye walk over side by side, the latter who seemed to be pleading with Mother Ye for something.

"Say no more. I will naturally see him when I want to. Didn't you have business with Zichen, go on and chat!" Mother Ye directly turned around and left after sending Gu Tian to the ward.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows with a smile, “You failed again?”

“Yeah, I failed!” Gu Tian shrugged helplessly. “Say, it really is my fault. I shouldn’t have mentioned this to my dad. Everything’s great now, the moment I return home, he would mention it to me. Not only that, he even decreed that I have to make eldest aunt agree...”

“You really call her “Auntie” rather passionately!” Ye Zichen smiled playfully. “C’mon, let’s hear you call cousin.”

“It naturally is fine for me to call you cousin, but do you dare to answer? I, your younger cousin brother is in a shit load of trouble, if you really dare to answer, just wait for your suffering!” Gu Tian also smiled.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, “Then try it!”

“Cousin!”

Slap.

The moment Gu Tian finished, Ye Zichen smacked him on the head, “You really called when I told you so. Kid, why don’t you have any opinions for yourself? You want to be the junior family head of the Gu family just like this? How many times did I tell you? You’ve got to have a temper. Just now... you would have passed if you just slapped me!”

“You really are unreasonable. Can I actually to beat you?”

It's not like I didn't try, but I would get beaten up every single time. That's why I got smart, and just did whatever I'm told. If I don't do it, then it is just one hit at most, but if I resist, then it is a good beating.

“Zeze... Look at your idiotic look,” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes. “Come on, tell me, what did you come to report to me for!”

“This time... I'm here to take you to the Gu family!”

Chapter 336 – Is False Earth Immortal Level Amazing?

The Gu household was rather different from what he expected. He thought that the hidden Gu family home would be some rural place in the middle of nowhere. Yet, the reality was contrary to his expectations. The Gu family was like all other mundane families, and the household was situated right in the middle of a crowded city.

Outside of a huge Chinese courtyard house, several buff men looked around vigilantly.

Gu Tian stopped the car in front of the gate. When the hulks saw him, they all nodded slightly, then set their gazes on Ye Zichen.

“This is an important guest that I invited!” Gu Tian said towards the hulks.

One of them slightly frowned, “Little Young Master, you should clearly know what time it is for the Gu family right now. Just bringing an outsider to our home like that isn’t actually good, right?”

“I never heard that the campaign for the junior family head does not allow us to acquire external aid. Didn’t my brothers do that?” Gu Tian squinted his eyes and scanned the hulks. “What? Could it be that you want to cause trouble for me?”

“We naturally do not dare,” the hulk shook his head, then looked at the sickly Ye Zichen. “However, the other young masters have all found capable people, yet you...”

“It seems like I’m being mocked?” Ye Zichen spoke plainly, then curled his lips and shrugged. “Them finding capable people is their matter. Gu Tian asking a frail person like me is Gu Tian’s choice. If you guys are worried that outsiders will cause a threat to the Gu family, then you should watch over the people that Gu Tian’s brothers brought. If you guys are worried about the person that Gu Tian brings not being of help to him, then you guys should let me in without even asking!”

“This...” the hulk hesitated.

Gu Tian also raised his eyebrows, “Cut the bullshit. Let us in!”

“Let them in!” the hulk waved his hand, and stepped back from his position in front of the gate.

Seeing that, Gu Tian and Ye Zichen got in the car, and slowly drove into the courtyard.

As they drove, Ye Zichen noticed that the moment their car entered the courtyard, the hulk in front of the gate took out his phone as if he planned to communicate with someone.

“Is that guard in someone’s faction as well?”

“Probably, I’m not so clear about it,” Gu Tian smiled, then shrugged. “This Gu household seems to have been pretty much split up by my brothers already. Nobody is really certain about who is actually in whose faction!”

“What a complicated family!” Ye Zichen twitched his mouth.

“Yeah,” Gu Tian shrugged.

After they parked the car in one of the various courtyards, two elders walked out of a room towards them the moment they got out of the car. One of them was the Elder Hua that Ye Zichen had seen in Bingcheng, while the other two...

As Ye Zichen looked at their slightly sullen and unsmiling faces, he could not gather up any good feelings towards them.

“Young Master Gu, do you know how tense everything has been recently? You actually went out,” the old man who dressed like an old daoist in green clothes frowned, then set his gaze on the sickly Ye Zichen. “And who is this?”

“He is someone I brought to help,” Gu Tian said with a smile.

That old daoist squinted his eyes, then spoke with slight disdain, “Him... help?”

“Mhmm!” Gu Tian nodded seriously.

“Young Master Gu, although it isn’t very possible for you to win the election for the junior family head, there is no need for you to abandon yourself like this,” the white-clothed elder on the side raised his eyebrows. “We old men are all trying our best to help you find a way out. Even if we don’t succeed, at least you will be able to stay well. But you... Just who is he...”

“Elder Li, you better be more respectful,” Gu Tian’s expression suddenly grew dark. “Apologize to Brother Ye, otherwise, you can leave here. I won’t welcome you here anymore!”

“What did you say?” the white-clothed elder frowned, then looked at Gu Tian’s determined eyes in shock, before laughing. “You’re telling me to apologize to this invalid? Just who is he... You actually asked this old man to apologize. Do you know how strong this old man is? I’m a mid-stage False Earth Immortal! Although I’m not at the peak of the Gu family’s power level, I do have the position of an elder. Just who is this brat? He’s so sickly like he’s about to die. You actually told this old man to apologize to him!?”

“Hehe...” Ye Zichen suddenly pursed his lips and laughed. He glanced at the old man. “False Earth Immortal... is that really that amazing?”

A faint pressure begun to emit from his body. Although he was unable to gather any celestial spiritual energy, at the very least, he could still emit the pressure of his power level.

The old man's face instantly turned green when he felt the pressure building around Ye Zichen...

“You're merely a False Earth Immortal at such an old age, and you're still so cocky? If I was your age and didn't reach the level of a Sky Immortal, then I would just go and f*cking commit suicide!”

“...”

Elder Li pursed his lips silently. He clenched his teeth, look at Gu Tian and Ye Zichen with a cold snort, “A mere False Earth Immortal level cultivator. No matter how amazing his talent is, it does not belong to you, Gu Tian. Even if it comes, he cannot turn the tables for you. Fine, since the little young master doesn't need this old man, then this old man will leave!”

Then, he turned around and walked out.

The squared-faced elder in green clothes frowned slightly, “Old Li!”

“No need to talk me out of it. There is no need to stay here. I'll be far less stressed if I don't get involved in the competition for the junior family head,” the old man squinted his eyes sullenly, then glanced at Gu Tian. “Little Young Master, sooner or later, you will come crying to beg this old man to return!”

“Take care!”

Contrary to his expectations, Gu Tian did not give him face at all.

Elder Li's expression stiffened, then left in anger.

Both Elder Hua and the green-clothed elder let out long sighed, then the latter spoke up, "Little Young Master, our being strict with you is a good thing. Old Li did it for your..."

"You want to say that it was for my own good?" Gu Tian squinted his eyes. "Did you guys know that he's someone my eldest brother sent?"

Gu Tian smiled faintly, then looked at the green-clothed elder's stiffening face, "I'm still not sure who exactly sent Elder Li, but you should speak the truth quickly. If I really do find out.... I don't have a particularly good temper."

"Don't speak outrageously, Little Young Master, how could this old man do that sort of thing!" the green-clothed elder said frantically.

"That's for the best," Gu Tian smiled.

At this moment, Elder Hua also walked over to Ye Zichen's side with squinted eyes, "Little brother, I hope you can full-heartedly support Young Master Gu."

"I will return the exact sentence to you," Ye Zichen smiled faintly at the elder who has been with Gu Tian for ten years. "You had

better full-heartedly support Gu Tian. If you do anything strange, let me remind you that my temper is even worse than Gu Tian's!"

Chapter 337 – Wind Catching Ear

Elder Hua's old face instantly stiffened.

Then, not long later, he smiled a playful smile, "Are you trying to say that I won't full-heartedly support Young Master Lil' Tian? This old man has been with Young Master Lil' Tian for some ten-odd years!"

"So what? Haven't you seen those undercover flicks? Didn't those people go undercover for ten-odd years just for the single most important moment?" Ye Zichen snickered, then ignored the old man. Then, he turned to Gu Tian. "Find a room for me, I'm a bit tired."

"Okay!" Gu Tian nodded and led Ye Zichen away. While they were leaving, he nodded towards Elder Hua to signal Elder Hua not to mind so much.

When they reached the room, Ye Zichen sat down on the sofa, and took out a cigarette from his pocket and lit it before chucking the box on the table.

Gu Tian picked the box up, and also took one out, which he lit and put in his mouth.

After inhaling once, he spoke up, "Big Brother Ye, Elder Hua is definitely a trustworthy person. You just got here, so there's no need for you to suspect everyone and everything, right?"

“Are you complaining about what I said to that old man?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“No!” Gu Tian shook his head. “I know Big Brother Ye is doing that for my good, but I cannot imagine Elder Hua being someone that others sent to my side. If that’s actually true, then that person is too crafty.”

“That geezer’s occipital bone protrudes out, he’s obviously a dishonest person,” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes and scanned the room. “If you have time, then get someone to check this room out. It might actually be bugged.”

At the same time, in a certain room somewhere else in the courtyard house...

A young man wearing headphones was stunned. He looked up in surprise, took off his headphones, and shouted towards a dark corner of the room, “Do you have time to remove all the bugs in Gu Tian’s place?”

“What is it?” the response from the dark corner contained a hint of confusion.

“The person he brought over this time is very smart. He already noticed that we bugged his room. In order to not raise the suspicions of that retard, Gu Tian, it’s better to remove all the equipment quickly so that we don’t get found out!”

“Alright, no problem!”

“There actually isn’t really any reason to pay attention to Gu Tian,” the young man twitched his mouth with a smile. “In terms of strength, he’s the weakest out of we brothers. In terms of ghost-capturing abilities, he’s also the worst... Oh yeah, how are the things I asked you to do going?”

“It’s already being done. The tribesmen of three of the hidden families have already been killed by us. We have their souls right now...”

“Very good. Make sure that the blame is shifted onto my brothers. Understood?”

“Understood!”

“Mm, then hurry up and leave. If other people notice, then this game will lose its meaning,” the young man smiled faintly, then stretched lazily before walking over to and sitting down in a wheelchair. “My time of being crowned king will be in just a few days!”

...

Following Gu Tian’s departure after a chatting a bit more with Ye Zichen, Ye Zichen stretched lazily, then laid down in the room.

Although his body had been turning for the better, it still did not allow him to walk around for extended periods of time.

Ye Zichen laid weakly on the bed, exchanged a Spring-Returning Pill from the Treasure Shop, then glanced at his Moments.

What caught his eye was something that Su Yan posted.

“The reason to continue...”

Underneath those words as a picture of an anime guy and girl. The guy had his back to the girl, but the girl held the corner of the man’s clothes tightly...

Ye Zichen didn’t quite understand the meaning of it, but he still liked it.

After Ye Zichen finished checking out all of the new Moments, he returned to the chats, and noticed that the Heavenly Court’s group chat was unusually busy.

Heavenly Soldier A: My damn kid was extremely disappointing. He was actually the tenth worst in the entire class!

Heavenly Soldier B: Yeah, my kid is worrying as well.

Barefoot Immortal: Haha, you guys should be like me. Turn over to Buddhism, and stop being troubled over all those common

matters.

Immortality Peach Fairy: Is the Barefoot Immortal going to start preaching in the group again? How much of a salary is Great Deity Shakyamuni giving you this time?

Third Prince Nezha: This baby isn't going to get married. If I get married, then it'll be with Immortality Peach-jiejie. @Immortality Peach Fairy.

Immortality Peach Fairy: I'm shy.

God of Thunder: Zeze, from the looks of it, are you guys going to publicly announce your relationship?

Mother of Lightning: Lighting firecrackers to congratulate you in advance. When you have the marriage feast, be sure to invite us over.

Third Prince Nezha: Wait for me to grow up. Immortality Peach-jiejie, can you wait for me?

Immortality Peach Fairy: Probably not. If there is any good person, then jiejie is going to get married!

Third Prince Nezha: Then I have to grow up quickly!

Immortality Peach Fairy: Then hurry up and grow up.

What the hell?

The Third Prince is actually interested in the fairy of the Immortality Peach garden? Weren't they talking about how their kids are doing academically? Why did they go off topic?

Wind Catching Ears: Hahahaha!

Immortality Peach Fairy: Great deity, why are you so happy?

God of Thunder: I heard his son got number one in the test, he probably came to show off! Seriously, my disappointing son actually got the last place!

Mother of Lightning: It's all your fault. If it wasn't for you taking him to the female bathhouse all the time, then the kid wouldn't have no time to study!

God of Thunder: Why is it my fault?

Mother of Lightning: It's all your fault! It's all your fault!

Wind Catching Ear: Everyone, stop being so rowdy.

Third Prince Nezha: Uncle Wind Catching Ear, what did you come to the chat for? Don't you need to patrol at the South Heaven's Gate?

Wind Catching Ear: I got All-Seeing Eye to help me watch over the place.

All-Seeing Eye: ...

Barefoot Immortal: Then what did you come to the group for? To show off?

Wind Catching Ear: Don't say that. As the father, I naturally am happy about my kid doing great on the test. That's why I came to the group to spread some wealth.

Immortality Peach Fairy: Spread the wealth, spread the wealth!

God of Thunder: I'm so jealous. If my son can get first place, then laozi will spread some wealth too!

Mother of Lightning: You actually still have some private money?

God of Thunder: ...

Wind Catching Ear: Everybody, calm down for a moment. Can you let me send the red packets in peace?

Immortality Peach Fairy: Then send it. Nobody's stopping you!

Barefoot Immortal: Yeah. Just send it!

Wind Catching Ear: Seriously, you guys... Fine, the red packet rain is coming. Catch.

It was not Ye Zichen's first time snatching red packets in the Heavenly Court's group, so he had gotten ready to snatch up a red packet the moment Wind Catching Ear said that he would spread his wealth.

Dingdong.

Congratulations to my son for getting first place in the test!

Seriously, Wind Catching Ear's red packet... He actually had to advertise how his son got first place in the test using the name of the red packet as if he was worried that others wouldn't know.

But Ye Zichen did not have any spare effort to care about all that...

Tap!

You received Wind Catching Ear's red packet.

Wind Catching Ear x1.

Look, I'm amazing at snatching red packets. I directly snatched one up, and am even quicker than those guys with the support apps.

But I seemed to have gotten a Wind Catching Ear... Please no. Could I have snatched Wind Catching Ear's ear?

...

F*ck this, stop messing around.

Chapter 338 – That Bastard Wind Catching Ear

Ye Zichen's hands shuddered.

A red packet's a red packet, but just what the hell is an ear? I've been in the Heavenly Court's group for quite some time, but the stuff I've gotten were always pills and sigils that I can use. Just what the hell is someone else's ear supposed to do?

Could it be that he was willing to give up his ear just because his son got first place?

That's truly an amazing fatherly love!

Ye Zichen didn't dare to open the Treasure Chest to take a look. He was truly worried that he would have nightmares if he saw a bloody ear.

Ye Zichen subconsciously looked down at the messages in the chat...

Immortality Peach Fairy: I give full marks for this spreading of wealth.

Third Prince Nezha: What the heck is this supposed to be!

God of Thunder: Seriously.

Mother of Lightning: I know right!?

Barefoot Immortal: This was supposed to be spreading wealth? Can you stop making fun of us? My heart is weak, so don't scare me!

Ye Zichen was rather stunned when he saw the messages in the chat. Those guys, including the heavenly soldiers, all seemed to be retorting about Wind Catching Ear's red packet...

“Is there something strange about the red packet?”

Ye Zichen scratched his head and clicked on the red packet to see what everyone else got...

Immortality Peach Fairy received Wind Catching Ear x1.

Third Prince Nezha received Wind Catching Ear x1.

Heavenly Soldier A received Wind Catching Ear x1.

...

Every single red packet of the one hundred that was sent out contained Wind Catching Ear x1.

“ ... ”

Ye Zichen was also utterly speechless.

What's going on? Was the ear separated into a hundred pieces? Doesn't that mean that everyone got a fragment of the Wind Catching Ear?

Wind Catching Ear: It's just a small token of my goodwill. If my kid is first place again during the midterms, I'll send everyone a huge one.

Immortality Peach Fairy: Great deities are even more outrageous than little fairies like us when they get shameless.

Third Prince Nezha: You actually...

God of Thunder: Hehe...

Mother of Lightning: Hehe!

Barefoot Immortal: Do you believe that I seriously want to punch you?

Damn...

He already split his ear, and that doesn't even count as a huge red

packet? Ye Zichen frowned. Wait, could it not be an ear? But what's going on with these deities? Why are they so worked up!?

Fine, let's find out!

Ye Zichen grit his teeth and clicked on the Treasure Chest.

...

When he saw the true face of the Wind Catching Ear in the Treasure Chest, Ye Zichen felt like he was truly too naïve. I knew it, how could a deity send a ear...

What laid inside the Treasure Chest was a copy of the “Wind Catching Ear” secret scripture by hand, and it was very likely that the deities in the group also received the same.

But if that's the case, the deities in the group shouldn't have such a huge reaction.

No matter what, Wind Catching Ear is a pretty good secret scripture. Being able to listen to the conversation of people from miles away is very useful.

Dingdong.

Withdrawing this secret scripture requires a payment of 200000 cultivation experience. Would you like to proceed?

“ ... ”

“Does your kid know that you’re this f*cking shameless?”

Ye Zichen could not tolerate it anymore. Did this guy come to spread wealth or gather wealth? He actually sent a secret scripture that requires cultivation experience to withdraw.

I don’t blame Barefoot Immortal for what he said, even I want to punch Wind Catching Ear now.

What does he think this is? Does he think it’s an invitation for a graduation feast, and that everyone needs to bring along a present?

The moment Ye Zichen spoke up, everyone in the group exploded. After a small commotion, the entire group decided to condemn Wind Catching Ear for his shamelessness.

Wind Catching Ear: Why is everyone having such a huge reaction? It only costs two hundred thousand cultivation experience to withdraw, is that a lot for you guys?

Immortality Peach Fairy: What do you think? How could little deities like us have so much cultivation experience. Even Sky Sovereign Nameless said you were shameless... Tsk, seriously, so despicable.

Barefoot Immortal: @Wind Catching Ear. Don't blame us! The main issue is that your secret scripture isn't of much use to we deities.

Wind Catching Ear: But those were all complete handwritten copies...

Ye Zichen, who was about to join in on the condemnation, suddenly stopped himself. Complete handwritten copies...

If that's the case, then it really does seem like it is a huge gift.

Perhaps it isn't much use to the deities in the Heavenly Court, but it had plenty of uses for Ye Zichen.

Withdraw...

Withdrawing this secret scripture requires a payment of 200000 cultivation experience. Would you like to proceed?

Proceed.

Dingdong.

You have studied the Wind Catching Ear handwritten secret scripture.

All of a sudden, Ye Zichen felt like his ears became a lot more sensitive, but at the same time...

“F*CK...”

Ye Zichen covered his ears with force. At that moment, his ears were filled with all sorts of screams. Everything resounded out in his ears, from the car horns from the outside to the rowdy children!

At the same time, Wind Catching Ear, who was being condemned by the group members, suddenly posted a screenshot.

“Look, even Sky Sovereign supported me. This means that my treasure was definitely worth it!”

The moment he sent the message, everyone in the group couldn't help but twitch their mouths and mock him, saying that the screenshot was fake.

“Wind Catching Ear!”

Ye Zichen resisted the pain from his ears, and directly sent Wind Catching Ear a friend request.

Wind Catching Ear, who was arguing with the deities in the group, blanked out for a moment after seeing this friend request. What is a high level person like Sky Sovereign sending me a friend request for? Could it be that he wants the cultivation experience

back?

If that's the case...

It's so hard to earn cultivation experience in this world now. Even if it's this Sky Sovereign that's asking for it, I still don't want to return it.

But...

If I don't accept it, then I don't need to stay in the Heavenly Court any longer. Although I'm a great deity, I'm basically just a guard at the South Heaven's Gate. No matter how amazing I am, I won't be more amazing than Sky Sovereign Nameless, who lives in the same area as Taibai Jinxing.

Accept.

He clenched his teeth and accept the friend request. However, he didn't send any message when he accepted...

If Sky Sovereign doesn't say anything, then neither will he!

“Brat, stop blabbering in the group. Hurry up and tell me how can I stop the Wind Catching Ear from hearing all the noises from the outside!”

Ye Zichen was truly in suffering due to his ears. The only reason

he could send Wind Catching Ear a message was due to his strong will.

“Sky Sovereign doesn’t know how to use it?”

Wind Catching Ear was a bit shocked. His technique was actually of a rather low level out of the various cultivation scriptures. Sky Sovereign should have read stuff like the techniques of a Saint, why does he need to ask me about this sort of basic technique?

“I don’t. Hurry up and say it!”

The noises in Ye Zichen’s ear gradually became louder and louder, and he felt that his eardrums were starting to slowly bleed...

At that moment, Ye Zichen was on the verge of breaking down.

“Just block off the place in your ears using celestial spiritual energy. Just use celestial spiritual energy to open up the way when you want to use it again.”

Actually, the method of usage was similar to the usage of the Fiery Eyes of Truth, but...

“Celestial spiritual energy!” Ye Zichen clenched his teeth and let go of his phone in abandonment. In his current state, he was unable to use any celestial spiritual energy at all.

Doesn't that mean my Wind Catching Ear wouldn't be able to be closed? I can only...

“Buzz...”

A huge noise suddenly rang out in Ye Zichen's ear. It was as if a traffic accident had occurred at a nearby location, causing a huge burden on Ye Zichen's listening.

Creak.

At that moment, the door to his room was pushed open.

The one who walked in was Fatty Yin, who had two souls in his body. However, he did not have a smiling face, and instead walked over to Ye Zichen with a faint smirk.

“Brat, you're in trouble, aren't you?”

Chapter 339 – Gu Li

“Fatty!” Ye Zichen opened his eyes wide. At that moment, he was not in a hotel outside, he was in the capital’s Gu household, it isn’t a place that just anyone can enter.

The fact that the fatty actually appeared here, and from his tone...

“Could you cause me less worry?”

Fatty Yin smiled faintly as he walked next to Ye Zichen and put his hand on top of Ye Zichen’s head.

He released a wave of pure celestial spiritual energy, which was injected into Ye Zichen’s head.

“Puny demonic energy actually wants to block off this sovereign’s celestial spiritual energy!?” the fatty smiled mockingly, then pressed down again on Ye Zichen’s head.

Ugh.

Ye Zichen spat out a mouthful of purplish red blood, which instantly burnt the floor to coal the instant it landed.

Then, the roaring in Ye Zichen’s ears disappeared.

He let out a long sigh. Just slightly earlier, he thought that he would actually be killed by his Wind Catching Ear.

“Can you stop causing me to worry so much from now on?” the fatty rolled his eyes in his annoyance. He glanced at the pitch black spot on the floor that emitted a stench before raising his eyebrows and covering his nose. “This stench...”

“How did you come to the Gu household?” Ye Zichen picked his ear. Then, after confirming that his ears were truly fine, he looked at up Fatty Yin.

The fatty smiled and shrugged, “I, Lord Fatty, come when I want. As for how... I naturally walked in of course!”

“The people from the Gu family didn’t stop you?” Ye Zichen asked in confusion.

Fatty Yin instantly disappeared from the room in response, and only appeared after a short while, “Do you understand now? I, Lord Fatty, come in when I want and leave when I want. The heck is a puny Gu household to me!”

“I have always wondered about your identity. Just who are you?”

The fatty was truly too mysterious. Ye Zichen could tell from the fatty’s endless abilities that the fatty was definitely no normal person.

Of course, someone with two souls is naturally not a normal person.

But what is his real identity? Why is he protecting me? Could he be someone from the Immortal Region of the Three Realms?

“Hehehe, I, Lord Fatty, am not going to tell you,” Fatty Yin smiled. “Try it, you should be able to use celestial spiritual energy now.”

Fiery Eyes of Truth, activate! Ye Zichen called out silently in his heart. Then, his eyes flared up with a faint golden light...

I really can use it!

All of a sudden, he quickly ran to the entrance of the room.

“Who is it!?”

The door was pushed open, revealing a boy with black-framed glasses sitting in a wheelchair.

The boy’s timid face carried traces of terror as if he was shocked. He gripped the handle of the wheelchair tightly, then nodded towards Ye Zichen and Fatty Yin, who were in the room, “Hello.”

“Hello? Brat, stop pretending in front of me! It was great fun trying to listen in on us from the outside just now, right?” Ye

Zichen smiled faintly. “What? Did you come to gather enemy information?”

Fatty Yin also smiled.

His vigilance is pretty good.

However, the boy immediately put on a confused expression, “What are you saying? Listen in?”

“Keep pretending!” Ye Zichen smiled playfully.

“I think that you must have misunderstood,” the boy said with a warm smile. “Let me introduce myself. I am the youngest young master in the Gu family, Gu Li. I was just wandering around and passed by... As for gathering information, just look at me. I have no intention of fighting for the position of the junior family head at all. You should be an important person that one of my older brothers invited over, right?”

“Keep pretending!” Ye Zichen smiled. He walked up to the boy with his eyes squinted, then kicked the boy’s wheelchair. “Your legs are clearly fine. Why are you sitting in a wheelchair?”

“What are you doing?” Gu Li immediately fell onto the ground against Ye Zichen’s expectations. Gu Li’s face was covered in franticness, while his legs did not move at all, as if they were unable to feel anything.

The sound that Ye Zichen produced attracted plenty of people, including Gu Tian...

“Big Brother Ye, what... Little brother!” Gu Tian quickly rushed in front of Gu Li, righted the wheelchair on the ground, then carried Gu Li onto the wheelchair. “Why aren’t you more careful?”

“Tian-ge? Are these two your friends? This big brother said that I was listening in to their conversation just now, and I told them I didn’t. He then kicked me over and said that my legs were fine... Ha, I hope that my legs are completely fine too, then, I would be able to...” a self-mocking wry smile covered Gu Li’s face. Then, he said guiltily. “Should I not have come here? I’ve caused Tian-ge’s friends to misunderstand...”

“You did no wrong,” Gu Tian rubbed Gu Li’s head, then shouted with a frown. “Big Brother Ye!”

“What?” Ye Zichen looked up.

“I want to ask you what is it. Why are you suspecting everything after arriving at the Gu household?” Gu Tian’s eyebrows knitted tightly together. “He is my little brother. His legs were heavily injured when he was young. Also, he isn’t involved in the election for the junior family head this time at all. Why did you... Just what!?”

Shock surprised on Ye Zichen’s face. He was absolutely certain that the legs of the kid in front of him had no issue at all.

And just moments earlier, the brat was indeed listening in to their conversation in front of his door. Both of these were undeniable facts.

“You don’t believe me?” Ye Zichen smiled faintly. “I don’t care who this brat is. He was clearly trying to listen in in front of my door! Otherwise, why would he come here... Gu Tian, don’t forget what I told you. You are trying to get elected to become the junior family head this time, so don’t be too naïve, okay?”

“Is it me that’s too naïve, or is Big Brother Ye thinking too complicatedly!?” Gu Tian shouted with a frown.

“Tian-ge, don’t get angry with this big brother. He is someone you invited to help you compete for the position of the junior family head. We must treat him with respect. Indeed, it is my bad for running over here during these sensitive times. But... Actually, I just wanted to come play with you, I...” Gu Li maintained his apologetic expression, but his words subtly revealed how troubled he felt.

Ye Zichen’s cold smile became all the more obvious in response, “You said that you were wandering around earlier, and now it’s coming to play with Gu Tian?”

“Big Brother Ye!” Gu Tian frowned.

“Hehe...” A faint smile surfaced on Ye Zichen’s lips. He rolled his neck and walked in front of Gu Tian, then placed a hand on Gu Li’s shoulder, and turned to Gu Tian. “I’m not sure if you know, but

my medical skills are top notch. Just a while back, I cured a patient who was born paralyzed... Birth paralysis should be much more severe than the situation of your little brother's legs, right? How about I help him take a look? I might actually be able to cure his legs."

Chapter 340 – Falling Out

Ye Zichen smiled confidently, and made up his mind.

He definitely would give an acupuncture treatment to Gu Li whether Gu Tian agreed or not.

“Big Brother Ye,” Gu Tian’s expression turned for the worst. Gu Li was his youngest brother. What’s more, Ye Zichen was adding onto what this little brother of his went through while he was young, he had always cared a lot about this little brother of his.

“Tian-ge, just let this big brother try,” Gu Li pursed his lips and smiled, while a hint of desire was visible in his eyes. “I really want to stand up so much, it’s true... I want to try!”

If it wasn’t because of the Great Sage’s Fiery Eyes of Truth, Ye Zichen felt like he would definitely be tricked by the kid.

That pitiful look, and the words at the proper timing...

It really is a loss of the film industry for him not to act.

“You hear that? Since this little friend said it, then might as well let me try?” Ye Zichen smiled faintly. Then he returned to his room and exchanged for a box of silver needles...

“Chinese medical treatment?” Gu Tian frowned slightly. From

what he knew, Chinese medicine practitioners were always old people with white beards. More importantly, according to his understanding, Ye Zichen should be studying veterinary medicine at school. “Nothing is going to go wrong, right?”

“Are you doubting my skills? I’m very famous in Bingcheng,” with that, he took out a silver needle from the box.

Clap.

Gu Tian grabbed Ye Zichen’s arm, squinted his eyes and frowned, “Big Brother Ye, don’t be too outrageous. Chinese medicine is no joke. It would be fine if you poke the needle down and miss the spot, and merely cause a bit of bleeding, but if you place the needle in the wrong place...”

“Don’t stop me, my temper is seriously bad,” Ye Zichen’s expression suddenly turned cold. What he was about to do was to make Gu Tian see the kid’s true face so that he would be more vigilant.

Yet, his continuously stopping of his actions caused Ye Zichen to be rather angry.

“Tian-ge, let Big Brother Ye try!” Gu Li said on the side. “I believe in Big Brother Ye’s ability!”

“Little friend, you are pretty observant,” Ye Zichen smiled playfully, while faint mockery could be seen from his eyes.

I really wouldn't be doing him justice if I don't give him some fun after seeing how good he is at tricking people.

"It might hurt a little, and it might be a bit itchy... Do endure it. Oh yeah! Since you lack any feeling in your legs, then you shouldn't react at all," Ye Zichen squinted his eyes, then quickly poked the silver needles onto the different acupuncture points on Gu Tian's body.

All of those acupuncture points affected a person's lower body. If the kid was actually someone with a leg problem, then it will help them find out the real cause of the issue, but if there wasn't a problem... Then it's not going to feel good.

As Ye Zichen punctured Gu Li's skin with the silver needles, he intentionally left a powerful portion of energy on the silver needles...

It wasn't going to be hard to make the brat suffer for a few hours with the energy.

"Alright, if you can't endure it, then say it. Since you called me Big Brother Ye, I can't watch you suffer," Ye Zichen smiled faintly.

Hearing that, Gu Li nodded, "Okay, thank you, Big Brother Ye."

Five minutes passed by in the blink of an eye. Under normal circumstances, Gu Li should have felt as if millions of ants were

crawling on his legs.

However, Ye Zichen could not see any change in his expression at all. The only thing Ye Zichen could see in Gu Li's eyes was faint anticipation.

“Big Brother Ye, I don't feel anything at all. Is it hopeless for me?”

“Wait!” Ye Zichen frowned.

Ten minutes passed by!

Twenty minutes passed by!

Half an hour passed by!

Gu Li's expression did not change at all, causing Ye Zichen to even suspect that he had puncture the wrong acupuncture points, so he did a check up on the needles.

Yet, there was no mistake, but there was no change with Gu li at all.

All of a sudden, Ye Zichen felt a chill in his heart. If this brat is enduring it the entire time, then it is very hard to imagine how capable this brat is at enduring everything.

He'll definitely become a huge problem in the future!

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes and glance at Gu Li. Since he can endure it for half an hour, then he would be able to endure it for an hour, or even longer.

Right now, he was like Gou Jian in history, who was able to give up everything in order to reach his goal.

This sort of people is actually the most terrifying.

As Ye Zichen pulled out the silver needles, a hint of disappointment surfaced on Gu Li's childish face, "It's not working?"

The very moment that Ye Zichen pulled the silver needles out, he once again kicked Gu Li's wheelchair over.

"You're very capable of acting, brat! Since you like sitting a wheelchair so much, then laozi will help you out!"

Crack.

Ye Zichen stepped on Gu Li's shin, causing a clear bone cracking sound to be heard. Despite that, Gu Li's face was merely covered with a faint expression of confusion without any signs of pain at all.

Ye Zichen truly submitted when he saw that.

He can actually endure even this!

“Ye Zichen, it’s enough!”

Gu Tian, who had already clenched his fist, suddenly rushed up and pushed Ye Zichen. Then, he turned to Gu Li to ask about his about wellbeing, and called people over to send Gu Li over to the hospital.

The raging push caused Ye Zichen to stagger.

“What are you doing?” Ye Zichen frowned.

Gu Tian glared with his eyes wide open, “I want to know what you’re doing!? Lil’ Li’s legs have a problem, just... what are you doing!?’

“He’s pretending! I’m helping you, brat. Did you know that he has been enduring it all this time? Do you know how dangerous someone like this is? When he truly reveals his fangs, then you might even be swallowed whole!” Ye Zichen cursed. “Can you actually wake up!?’

“Big Brother Ye, I will call you Big Brother Ye one more time! Ever since you came to the Gu family, you have been picking out issues with the people around me, while saying that it’s all to help me. But... Why do I feel like you care even more about me

becoming the junior family head than myself?” Gu Tian smiled mockingly. He walked in front of Ye Zichen and said firmly. “I’m the one campaigning to become the junior family head. It is my problem whether I can actually get elected or not. It has nothing to do with you. I only got you to help!”

“Hehe...” Ye Zichen suddenly laughed after hearing Gu Tian’s words. He nodded firmly, then shrugged with a chuckle. “I get what you mean.”

“Actually, I didn’t...” Gu Tian also noticed that the words he spoke earlier were too harsh, so he wanted to make up to Ye Zichen.

Yet, he saw Ye Zichen merely look up at him with a shrug and a smile, “I was truly too serious. You’re the one campaigning to become the junior family head, why should I care so much?”

As Ye Zichen laughed in self-mockery, he raised his eyebrows and slowly stepped back. Then, he turned to Gu Li on the floor, then back at Gu Tian, who was beside him, “I nearly forgot, both of you have the surname Gu. I’m just an outsider. I might have thought too much... Mm, alright, I quit. I’m not getting involved in your election any longer.”

Thus, Ye Zichen turned around to leave with a chuckle. After that, Fatty Yin also twitched his mouth and looked at Gu Tian meaningfully before following suit.

“Tian-ge, is it alright for that big brother to leave? Actually, I’m

fine!” Gu Li said faintly.

Gu Tian pursed his lips as he looked at Ye Zichen’s fleeting image, before reaching out his hand to caress Gu Li’s hair, “It’s fine!”

Chapter 341 – Advice

Within a ward in a silent hospital, Gu Li's leg with a plaster cast covering it was hung up high, while a white-haired old man stood near the window of his room.

The old man wanted to habitually light a cigarette for himself, but Gu Li, who was laying on the hospital bed, raised his eyebrows with a smile, "Elder Hua, this is the hospital."

Hearing the faint laughter from Gu Li, the elder turned around and returned the cigarette to its box with a coy smile.

The elder was none other than Hua Li, who stayed beside Gu Tian.

"I forgot," an indescribable tiredness could be seen in his eyes. He seemingly sighed in fatigue, then looked at Gu Li's hung up right leg. "They didn't even notice it when this happened?"

"You... can't possibly not know how good my endurance is, right?" Gu Li smiled faintly, while a hint of relief surfaced on his face. "Even though Gu Tian is a bit idiotic, the brat he invited over is really bright. I merely went to listen in a bit, and I was already found out. It was fortunate that my acting skills were top notch. When he gave me the acupuncture treatment, then broke my leg, I was in tremendous pain the entire time."

He smiled sinisterly, then slammed the table with his hand, "I have remembered the brat. After I take control of the Gu family,

he... must die!”

“Hehe...” Hua Li smiled faintly.

“What? You really want me to be found out? It seems like you feel a lot of disdain towards my actions?” Gu Li smiled coldly. “Don’t forgot, your daughter’s child is waiting for you to get her.”

Hua Li’s expression froze. He pointed his finger at Gu Li with a tremble, while his blurry eyes were accompanied by a hint of rage, “You...”

“What about me? Gu Li smirked coldly. “I just want to become friends with your granddaughter. Is there a need for you to be like this?”

“Gu Li, be merciful. Right now, nobody in the family can threaten your position. On the day of the election, the position of the junior family head is yours. Can’t you let my granddaughter go?” Hua Li begged.

Gu Li squinted his eyes and twitched his mouth, “You really know how to joke. Nobody can be certain until the very last moment, right? Just wait, it isn’t going to take too long, am I right?”

A hint of displeasure surfaced on Hua Li’s ancient face.

Seeing that, Gu Li quickly comforted him, “Don’t be like this.

Haven't we been cooperating very well so far? Alright, don't stay here for too long. If that idiot, Gu Tian, notices something, then I would have suffered for nothing."

"Remember your promise," Hua Li said plainly before turning around to leave.

As Gu Li watched Hua Li leave, his expression gradually became darker, "Geezer, you actually dared to show displeasure against me."

Thus, he took out his phone and spoke sinisterly, "Bring Hua Li's granddaughter to my room tonight!"

...

"Laozi is f*cking pissed!" Ye Zichen sat down on the sofa of the hotel suite angrily. That brat, Gu Tian, actually didn't believe me. Also, even though I acted to such extremes, I actually failed to expose Gu Li's real face...

Ugh!

"Is there a need to be like this?" Fatty Yin smiled faintly, and crossed his legs. "That child called Gu Li is very cunning... And is able to endure a lot. It is very normal for Gu Tian not to have noticed! But, that brat Gu Tian is still a bit dumb. He's too straightforward of a person!"

“He deserves to get tricked,” Ye Zichen immediately got annoyed when he thought about Gu Tian’s actions.

“There’s no need for that,” Fatty Yin shrugged. “Since you don’t need to help Gu Tian to get elected as the junior family head, then your events in the capital should come to a close...”

“Mhmm, I’ll book tickets back to Bingcheng when my mom comes back!”

“Zeze... It seems like you’ve been deeply hurt by that brat!” Fatty Yin smiled playfully.

At that moment, the door to the hotel room was pushed open. Ye Rong walked in from the outside, while Gu Tian, who had his head lowered as he held some fruits in his hand, stood by her side.

“Big Brother Ye!”

“Fatty, let’s get together when we have time. Thanks for taking care of me during this time!”

Ye Zichen cupped his hands towards Fatty Yin, then rolled his eyes and returned to the bedroom. Then, Yin Qiong passed by Gu Tian with a faint smile. The meaningful smile on Yin Qiong’s face caused Gu Tian to feel rather awkward.

“What, you and Zichen got into an argument?” Ye Rong asked in confusion. She didn’t know about what happened at the Gu

household. She had merely brought him over since she bumped into him on the streets.

“Mm, Auntie, erm... Big Brother Ye seems to be pretty angry at me, so I won't intrude,” Gu Tian left the room with a coy smile.

After a slight bit of hesitation, Ye Rong walked over to Ye Zichen's bedroom and knocked on the door.

“We have nothing more to say to each other. Leave!”

“Zichen, open up. It's me!” Ye Rong smiled warmly.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, then sat up from the bed and opened the bedroom door.

He subconsciously looked to the side and noticed that Gu Tian was already gone. Only then, did he start to speak, “Where did that brat go?”

“He left,” Ye Rong walked into the room and sat down on the sofa within with a soft smile. “Did you two get into a fight? Shouldn't you be in the Gu household right now? Why did you come back to the hotel?”

“Nothing, let's book our plane tickets and go back!”

“Is there a need to hide stuff from me?” Ye Rong ruffled Ye

Zichen's hair.

After a bit of hesitation, Ye Zichen decided to tell her everything.

“I didn't expect something like that to happen,” Ye Rong raised her eyebrows in surprise. “Are you still sure that you don't want to help him?”

“If I don't help that idiot, then he would be played to death,” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes in annoyance.

Hearing that, Ye Rong nodded with a smile, “Then what's there to get angry about?”

“People need face like trees need their bark! Since the brat said that, am I supposed to help him? Just what's the problem with me!?” Ye Zichen snorted. “You weren't there at the time. That Gu Li... is really capable at acting. I seriously want to beat him up! It's the same with Gu Tian, he's such an idiot!”

“Since you think that, then why get so angry?” Ye Rong patted Ye Zichen's head. “Gu Tian's personality is kind of similar to his father. He's rather straightforward without any plots and ploys. About some things, he is just a bit stubborn to the point of looking like an idiot.”

“He's dumb... I...” Ye Zichen stuttered, but was unable to say anything. After a long while, he finally spoke up helplessly. “He is truly too dumb. I really don't know how to describe him!”

Seeing his speechlessness, Ye Rong smiled warmly, “Just help him since he’s in a pinch now. He’s a bit straightforward, but you aren’t, right? Someone is bullying your little brother. Are you just going to watch idly?”

Ye Zichen remained silent.

Seeing his lack of reaction, Ye Rong spoke up once again, “Mom was on the best terms with Gu Tian’s father back in the Gu family. Think of it as giving mom face and help Gu Tian, that idiotic boy. How about that?”

Chapter 342 – The Night Of The Junior Family Head Election (1)

After a long time.

Since Ye Zichen was unable to refuse Ye Rong's request, he nodded after thinking about it for a moment, "We'll see. I'll help if I can. I can't do anything if I'm unable to help. I really don't dare to try and imagine the acts of that little fellow Gu Li."

Seeing that, Ye Rong smiled in relief, and patted Ye Zichen's shoulders, "Alright, then do as you said, help him if you can."

After Ye Rong left the room with a smile, Ye Zichen laid on the bed and took out his phone to check out what's going on using WeChat.

The latest moment was one that Su Yiyun sent. It was a photo of him and a beauty. Actually, it wasn't strange for there to be a beauty around Su Yiyun, but the fact that he actually posted it publicly on his Moments was definitely shocking.

Below the Moment was a bunch of reply from his roommates, most of which expressed their anger at him for reaching out his demonic claws at a beautiful girl once again.

Ye Zichen shook his head with a chuckle, then liked the Moment.

Buzz.

Within thirty seconds of him pressing the like, Su Yiyun called him.

“How’s it over at the capital? Do you kind of feel like a country bumpkin going into town?” Su Yiyun’s playful chuckles sounded out from Ye Zichen’s phone, while the sound of a girl’s giggle could occasionally be heard.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and ignored Su Yiyun’s mocking, “You really are free. You actually have time to call me when you’re with your girl?”

“Haha, with our relationship... Isn’t it normal for me to call you to check up on you?” Su Yiyun said with a chuckle. “When are you coming back to Bingcheng. I want to introduce the two of you!”

“True love?” Ye Zichen said playfully.

“True love!” Su Yiyun answered determinedly.

“Alright, then wait a few days. When I finish with the stuff over here in the capital, I’m going to come back and see just what sort of person the girl that can mesmerize my bro like this is,” Ye Zichen said with a smile.

Su Yiyun nodded, then hung up after saying a bit more.

“Who were you calling just now?” a cute voice asked.

Su Yiyun raised his eyebrows, put his phone back into his pocket, then picked up a stick of Mala Tang, “My extremely good friend. I’ll let you guys meet when he comes back.”

“Ye Zichen?” the girl blinked.

Su Yiyun was shocked for a moment, “How’d you know?”

“You mentioned him to me before,” the girl answered calmly.

“Really? I actually mentioned him to you!” Su Yiyun scratched his head, then answered with a smile. “That is possible, but you are rather amazing. You actually managed to remember him.”

“Mhmm!” the girl nodded, and picked up a stick of Mala tang from the table. “Alright, let’s stop talking about him. Where are we going to play later?”

“Later... Let’s go to the arcade?” Su Yiyun asked in a testing manner.

“Sure!” the girl nodded warmly, then stopped speaking.

Three days passed in the blink of an eye. During these three days, Ye Zichen had remained in the hotel and gathered information

using Fatty Yin.

The situation at the Gu household did not look good.

“Hehe... That brat, Gu Tian, should be regretting what he said a lot right now!” Fatty Yin crossed his legs and sat on the sofa. He casually chucked the information he just received to Ye Zichen. “Gu Li has already begun.”

The information showed that the elders around the junior family head candidates had continuously died or disappeared in strange manners.

“He asked for it. But don’t say that he’s regretting it. He won’t be able to guess anything with his intelligence,” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes emotionlessly, and took a simple look at the intel before chucking it back on the table.

“What? You don’t want to help him?” Fatty Yin smiled. “Tonight seems to be the night to be the night where the Gu family elects their junior family head. Everyone around the people that can threaten Gu Li either died or disappeared, but he still has several elders supporting him. If there is no surprise, then the position of the junior family head might very well be his.”

“Are the people from the Gu family idiots? I refuse to believe that the people from the Gu family can’t tell something as simple as these elders and guests being done in by Gu li,” Ye Zichen snorted.

However, Fatty Yin merely shrugged, “They aren’t idiots, and they can see that. But... so what?”

Hearing that, Ye Zichen fell into silence.

Fatty Yin was right. The election for the junior family head was nigh, it was at the point where it had to continue to be held. Sure, the death or disappearances of the elders were indeed severe losses for the Gu family.

But... that was unable to stop the continuation of the junior family head election.

The election of the junior family head involved voting by the elders. The ones that either disappeared or dead might very well be those that Gu Li failed to coerce. If there was no surprise, then Gu Li should get the most votes from the remaining ones.

“You still have three hours to decide. To help... or not. It’s up to you,” Fatty Yin stood up from the sofa and clapped his hands. At that moment, both Lu Lu and Gou Yuzhan walked in...

“If you’re going to help, then we’ll all follow you. If you want to mess up the Gu family’s election, we can help you as well. If you aren’t going to help, then don’t,” Lu Lu said with a giggle. At the same time, she held Ye Zichen’s shoulder tightly. “No matter what, I’m just going to follow you.”

“They promised to give me a dozen lollipops afterwards. Boss Ye,

you can't keep it away from me then," Gou Yuzhan also yammered.

"Three... hours?" Ye Zichen squinted his eyes and muttered.

At the Gu household.

As the election of the junior family head was nigh, all of the descendants of the main family and branch family hurried over.

At that moment, it could be said that there were a lot of people at the Gu household, but the atmosphere was incomparably strange.

Every candidate was carefully dressing themselves up, but most of their expressions revealed a hint of helplessness...

Aside from...

Gu Li!

He smiled leisurely. At that moment, he no longer sat on a wheelchair. He wore a straight black suit, while he smiled at his own reflection in the mirror. He was able to feel the fire in his eyes from looking at his own reflection...

"Junior family head election," Gu Li smiled and touched his smooth chin. Then he turned around and looked at the man with bronze-colored skin within the room. "Those people are all in

control, right?”

“Naturally!” the man laughed sinisterly. “If there is no accident, then you will definitely become the junior family head this time. When that happens, we’ll find a chance to kill off the Gu family’s geezer, after which you’ll become the number one successor to the position of the Gu clan’s family head.”

“That’s right,” Gu Li pursed his lips and smiled.

Yet, the man spoke up once again, “But don’t forget your promise to us. We have been doing our best to help you in this cooperation.”

Chapter 343 – The Night Of The Junior Family Head Election (2)

The man with bronze colored skin looked up. Gu Tian squinted his eyes and smiled, then picked up an apple from the table and chucked it towards him.

“Both sides naturally have to do their best in a cooperation. I’m not the sort of person that would break down the bridge after crossing the river,” Gu Li smiled plainly.

The man laughed sinisterly once again, “Alright, since that’s the case, then see you later.”

“See you.”

As Gu Li watched the man leave, his gaze gradually turned sullen.

Cooperating with them was just a temporary option. They seriously think that I cooperated with him sincerely.

As long as I can control the Gu family’s resources, then...

The heck was this cooperation.

Gu Li curled his lips craftily. Yet, what he did not know was that the man with bronze colored skin had the very same idea.

I'll kill this little guy after completing my purpose. Then, the Gu family will be ours.

Both sides tested each other with ulterior intentions, yet nobody could tell who would have the last laugh.

“Young Master Lil’ Tian, it’s time,” Hua Li bowed at the entrance of Gu Tian’s room.

Gu Tian nodded faintly and stood up from the sofa. At that moment, he wore a pale blue suit. The only person left by his side was Hua Li, while the square-faced elder that was with him had already disappeared.

“Someone has been doing things behind the scenes these few days. Elder Hua has to be careful during the election later.”

“Mm,” Hua Li’s expression froze. His eyes shimmered, and didn’t dare to meet Gu Tian’s gaze.

“Let’s go!”

The election for the junior family head was held in an open martial training field. The training field was extremely large, so, with all the members of the Gu clan as well as their servants were able to watch with the election in the middle.

The training field had already been packed full of people three hours prior. All of these ignorant audiences wanted to know who would become the true successor to the Gu family.

“Young Master Lil’ Tian is here,” someone called out loudly.

Not long later, Gu Tian appeared in the training field alongside Hua Li.

Several of Gu Tian’s older brothers in the clan had were already sitting dejectedly at the training field. They were all once ambitious people, but... At that moment, they were just single pitiful insects.

“Gu Tian...”

As Gu Tian was about to sit down, someone called out from beside him.

He turned around and saw that the person who sat beside him was Gu Hong, his older brother. He was the person with the most ambition for the junior family head position and the strongest contender as of three days ago.

However, there were no supporters to be seen behind him. His bloodshot eyes and tired face were covered in fatigue.

“Big brother.”

“Actually, we’ve all been played,” Gu Hong smiled weakly. “Out of everyone here, none of us can become the junior family head.”

“Why do you say that?”

Gu Tian glanced around the training field. All of the candidates are here. Why is Gu Hong saying that no one will succeed?

Doesn’t the successor have to be picked out from us candidates?

“You’ll know soon enough. Seriously, you’ll definitely be shocked. Just now...”

Before Gu Hong finished, another call sounded out around the training field.

“Young Master Gu Li is here!”

Lil’ Li!

Gu Tian was stunned. Why did he come to this sort of event? Shouldn’t he be healing in the hospital right now?

Gu Tian subconsciously turned around, and saw that seven or eight elders from the Gu family stood behind Gu Li. More importantly, Gu Li’s legs...

He walked out!

Gu Hong smiled wryly when he saw this. When he saw Gu Li, he was also shocked that Gu Li could stand. Nobody out of them brothers suspected Gu Li's legs of being completely fine.

However, the moment Gu Hong saw Gu Li stand up, Gu Hong also managed to figure something out...

Although he wanted to complain, he could only helplessly accept it.

"Lil' Li?" Even at that moment, Gu Tian still did not realize what was going on.

Gu Li smiled softly, "Tian-ge!"

"Why are you here? Also, your legs..." Gu Tian said in shock.

Gu Li smiled softly once again, "I came here to get elected for the position of the junior family head. As for my legs... Sorry, actually, I've been lying to you guys all along."

With that, he raised his eyebrows and walked towards his position.

"Lil' Li..."

“Do you still want to call him Lil’ Li now?” Gu Hong said with a wry smile. “Gu Tian, Gu Li is not as simple as we thought. He has been enduring it all this time, for this very moment! In a while, we won’t be able to address him as Lil’ Li anymore, we’ll have to call him Junior Family Head Gu Li.”

“This... Why....”

Gu Tian did not want to believe the truth in everything. If this is all true, then doesn’t it mean that I seriously messed up with Big Brother Ye the other day?

Gu Tian turned around and saw that Gu Li was waving towards him with a smile.

Gu Li’s smile held faint anticipation and excitement. This pure face caused people to be unable to resist protecting and spoiling him, but at that very moment, Gu Tian felt it unusually disgusting.

He has actually been pretending all along!

Suddenly, the words that Ye Zichen had shouted to him surfaced in Gu Tian’s mind...

“He’s pretending! I’m helping you, brat. Did you know that he has been enduring it all this time? Do you know how dangerous someone like this is? When he truly reveals his fangs, then you might even be swallowed whole! Can you actually wake up!?”

Creak.

Gu Tian clenched his teeth and looked up weakly at the darkening sky...

Big Brother Ye, sorry!

Although the sky gradually turned dark, the numbers of the audience did not decrease at all. Rather, it only increased.

All of the junior family head candidates sat on the chairs in the center of the training field. Some people were trying to form alliances, while others chose to give up.

Gu Tian leaned back on his chair weakly. At that moment, he did not feel like getting involved with everything anymore.

He was not good at plots, and he disliked stuff like ploys deeply.

All he could do was to sit nicely on the chair, and wait until the family head finish hosting the ceremony alongside the elders, then announce the result, so that he can go home and sleep!

“The family head is here.”

A loud call was heard by all. In that moment, all of the chatter around the training field stopped.

A white-haired old man appeared in the middle of the training field. Although he arched his back, everyone still felt like his blurry eyes were hard-chillingly sharp.

“May our family head be blessed!”

All of the family members all stood up and bowed. The old man nodded faintly, then swept his gaze over the various candidates before setting his gaze on Gu Li.

After looking at Gu Li for around thirty seconds, the old man looked away and raised both of his hands, “Let the ceremony begun!”

A sudden fire shot up in the center of the training field, illuminating the nights sky.

At the same time.

Doooooooo....

The low sound of a horn sounded out, signaling the true start of the ceremony!

Chapter 344 – Election

As the low, but powerful horn blared, the sound echoed in the huge training field.

All of the clan members watching the ceremony were stunned by the sound, causing them to look at the candidates on the stage, one of whom were about to be elected, with a more solemn gaze.

Soon, the person that will lead them in the future would emerge from all the candidates.

“It’s finally starting,” as Gu Li sat on the chair, his gaze became even more heated. He clenched his fists tightly, while his calm expression did not reveal his heart, which was not calm at all.

He had waited for this day for some ten-odd years...

During that period of time, he had endured way too much. It was time for him to place the crown upon his head.

As he swept his indifferent gaze over his brothers, their expressions landed in his eye like the funniest joke in the world.

Finally, he set his gaze upon Gu Tian.

“My pitiful Lil’ Tian-ge, his thoughts must be seriously cute right now. But, I do wonder whether he will cry or laugh when even Hua

Li leaves his side?” Gu Li muttered to himself.

At the same time, a hint of a sigh flashed across the eyes of the old man sitting at the highest point of the training field.

“None of us noticed that brat, Gu Li. If we continue to have our own thoughts, then it’ll only let that brat take the position,” Gu De, who had been the one to bring Gu Tian back to the capital, looked at Gu Li with a sinister gaze.

Gu Li merely nodded with a slight smile in response to that hostile gaze.

“That bastard!” Gu De clenched his fist and turned to the people around him. “Lend me your people. If I get elected, we’ll talk about the position of the junior family head afterwards. If that little bastard, Gu Li, becomes the junior family head, then for sure none of us will have a good life.”

With that, he took out his phone to quickly send messages to the other candidates with the same speech as what he had said.

Dingdong.

The phone of Gu Tian, who was still submerged in shock in his heart, rang. After he took out his phone to read the message, he subconsciously glanced towards Gu De.

At that moment, Gu De was also looking at him, because out of all

the candidates, the only one he wasn't sure of whether he would agree to his own terms was Gu Tian.

The kid has been straightforward since he was young, and that was something that all the brothers knew.

When Gu De saw that Gu Tian placed his phone into his pocket without replying, his eyebrows knitted together before relaxing once again.

“F*ck, that jerk... Never mind, he doesn't have many supporters behind him anyways, so it makes no difference,” Gu De cursed silently, then started to use his phone to ensure that the other candidates understood that they were in a team.

“Young Master Lil' Tian, what happened?” Hua Li said softly.

Gu Tian shrugged, “Gu De is trying to forge alliances. I didn't reply...”

“It seems like it's a bit late to form alliances,” Hua Li maintained his indifferent tone.

Gu Tian nodded in agreement, “Yeah.”

At that moment, the sound of horns stopped.

The family head of the Gu clan stood up from his chair. Seeing

that, the entire audience understood that the election was about to begin. They readied themselves for an awe-inspiring speech, but what they got instead was...

“The election begins. We’ll skip all the other steps. Start voting!” with such plain words, the Gu Family Head sat back down.

As the family head, he could not be blinded by the outside world. He already knew that the position of the junior family head was most likely going to land on that child...

The one which he had never paid too much attention to. The same child who had proved him completely wrong.

“People truly get brighter the longer they live. It seems like grandpa already knows everything,” Gu Li smiled even more, and a hint of mockery begun to surface in his expression. “But he doesn’t have any way to stop it now, right? The person who set everything in motion was actually him. I... merely took a shortcut!”

Not long later, he looked towards Gu De meaningfully... “Forging alliances? So cute, but... you guys might be completely shocked when the voting is done!”

“Young Master Gu Li, we’re going now,” said the elders and guests behind him.

Gu Li nodded faintly, “Go. Think about your family for a moment, then decide on who to vote for.”

The calm, yet threatening words, caused the expressions of the elders and guests to drastically change before they nodded coyly and left.

At the same time, Hua Li, who stood behind Gu Tian, also spoke up, “Young Master Lil’ Tian, I’m going.”

“Mm! Elder Hua, no need to feel troubled. Just vote according to your own thoughts.”

Gu Tian had already lost any fighting spirit for the position of the junior family head. The only thing he felt annoyed about was being lied to by Gu Li for such a long time, and that he still had to watch him become the Gu clan’s junior family head.

The voting lasted a good half an hour. During this time, Gu De’s face was filled with nervousness...

He cupped his hands together and silently prayed for the position of the junior family head to be given to him.

On the other hand, Gu Li maintained the calm and indifferent expression the entire time, because he was certain that the position was his.

“The voting is over!” the main butler of the Gu family called out, then walked in front of the ballot boxes...

The moment the box was opened, the results were obvious at first glance.

Aside from Gu Li's filled box, all the other boxes were empty. No, that was not completely true. Gu Tian also had one vote from Hua Li.

“Gu Li... is truly a child who knows how to bide his time.”

The main butler shook his head with a sigh and glanced over at Gu Li. Being so scheming at such a young age... It actually isn't a good thing.

But, as the main butler of the Gu clan, he needed to remain neutral.

He looked up and glanced at the audience...

“Let me announce the result. The candidates with the most votes was Gu Li. He will become the Gu family's junior family head, as well as the number one successor to the family head!”

Pa.

The phone in Gu De's hand instantly fell onto the ground, completely contrasting Gu Li's lack of surprise when he heard the result...

He had already known all this would occur.

“Gu Li, come up!” at this moment, the Gu family head also opened his blurry eyes.

Gu Li stood up from his chair with a faint smile and his hands behind his back.

“I object. I request the votes to be counted!” Gu De roared with bloodshot eyes. “Main Butler merely took a glance and didn’t count it at all. On what basis do you declare him as the junior family head!?”

“Then come up and have a look!” the main butler took a step back, indifferent. Gu De glared and walked up. When he saw the votes in the boxes...

“Wow, Gu Li, wow,” Gu De’s teeth chattered in anger.

Gu Li smiled with a shrug, “You look too terrible like this, pitiful insect.”

Then he glanced at Gu De again before looking up high.

At this moment the main butler also stepped up, “If anyone else has any objections, then they can raise them. You guys can all come and count the votes. If there are no objections, then the junior family head this time is Gu Li.”

Everyone looked down dejectedly. Just as Gu Li was about to walk towards Family Head Gu as the victor...

“Objections? I object!”

Chapter 345 – I Object

Bang.

Bang.

Two figures flew out from a dark corner, causing the audiences to subconsciously step aside.

The main butler frowned upon seeing the disturbance. The two people who flew out were the security guards that he had placed outside to prevent the people from the other families from causing any kind of problem...

The two of them could be said at the peak of the Gu family's fighting prowess. Both of them were of at the late stage of the False Earth Immortal level!

However, his eyes couldn't help but to twitch when he saw how badly they had been beaten up.

"Sorry. These two people blocked the way and wouldn't let us in. I only resorted to violence since I had no other choice." Not long later, Ye Zichen, who was wearing casual clothes, walked out from the dark area alongside Lu Lu, Fatty Yin and Gou Yuzhan.

Gu Li's eyes twitched when he saw Ye Zichen.

“Big Brother Ye!” Gu Tian was stunned.

At the same time, the butler hosting the junior family head election also spoke up, “Who dares to act atrociously at our Gu household, and at this time as well. Are you challenging us, the Gu family?”

“Zezeze... Who are you trying to scare?” Ye Zichen twitched his mouth in disdain. “Isn’t it just a junior family head election? This whole thing is just a huge clown fiesta, and you guys are actually so into it?”

“Do not be so insulting!” the main butler frowned as he roared. “Take them down!”

They were in the middle of the junior family head election. All of their guest chamberlains and elders were present, and causing trouble at the election was challenging the entire Gu family.

Even the other hidden families would not dare to declare war on the Gu family in this sort of situation after gathering their full fighting force.

There were only four people in front of them...

All of the Gu family’s guest chamberlains and elders of the Gu family around Ye Zichen’s group charged over.

At that moment, the temperature of the air suddenly dropped. Lu

Lu's ice-colored hair fluttered in the air, while her cute face became covered with a look that did not permit any violation.

“Anyone who dares to take a step forward... Die!”

Zoom.

A thick layer of ice instantly appeared on the stone floor. All of the surrounding audiences, elders and guest chamberlains stopped.

A look of shock also surfaced on the main butler's face...

“You don't dare to move now, right!?” Ye Zichen leisurely lit a cigarette for himself and began to walk forward.

His very actions could be said as trampling on the Gu family's dignity. Despite that, no one in the Gu family actually dared to act against him.

“What did you guys come here for? Even though we, the Gu family is not making any moves against you, don't think that we are afraid of you! You are challenging the Gu family's bottom line...”

“Zeze...” Ye Zichen laughed mockingly and shook his head. “Isn't it embarrassing? Isn't it just because of you guys being scared? Then come. Come... I, this little lord, is just going to stand here. Let's see if your people dare to walk to a place less than ten meters away from me?”

The main butler's expression drastically changed.

Seeing that, Ye Zichen twitched his mouth and snorted, "Still making such bold claims. The Gu family... has declined. It is no longer the leading force of the hidden families like it was back then, so what the heck are you pretending for?"

"Little friend didn't come deliberately just to mock us, the Gu family, right? The Gu family has definitely declined, but if little friend has truly come to provoke us, then even if I, this pile of old bones, knows that I cannot match up to you guys, I will still have to try," the Gu family head, who was sitting on a chair, emitted a faint aura from his body.

Ye Zichen glanced upwards at the old man...

He should be the person who pushed mother out back then.

"Stop saying such pretty words, okay?" Ye Zichen's gaze instantly turned cold. Even though Ye Rong repeatedly told him not to bear a grudge against the Gu family... Whenever he thought of that man, and his mother's past, he would still get angry.

The Gu family head also felt the intense hostility the young man bore against him. He subconsciously looked at the young man more carefully.

"You..." his ancient face was filled with shock.

Ye Zichen twitched his mouth and smile, “You what? Geezer, don’t think too much. I didn’t have any real intentions for coming here. I just got pissed looking at this junior family head of yours. Didn’t you guys ask who doesn’t agree earlier? Mhmm, I don’t agree!”

“Is what you said of use? This is the Gu household, not a place for you to act outrageously!” Gu Li glared. It was at that moment that he truly started to worry. From the beginning of the election until moments prior, everything went according to his script. However, Ye Zichen’s appearance instantly changed everything. Gu Li could not stand idle as he watch everything he prepared go to waste.

“Little fellow, you weren’t like that a few days earlier. What, you’re a bit anxious, so you can’t hide it anymore?” Ye Zichen glanced at Gu Li playfully, then walked beside Gu Tian and patted his shoulder. “I’m this brat’s supporter. I hope that he takes the position of the junior family head.”

“Big Brother Ye,” Gu Tian said apologetically. At that moment, he truly regretted saying such harsh words to Ye Zichen before.

“Now you finally know the truth, right? Hehe... Isn’t it your fault for not believing me back then? Ye Zichen snorted and chuckled. When he saw that Gu Tian wanted to mumble something, he shrugged. “Alright, let’s think about that when everything’s over!”

The Gu family head stared straight at Ye Zichen. This young man truly looks too similar to that man.

The incident from back was fresh in his memories as if it only happened yesterday. It could be said that his decision from back then was his greatest mistake. He closed his eyes painfully, then finally sighed after opening his eyes once again, “Young man, the results of the vote have already come out. The election of our junior family head is no child’s play, the results cannot be changed just because you said so.

“Ha... Don’t be so resolute in your words. If I really request you to have Gu Tian as the junior family head using violence, would you really refuse? Don’t forget about your decision of weakness back then!” Ye Zichen’s faint mock caused immense shock in the Gu family head’s heart. His hands trembled as if he wanted to say something, but was interrupted by Ye Zichen’s mockery. “Of course, I’m not that sort of person to force other people. I heard Gu Tian say that the Gu family had dealings with both the Underworld and Heavenly Court back then? And apparently you only fell into such decline because of the lack of a deity’s descent! Since that’s the case, then I’ll give you a chance to see a ghost servant of the Underworld...”

What!?

The audience was dumbfounded. The Gu family head, who sat at the highest position of power, also instantly disregarded Ye Zichen’s identity, stood up and shouted, “If you can summon a ghost servant of the Underworld here... The position of the junior family head, no, the family head, will go to Gu Tian!”

“Zeze, you’re very desperate!” Ye Zichen smiled playfully.

Yet, a hint of sadness surfaced on the Gu family head's face, "Indeed. Little friend, if you can truly summon a ghost servant, then hurry up and show us. After the summoning, you will become an important guest of our Gu family, and gain a position equal to that of the family head!"

"Ha, forget that. The Gu family cannot hold someone as great as me!" Ye Zichen shook his head with a plain smile, then prepared to summon a ghost servant of the Underworld.

However, at that very moment, Gu Li, who had a sinister expression, shocked everyone, "I can summon a ghost servant here too!"

Chapter 346 – The Years Of Effort Which Has Gone To Waste

What!?

All of the audience present was completely dumbfounded once again.

The Gu family has not seen the descent of a deity or even a ghost for many years. When Ye Zichen said that he could do it, it had already shocked people a lot, but they did not expect Gu Li to actually be able to as well.

At that moment, Gu Li felt like his heart was about to explode. Summoning a ghost servant was supposed to be his move to calm down the clan after he became the family head.

However, Ye Zichen's appearance directly messed up his plan...

“Isn't it just a ghost servant? Do you think that you are the only one who can summon one?” Gu Li's childish face displayed hints of disdain. Then he looked towards the Gu family head. “If both of us summon ghost servants, I wonder what will happen?”

“You're pretty young, yet you're full of shit. Let's talk after you actually summon one,” Ye Zichen smiled plainly.

A hint of hatred flashed across Gu Li's eyes. I have to make this

person pay, one way or another.

He glared at Ye Zichen gloomily, then closed his eyes and begun to mutter incomprehensible words.

A faint aura of death gradually begun to emit from his body.

A black pillar shot up into the sky. Not long later, a ghost wearing the clothes of a Black Impermanence and carrying a wine gourd appeared.

“Brat, why did you summon this marshal!” Black Impermanence snorted cockily.

Seeing him, Gu Li quickly bowed, “Marshal Zhang! We, the Gu family, originally worshipped the ghosts and deities of the Underworld, but recently, no ghosts or deities have descended. The reason I summoned you was...”

“Bothersome!” Black Impermanence shook his head in annoyance. The Gu family head, who sat at the top seat, was completely stunned.

A real ghost servant.

He hurriedly rushed down and spoke with extreme humility, “Marsh-Marshal Zhang. I am the family head of the Gu clan. Can you tell me why the ghosts and deities have not descended recently?”

“Laozi is a bit tired. Bring this lord the finest drinks and good!” Black Impermanence did not answer the Gu family head’s question and instead hooked his finger towards Gu De.

Gu De instantly flew up from the chair, which the short and fat Black Impermanence promptly sat down in.

“Hurry up and prepare food and drinks!” the Gu family head shouted.

The entire Gu clan looked at the short fatty with fear and respect in their eyes. However, Ye Zichen merely raised his eyebrows, and walked beside the short fatty...

Bang.

Then kicked the short fatty out of the chair.

“You dare!?” Gu Li stared at Ye Zichen and cursed, while all of the members of the Gu clan frowned.

The short fatty’s face was also filled with rage. F*ck, this person actually dared to kick me. No, wait... How can this person kick me?

He subconsciously looked up, but when he saw Ye Zichen’s face, he felt his head explode.

“You-You-You-You-You...”

“You are pretty good at pretending. You actually called yourself a ghost marshal. If I call Xie Bian, Ox-Head, Horse-Face and the others over, would they beat you to death?”

The person Gu Li summoned was none other than the very same Black Impermanence intern that Ye Zichen had taught a lesson to.

“Lor-Lor-Lor-Lord... Boss, this puny one knows his wrongs. Don’t mind too much,” the Black Impermanence intern quickly stood up from the ground, then wiped the chair with his sleeve. “Please sit!”

“Heh, I’ll treat this as you being a smart person,” Ye Zichen pointed at him. The Black Impermanence intern immediately stood respectfully on the side like a grandson...

The entire Gu family was completely shocked. Just what...

It seems like this Lord Impermanence is very scared of the young man in front of him.

“Marshal Zhang!” Gu Li knitted his eyebrows tightly.

The Black Impermanence intern immediately slapped his head, “What f*cking Marshal Zhang, stop speaking recklessly...”

“Mm, you did well. Hit that grandson a few more times. I don’t like the look of him,” Ye Zichen casually crossed his legs with a soft smile.

“Alright, no problem!” the Black Impermanence intern smiled, then started to beat Gu Li up.

The people surrounding them did not dare to stop them at all. After a long while, the Black Impermanence intern took a step back under Ye Zichen’s signal, while Ye Zichen mocked, “Say, what other moves do you have now? Look at what you called. He’s too low-leveled.”

Gu Li clenched his fist tightly. No matter how he thought about it, he did not understand why Black Impermanence of the Underworld would be so respectful towards Ye Zichen.

As Ye Zichen looked at Gu Li’s terrible expression, he felt extremely good.

This kid is definitely pissed to no end, right? He endured everything for ten-odd years to become the junior family head, and even managed to get in contact with the Underworld’s ghost servant.

If I didn’t appear, then he was definitely going to become the junior family head.

But, it is I who is causing all of his efforts to go to waste.

“Geezer, it seems like I don’t need to summon anyone else, right?” Ye Zichen smiled playfully.

The Gu family head was stunned for a moment, before shouting to the audience, “I declare, from this moment onwards, Gu Tian shall be the Gu family’s family head.”

...

“Fam-Family head!” Gu Tian, who was sitting in his chair, was a bit confused. Wasn’t this the junior family head election? How did I become the family head?

At the same time, the Gu family head also walked beside Gu Tian and placed a square stamp into his hands.

The square stamp was the token of the Gu family head.

“Lil’ Tian, you are the family head of our Gu family from now on. From now on, you will decide everything about the Gu family. Of course, you can come to ask me about anything you don’t understand at any time!” the Gu family head smiled warmly.

On the other hand, Gu Tian merely looked at his grandfather with a stunned look and did not reach out to receive the stamp, “Grandpa, this...”

“I know what you want to say, but it is definitely the best choice for you to become take the seat of the family head,” the Gu family head pressed the square stamp into Gu Tian’s hand forcefully, and grasped Gu Tian’s hand.

Gu Li chattered his teeth in anger as he watched, “Why? I won the junior family head election! I was the one who summoned the ghost servant. Gu Tian didn’t do anything at all. Why are you letting him be the family head!?”

“Gu Li!” the Gu family head yelled sullenly. “Stop messing around. I didn’t make you account for what you did yet!”

The Gu family head snorted coldly, then ignored Gu Li.

Ye Zichen, who was watching the show go on from the side, also chuckled, “Gu Tian, you are already the family head now. Go and give your little brother Gu Li the position of the junior family head. He pretended to be paralyzed for ten-odd years for this position. You can’t let all his efforts go to waste, right?”

At that moment, the position of the junior family head was rather laughable. The junior family head could only succeed the position of the family head if the family head passes away or decided to abdicate.

With Gu Tian as the current family head, Gu Li becoming the junior family head was a mere joke.

“Hehe... hehe...” Gu Li, who was standing in the middle of the training field like joke, suddenly laughed coldly. He emotionlessly swept his gaze over everyone’s faces, then finally set his gaze upon Ye Zichen.

“What are you looking at me for? You want to hit me? Then come,” Ye Zichen shook his head slowly.

Gu Li merely sneered in response, “You forced this all onto me!”

With that, his expression turned cold as he shouted towards the sky, “Do it!”

Everyone in the training field was stunned by his shout. Then, a playful laugh rang out from the sky, “My good son. We meet again!”

Chapter 347 – Exorcism

A huge eye-like spatial crack appeared in the sky.

A group of bronze-skinned men and woman appeared from the crack. The moment the Gu family members saw these people, confusion covered their faces.

None of them knew of the existence of demons except the Gu clan's family head, whose expression turned completely terrible.

“My good son, did you miss me?” Tuoba Ye said with his usual folded fan in his hand. The short time of the past few days had already been enough for his body to completely recover. His curled lips made it seem like he had completely forgotten how badly Ye Zichen had beaten him up after turning into a Fallen.

“Ha...” Ye Zichen chuckled when he saw this.

He begun to emit a faint spiritual pressure from his body as he gazed up at the man in the sky with squinted eyes. Rather, it was more like he had lost sight of everyone except for that one man.

“Is there a son that looks at his dad like this? Son, you have to be more obedient,” Tuoba Ye's way of addressing Ye Zichen completely stunned the entire Gu family. Meanwhile, the Gu clan's family head also set his gaze upon Ye Zichen...

This child really is Lil' Rong's kid from back then.

Then why didn't she bring this child back to the clan...

"Was the beating last time not enough? How about I make you feel the feelings from back then once again?" Ye Zichen squinted his eyes.

Tuoba Ye shrugged with a smile, "As the father, I really am depressed about your threatening me like this."

"Brother Tuoba, was this child the reason you were so determined to bring over with me?" a man with an average body next to Tuoba Ye spoke up. His skin color was like that of an African, his hair was as red as blood, while a faint purple aura seemed to swirl around him.

"Yeah, this brat is my darling son. Be careful when you fight, I have to bring him back to the demon race."

"But your relationship doesn't seem particularly good."

"Relationships can be built up. Just don't make a move on him."

"Okay," the man nodded, then slowly descended from the sky. During his descent, he intentionally looked over at Ye Zichen.

He was unable to feel any traces of demonic energy from Ye Zichen.

He frowned slightly, then directly walked beside Gu Li.

“General Qiu Yin,” Gu Li cupped his hands with a faint smile. He had already decided to use the last resort, and did not want to endure it any longer...

That’s the position which I have set my eyes on for ten-odd years. Just as it was about to be mine...

It slipped away from my hands once again.

Actually, Gu Li could have endured it and continued to plan for the long term, but he did not have the patience.

“You actually called me out so quickly. I thought you would be able to endure it for a while longer. You suddenly stopped enduring it after so long is actually not a wise choice,” Qiu Yin smiled. The reason he chose to work with Gu Li was due to Gu Li’s forbearance and ambitions.

Anyone with an ambition would have desires. As long as he was able to satisfy their desires, then he would be able to have that person in the palm of his hands.

“Hehe... I don’t want to endure it anymore,” Gu Li laughed coldly, then pointed to the surrounding Gu family members with a snort. “From this moment onwards, I am taking over the Gu clan. If anyone dares to say otherwise, die!”

“Stop bullshitting alright? You want to pretend to be the big boss after calling a few niggers over?” someone shouted.

Qiu Yin’s body flickered, then returned to his spot.

However, the person who mocked had already fallen into a pool of blood on the ground within the crowd.

Gu Li watched everything with a soft smile

The Gu family head’s eyes were filled with shock and blatantly obvious rage. He raised his hand with a tremble and cursed, “Gu Li, you actually dare to collude with the demon race!”

“Heh, so what? History is written by the strong, while the weak are written into history. The victor is king, so who cares about so much as long as I can win,” Gu Li said with a soft smile, then turned to the Gu family head. “You’re old. Give up your position and hand it to me. I am still able to lead the Gu clan to glory. Why are you so focused on that idiot Gu Tian, he’s so obviously retarded...”

Creak.

The Gu family head clenched his fist tightly and stared at Gu Li’s face, before turning to Tuoba Ye and shouted, “Tuoba Ye, what happened to the hundred years of peace... A hundred years!”

“Ha... My cheap father-in-law. My promise was that we, the Tuoba clan, would not do anything to the Gu family. The people that came over here this time are ones that Qiu Yin brought. It has nothing to do with me. I didn’t go back on my word.”

His playful expression caused the Gu family head to tremble in anger. He clenched his teeth and imprinted Tuoba Ye’s appearance into his heart before turning around and raising his hand...

“Fine, fine, fine...” the Gu family head snorted coldly, then looked at the Gu family members. “Gu family members, exorcise these demons with me.”

At the same time, Qiu Yin also said plainly, “Kill!”

All of a sudden, the training field became purgatory. As mournful wails sounded out, the entire training field became dyed with blood.

“Don’t-Don’t kill me.”

As they fought, the Gu family members gradually begun to flee in terror, but none of the fleeing people were able to avoid death.

“Stay here. Nobody can hurt you,” Ye Zichen glanced at Gu Tian and pointed at the space beside him.

It could be said that the strongest forces on the training field were all around Ye Zichen.

“Big Brother Ye...” Gu Tian knitted his eyebrows tightly. He clenched his teeth and looked around at the Gu family members being continuously slaughtered like animals by the demons that Qiu Yin brought with him.

“You want us to help? Stop joking. The demon race is not one that should be easily pissed off. We might only be able to keep ourselves safe if we stay together,” Fatty Yin said with a frown.

Gu Tian clenched his teeth, while he searched for the right words.

After a long while, he glanced at the falling Gu family members and sighed. Then, he turned and bowed towards Ye Zichen and co. before running towards the massacre, “Big Brother Ye, I feel like I have to do something!”

“Lu Lu, Fatty, Glutton go and help,” Ye Zichen shook his head powerlessly as he watched Gu Tian’s lonely image.

Lu Lu was the first to open her eyes wide, “What crap are you spouting? If we all go to help, then what about you?”

“What else? I’ll wait!” Ye Zichen rubbed Lu Lu’s head, then squinted his eyes and smiled. “Saving a person from death is better than building a seven-levelled pagoda for a god. These people are waiting for us to rescue them. We can’t possibly stand idle!”

“But if you die...”

“I can die?” Ye Zichen smiled confidently. “Don’t you know who I am? I am someone who can become the main character of my legend... I won’t be in any danger.”

“But...”

“Go!” Ye Zichen frowned.

Lu Lu clenched her teeth, then pouted before unhappily charging towards the demons that Qiu Yin brought with him.

Fatty Yin also let out a long sigh before walking to Ye Zichen’s side while uttering a few words.

...

Ye Zichen’s expression changed drastically.

“Don’t do that unless you absolutely have to,” Fatty Yin shook his head and left with a sigh.

When Ye Zichen was finally left alone, Tuoba Ye smiled, “My good son, it’s time for us, father and son, to talk heart-to-heart!”

Chapter 348 – Great Battle (1)

“Helheim!”

Lu Lu raised her hand up in the air, causing the training ground to instantly be covered in snow and ice. Thick ice covered the floor, while the demons who were enjoying the pleasure of the hunt froze into ice sculptures.

“Heh,” Qiu Yin merely laughed coldly when he saw that. He kept his left hand in his pocket, and raised his right hand, “Shatter.”

As he said those words softly, purple mist swirled around the training field, while the ice encasing the demons begun to crack.

A hint of shock flashed across Lu Lu’s pale blue eyes. She could feel that the purple mist was cutting off her connection with the ice sculptures.

“Ouch,” at that moment, the meatball-like fatty stepped on the ice, slipped, then bumped into Qiu Yin. “F*ck this, little girl, your ice is too slippery. I, Lord Fatty, am not wearing slip-resistant shoes.”

Although the fatty continued to complain, he managed to cut off Qiu Yin’s demonic energy.

Lu Lu used the chance to quickly reestablish her connection with the ice sculptures, frowned, then yelled out, “Shatter.”

Crack.

All of the ice sculptures shattered into tiny crystals.

As Qiu Yin watched the tribesmen which he brought over die within the ice sculptures, his pupils instantly turned blood red.

He glared in front of him and formed a powerful fist...

“Die!” Qiu Yin’s fist smashed towards Fatty’s back, which was turned towards him, with tremendous force.

“Lord Fatty, be careful,” Gou Yuzhan held a stick which he had gotten from an unknown place in his hand, and leapt into the air, smashing the stick down onto Qiu Yin’s head.

Crack.

The wooden stick instantly snapped in two.

Feeling the hit, Qiu Yin looked up with his crimson eyes.

Gou Yuzhan gulped, scratched his head with a wry smile, then looked down at the broken stick in his hands, “Uhm... Lord Fatty, save me!”

As he shouted, he begun to turn around to run. However, since they were on ice, Gou Yuzhan slipped... Then fell onto the floor.

“F*ck, your Helheim is definitely made to screw your teammates over,” Gou Yuzhan cursed in annoyance as he laid on the floor. Qiu Yin looked over at him with his blood red eyes.

A playful smile surfaced on Gou Yuzhan’s face. He held a delicate cross in his hands, and flipped over...

“Holy Light Illumination.”

A blinding light was released from the cross. When the holy light shone onto Qiu Yin, his bronze colored skin instantly started to corrode and release an azure gas if the light was acidic.

The smoke was filled with a gut-revolting stench. Meanwhile, Qiu Yin also let out a pitiful cry.

“Kid, not bad, you’re pretty smart!” the fatty pulled Gou Yuzhan up from the ground with a soft smile.

Gou Yuzhan instantly laughed idiotically after brushing off his bum, then ran over to Lu Lu and pointed at the ice to retort, “Just look at your ice layer. We’re teammates... If it wasn’t because of me having a cross, then I would have gotten ripped apart by the nigga.”

“Girlie, your ice surface is truly screwing your teammates over!”

Fatty Yin also retorted on the side.

“Hehe.... A sinister laugh sounded out from behind them. The demonic energy around Qiu Yin suddenly intensified, causing everyone to only be able to see a pair of shimmering red eyes amidst the black mist. “Are you finished arguing? Very well, you guys successfully pissed me off.”

“...” a hint of terror flashed across Gou Yuzhan’s face.

Fatty Yin squinted his eyes, then turned to the Gu family head, “Take your tribesmen away, this is no longer a fight you can particularly win.”

“You want to leave? Stay!”

Whoosh.

Intense wind started to blow, sending splinters of rock and ice to spray out, while the demonic energy became even denser.

Crap.

Fatty Yin’s playful gaze begun to turn solemn. When he suddenly made a decision in his heart, he kneeled onto the ground and slapped the ice surface with force using his right hand.

The ice surface on the ground rose up, forming a wall of ice.

At the same time, he turned towards the Gu family head and shouted, “Take your people and hurry away. Right now, they are only a burden for us if they stay.”

“Okay,” the Gu family head was not an indecisive person. With a roar, he immediately took the terrorized Gu clan members and moved towards the outside quickly.

However, laughter sounded out all around them, “This sovereign already said it. Nobody can leave!”

The sinister and chilling laugh caused everyone’s mood to sullen, and some of the Gu clan members directly freaked out and fell onto the ground when they heard it.

“Die!” the illusion of a huge demon leaped them.

At this moment, Fatty Yin also looked up speechlessly and retorted, “O Main body, if you still refuse to come, then laozi is done with all this!”

“My good son, did you miss me these last few days?” Tuoba Ye’s face always carried a cold smile, while he occasionally opened up the fan in his hand and fanned himself.

From the very beginning, Ye Zichen stared at the man with an indifferent gaze.

Without a single word.

“My good son, I came for a reason different to Qiu Yin’s. Although I’m a demon, I still keep my promises. I promised the Gu clan to not do anything to them for a hundred years. This time... I purely want to take you back to the demon realm!” Tuoba Ye smiled, but Ye Zichen continued to remain silent. “Hehe... You don’t want to talk to dad that much? What? Are you worried about the situation over there?”

“There isn’t anything to worry about. Your demon brothers won’t be able to do anything extreme with Fatty and co. there,” only then did Ye Zichen smiled faintly. He glanced directly at Tuoba Ye’s smile, then cracked his neck. “You actually said you, someone of the demon race, keeps his word. Do you think I’ll trust you!? If you truly would keep your word, and will ensure that the Gu clan has a hundred years of peace. Then... Go, kill that person called Qiu Yin.”

“We demons are different from you humans. We won’t fight among ourselves,” Tuoba Ye chuckled. “But, if you come with me, it’s not like I can’t help you guys! The only criteria is that... You are still a Fallen!”

“Fallen?” Ye Zichen smiled playfully. Then, a pair of black wings suddenly appeared on his back. However, neither his skin color, hair color nor eye color changed this time.

He was still able to maintain his own consciousness as he chuckled coldly at Tuoba Ye’s blatant displeasure, “You mean like this?”

A crazed and heated look surfaced in Tuoba Ye's eyes. He laughed maniacally and opened his mouth wide.

“Yes, yes, yes. Just like this... As expect of my son. A Fallen... A Fallen!” Tuoba Ye clenched his fist tightly and roared out excitedly.

However, Ye Zichen maintained his cold smile, and indicated towards Qiu Yin, “Kill him. If you kill him, then I'll leave with you!”

Chapter 349 – Great Battle (2)

Tuoba Ye merely smiled at Ye Zichen's indifferent attitude. He placed the folded fan in his hand in his jacket pocket, and stretched lazily, before eyeing where Qiu Yin was, "You told me to kill him?"

"What? You don't dare?" Ye Zichen smiled faintly, while his tone carried obvious mockery.

"Little fellow, you're still too naïve if you want to work me up like this," Tuoba Ye smiled.

Ye Zichen shrugged, "I didn't try to. Didn't you want me to leave with you? If you kill that Qiu Yin, then that'll be the reason for me to leave with you."

"Kill Qiu Yin," Tuoba Ye suddenly squinted his eyes and laughed as if he heard a joke. "My good son, do you really think that dad is stupid? If I kill Qiu Yin, then wouldn't I be at a huge loss if you two join up together against me!?"

"I won't be as untrustworthy as you."

"You humans are great at lying. If we trust the words of you humans, then we are the ones who will definitely be at a loss," Tuoba Ye squinted his eyes and took out his fan once again.

At the same time, an eye-like crack also appeared in the sky. Tuoba Ye pointed at the crack, "Come with me to the demon

realm. If you do, then I'll help you kill Qiu Yin in front of you!"

Ye Zichen merely shook his head with a smile, "I don't trust you!"

"Then... It'll be a bit difficult," Tuoba Ye cracked his neck and wrinkled his nose. "It's not so good if we remain like this and get nowhere."

"How can you say that we won't get anywhere..." with that, Ye Zichen kicked off the ground with his right foot.

The ground instantly cracked. At the same time, Ye Zichen also shot out like an unsheathed sword towards Tuoba Ye.

"Wouldn't suppressing you solve everything?"

While Fatty Yin and co. fought with Qiu Yin, they still paid attention to Ye Zichen's situation.

When they saw that Ye Zichen had already started to fight, and had even gone into a demonified form, Fatty Yin couldn't help but frown, "He still used it in the end."

"You still have the ability to worry about others?"

Dong.

Qiu Yin's fist smashed into Fatty Yin, sending him flying backwards for several tens of meters.

“Main Body... Main Body, Main Body, I'm calling you!”

The fatty, who rolled on the ground, continuously shouted out using his spiritual consciousness. The situation they were in was no longer one that he could handle.

Lu Lu also seemed to do the same, as she held her hands together and muttered inaudible words.

Thus, only Gou Yuzhan was left. He held a stick in his hand, and gulped as he cursed at Qiu Yin's black demonic figure, “You two terrible people. You told me to guard you, but how the f*ck can I manage that!?”

Bang.

Ye Zichen punched Tuoba Ye directly into the ground. He did not know any spiritual techniques. The only thing he knew in fighting was to use his fist.

That being said, he felt like his power seemed to have increased by quite a bit after becoming a Fallen.

He was very dangerous even if he only used his fists.

“My good son, you’re not very friendly like this. I am your father!” a faint laughter suddenly sounded out in midair. Ye Zichen frowned and looked up in the sky, then at the Tuoba Ye underneath his fist.

A substitute.

“My good son, we should chat properly. Which father and son actually fights like this?”

All he got in response was a plain fist.

Dong.

Tuoba Ye’s body instantly flew out and hit a tree near the training field, completely breaking the tree.

“I landed the hit!” Ye Zichen clenched his fist tightly and directly rushed over to give Tuoba Ye a sound beating without giving him the chance to breathe.

Bang, bang, bang.

As Tuoba Ye defended himself with difficulty, his heart was filled with a mix of shock and excitement.

He did not manage to defeat Ye Zichen, who was in the Fallen form, the previous time because he was too careless. This time, he

had already made good preparations, but was still being dominated...

Although the Fallen of the demon race had extremely good talent, Ye Zichen's power seemed to have massively increased in just a few days.

I have to bring him back.

Tuoba Ye clenched his fist and used his arms to block in front of him.

The huge power immediately sent him flying.

Then, as he flew back, Tuoba Ye shouted towards Qiu Yin, "Brother, come and help!"

In the center of the capital.

A muscular and handsome man watched the passing girls on the streets of the capital rather perversely.

"Brother Nameless' place is truly a great place. This girl... She's so damn pretty. No wonder he didn't want Chang'e to descend. Even I wouldn't want Chang'e to descend if I was him!" The muscular man scratched his head and gulped as he watched the passing beauties. "I wonder what Brother Nameless is actually doing. Should I directly go over to find him?"

“Hey there handsome,” a sexily-dressed woman walked by the muscular man, whose eyes immediately lit up when he saw her.

“Do you want to go in and play?” the girl licked her lips extremely seductively causing the muscular man’s expression to go completely dumb. Just when he was about to subconsciously nod in acceptance...

He felt an intense fluctuation of spiritual energy.

“Brother Nameless!” He frowned, then immediately took his arm out of that woman’s hands, and disappeared into the night.

...

“Didn’t you say that the father and son have to have a good chat?” Qiu Yin frowned. Then, when he thought of the pair of wings behind Ye Zichen, a look of shock filled his face. “Fallen? Your son is actually a Fallen!?”

“Yes!” A hint of pride was on Tuoba Ye’s face. He squinted his eyes and moved his neck around. “The prowess of a Fallen is recorded in the demon realm. Even though this brat just awakened, his prowess is not something which I can compare up to.”

“You were dominated?” Qiu Yin was stunned. He knew Tuoba Ye’s powers very well. If he did not demonify, then... He could not

fight against Tuoba Ye at all.

“Would I tell you to come and help if I could handle him?” Tuoba Ye raised his eyebrows. “Leave the Gu family. As long as we can bring this child back to the demon realm, our contributions to the demon realm will far surpass that of taking over a family in the Modern Realm.”

Ta.

Ta.

Ta.

Clear footsteps sounded out in the darkness. Then, they saw Ye Zichen walk over with a faint smile on his face.

“Hehe... You called in support.”

Wings!

Fallen!

Qiu Yin's expression turned solemn when he saw the pair of wings with his own eyes once again.

At the same time, Tuoba Ye also squinted his eyes, “Do you see

that? A Fallen, and a Fallen, who can maintain control of his thoughts. Do you even need to hesitate anymore?”

Qiu Yin nodded in response, then a sea of demonic energy was released from his body.

In the next instant, his body swelled up, while his eyes shone with a blood red light.

“Capture him.”

Chapter 350 – Descend

Tuoba Ye's eyes twitched when he saw Qiu Yin's form.

Demonification.

That was a unique inborn ability of demon race's Qiu clan. They were able to increase their own powers by several fold quickly, but the duration of it was not particularly long. So, it was clear that he wanted to end the fight quickly.

“Brother Tuoba, if I hurt your darling son later, please forgive me,” Qiu Yin's voice had turned coarse after demonification, but his tone carried unbelievable confidence.

Hurt.

That was something Tuoba Ye didn't even dare to imagine. All he could do against Ye Zichen was struggle to defend himself.

“What's Brother Qiu Yin saying? As long as we can bring this brat back to the demon realm... So what if we hurt him? What's more, since he's like this, if we don't beat him until he submits, then it would be impossible for him to leave with us.”

“That's true,” Qiu Yin smiled, then conjured up two balls of light from his hands, which he threw towards Ye Zichen.

“Hehe...”

Zoom.

Ye Zichen quickly dodged the balls of light, then saw that both Qiu Yin and Tuoba Ye flew up from the ground.

“Do you think that only you guys can fly?” Ye Zichen flapped his wings, causing a huge gale behind him, then flew up into the air.

“This foolish brat,” Tuoba Ye squinted his eyes and smiled. After demonification, even demon kings or mid staged Human Immortal level experts did not dare to fight Qiu Yin head on. Yet, the foolish brat actually dared to give chase.

“Brother Qiu Yin, do you want to play with him by yourself?”

“Don’t... We’ll attack together for safety’s sake. I’m too weak, so I cannot be under the effects of demonification for too long.

Qiu Yin’s eyes flashed with red light as he stared straight at the wings behind Ye Zichen’s back, while Tuoba Ye also nodded in agreement.

Fallen!

No Fallen had appeared in the demon realm for a thousand years already. If they were able to bring the brat back to the demon

realm and assimilate him in, then it was definitely a good thing for the demon realm.

Back during the Great War of Gods and Demons, the demon realm lost terribly, causing them only be able to hole up in a place like the Hellish Demon Realm.

Yet, the Divine Realm dominated a large part of the blessed area...

How were they supposed to accept it when it was originally the territory of the demon realm.

“What can you guys do after flying into the sky?” Ye Zichen chuckled as he flapped his wings.

Qiu Yin also spoke up at the same time, “You... I’ll give you a choice. Directly go with us to the demon realm. We can give you the best cultivation resources. You will become the demonic son of the entire demon realm. As long as you come with us to the demon realm, then everything you want will be yours! Even the Modern Realm that you are residing in right now will be yours in the future.

“You made it sound so good. Then help me kill someone!”

“Who!” Qiu Yin frowned.

“Gu Li, the one who worked with you!” Ye Zichen said

indifferently.

“Okay.”

Zoom.

Qiu Yin flew out without thinking.

At the same time, Gu Li had realized something was wrong. Just as he was about to run, Qiu Yin landed beside him.

“Qiu Yin... What did you come here for?”

“To kill you!”

Qiu Yin’s hand blurred, then, Gu Li’s head immediately separated from his body. His eyes opened wide at the moments before his death...

He was discontent with this outcome!

“Captain, hurry up and send some people over. There are too many ghosts over here, I can’t capture them all in time.” the Black Impermanence intern shrunk his neck while holding the souls of several people in his hands and quickly took out his phone to send a message to the Underworld, when he saw the large number of ghosts in the sky, and the vengeful aura become denser.

“F*ck, what the hell!”

Zoom.

Qiu Yin was swift as he held Gu Li's bloody head and flew back in front of Ye Zichen.

“Gu Li!”

“You actually moved rather quickly,” Ye Zichen maintained his smile as he looked at the head in Qiu Yin's hand. For some reason, he actually began to get excited when he saw the fresh blood.

“I have already satisfied your request. Come with us. You will receive the best treatment in the demon realm. It isn't just me, even the demon kings and the demon emperors of the demon realm will not dare to go against your word.”

“But... I don't want to go!” Ye Zichen suddenly laughed.

Qiu Yin's expression turned stiff, then he smiled wryly at Tuoba Ye, “Let's move!”

“My good son, going or not is not up to you. Even if we have to tie you up, we will bring you back.”

Zoom.

The fights of the demon race were far simpler than the battle of deities. After a few testing actions, it became a pure fist fight.

Ye Zichen's gaze also begun to turn solemn after he started to fight the two. After all, it was difficult for two fists to fight against four hands...

Even though neither of them could match up to him alone, Ye Zichen felt that it was a bit too much for him when they attacked him together.

“F*ck off!”

Ye Zichen knocked both Qiu Yin and Tuoba Ye away with a punch and a kick. However, the two off them once again charged at him with no care about their lives, not even allowing him to catch his breath.

“Ahh... Take this!”

Gou Yuzhan somehow flew into the air and smashed his stick towards Qiu Yin.

“F*ck off!”

Qiu Yin punched the stick, causing Gou Yuzhan to instantly fall down from the sky and create a huge crater in the ground.

“F*ck, when are you two done? Laozi can’t defend any longer!”

Gou Yuzhan’s head tilted, while he fainted.

Lu Lu and Fatty Yin also became more anxious. Gou Yuzhan had lost the ability to fight, while Ye Zichen was also tiredly fighting...

“Main Body, why the f*ck are you still not coming? That brat, Ye Zichen, is about to be beaten to death!” Fatty Yin cursed.

“Main Body, hurry up and descend! Zhang Junbao is done for. Is the tribe more important or is he more important? Do you want to lose him again?” Lu Lu couldn’t help but yell out as well.

Ugh.

In the sky, after several hundred rounds of combat with Qiu Yin and Tuoba Ye, Ye Zichen finally failed to defend one attack, causing him to cough up a large mouthful of blood.

“Demonic Son!”

Qiu Yin and Tuoba Ye instantly stopped their attacks. They did want to capture Ye Zichen, but they didn’t dare to actually harm him for real.

Ye Zichen wiped away the wipe from the corner of his mouth with his fingers, and licked it...

“Hehe...” A faint excitement arose from the bottom of Ye Zichen’s heart, while he smashed his fist onto Tuoba Ye and Qiu Yin. “Come!”

“Demonic Son, sorry!”

Qiu Yin clenched his teeth and charged towards Ye Zichen once more, while Tuoba Ye took a look before following with a clench of his teeth.

“Come, hahahaha... Come!”

Ye Zichen laughed maniacally, causing everyone on the ground to feel a chill down their spines.

“Main Body...”

“Main Body...”

Both Fatty Yin and Lu Lu cried out.

Then, all of a sudden, a ray of sacred light shone across the sky, illuminating through the darkness like the blazing sun.

This...

Meant that someone descended!

Chapter 351 – Plantain Fan

Who!?

Both Lu Lu and Fatty Yin couldn't help but look up into the sky. Could my Main Body have come?

The figure in the sky seemed to be a woman. Her body shimmered with an undefilable holy light that was so blinding that others were not able to look straight at it.

“It's actually you!” Tuoba Ye frowned. He was all too familiar with that woman.

“Why did you not listen to what I said back then? Could it be that you thought I was just joking with you?” Ye Rong wore a long white dress, while a cold yet beautiful look could be seen on her face.

As the holy light sprinkled on the ground, the injuries of the wounded begun to quickly heal at a noticeable pace.

“Lil' Rong,” the Gu family head's expression changed. As he bathed in the warm holy light, he looked up and saw Ye Rong, who was in the sky, while a single tear couldn't help but flow out of his eye.

From this moment onwards, I'm called Ye Rong, and am no longer Saintess Gu Rong.

My child.

Back then... it was dad's mistake.

“Who is this woman?” Qiu Yin frowned, while his eyes shimmering with red light displayed a hint of disgust. “I hate the aura from her.”

“Ha... That would be right. She has the body of a saint, and is the absolute counter to we demons,” Tuoba Ye smiled faintly.

Qiu Yin frowned, “How do you know?”

“How could I not? She... She was my woman back then. The Fallen is the product of her and I,” Tuoba Ye squinted his eyes with a smile.

However, Qiu Yin could not calm himself down.

The child of a saint and a heavenly demon...

Fallen!

“Actually, both we of the heavenly demon race and you guys of the god race, there are still more powerful existences even if we cultivate to the complete stage of the demon emperor level. However... If we want to break through, only those that bear the

bloodline of both saints and demons would be able to take that step!”

That was the words Demon Emperor Qiu Mo said when he was suppressed by the true immortals, and it was also what had been passed down the Qiu clan.

The son of a saint and a demon...

Isn't this child what Demon Emperor Qiu Mo was talking about back then?

I have to snatch him and bring him back to the demon realm.

Qiu Yin clenched his teeth, then begun his assault on Ye Zichen once again. He no longer hid any bit of his powers, and no longer held back! All he wished to do was empower himself, even if he hurt Ye Zichen until he was disabled...

Everything was worth it if he could bring Ye Zichen to the demon realm.

“You still want to use violence after I have arrived!?”

Ye Rong tapped in the sky. A blinding ray of light immediately tore a hole in Qiu Yin's chest, causing a bloody hole around the size of a bowl to appear on Qiu Yin's body. Purplish red blood continuously flowed out from the wound, but Qiu Yin disregarded it and continued to charge at Ye Zichen.

That caused Ye Rong to worry. She had assumed that Qiu Yin would actually defend...

However, from the looks of it, he had already given up all attempts at defense in order to charge in front of Ye Zichen.

All of a sudden, a Ye Rong felt a bad feeling. She quickly flew towards Ye Zichen, only to find Tuoba Ye blocking her way.

“I can’t let you disturb Brother Qiu Yin.”

“You still want to make a move against me when the situation is like this?” Ye Zichen smiled playfully. Just as he formed a fist and tried to meet Qiu Yin head on...

A spiritual formation appeared in the palm of Qiu Yin’s hand. Qiu Yin spat out a mouthful of demonic blood towards his palm, causing the spiritual formation to instantly flew towards the sky.

A huge spatial crack appeared in the sky. The powerful suction of it pulled him into the crack, while Qiu Yin coughed up a lot more demonic blood.

“The son of a saint and a demon belongs to the demon realm!” as Qiu Yin roared, the spatial crack begun to pull Ye Zichen’s body like a huge open mouth.

“Zichen!” Ye Rong’s eyebrows knitted tightly together. She wanted to go over, but Tuoba Ye acted like a sheep dog and just completely blocked off her path.

“Tuoba Ye!” Ye Rong yelled angrily.

Tuoba Ye raised his eyebrows with a smile, “Yes, you called me like that. Back then... That’s the expression you had. Gu Rong, although I don’t like you as a woman, at the very least, you gained a Fallen for our demon race, so I do have to thank you for it.”

“Tuoba Ye!” Ye Rong screamed, while the holy light around her became more blinding. Then, a sphere of golden light moved out away from the holy light and crashed onto the spatial crack and Qiu Yi.

“Brother Tuoba, stop that woman!” Qiu Yin roared.

“No problem,” Tuoba Ye suddenly took out the folded fan. Then, all of a sudden, the fan enlarged by several tens of times...

“Bye bye!” Tuoba Ye waved towards Ye Rong, then fanned with force.

Powerful wind roared. When Ye Rong felt the strength of the wind, her pupils contracted. Just as she wanted to defend with all her might...

“This is the Plantain Fan. Enduring it forcefully is a joke!” Tuoba

Ye laughed, then watched Ye Rong slowly move back by one meter, two meters... until she completely disappeared from sight.

“Brother Qiu Yin, I’m done here. How’s it going on your side?”

“Soon!” Qiu Yin spat another mouthful of blood essence in his palm, causing the suction of the crack to increase to the point that even trees were pulled up by their roots, and flew into the crack.

“Main Body...” both Lu Lu and Fatty Yin were about to go crazy. Previously, both of them had a very close connection with their Main Body, but this time, no matter how they shouted, their main body did not respond.

“F*ck, Lord Fatty can’t stand it anymore,” with that, Fatty Yin turned around, and formed the horse stance with a shout. “Engulf the World!”

Fatty Yin’s mouth instantly turned into an endless hole with extremely strong suction. The powerful suction instantly competed with the suction of the crack, with both pulling on Ye Zichen, who was in the sky.

Lu Lu immediately got anxious as she watched on the ground. She wanted to go up and help...

Just as she was about to, a soft voice suddenly sounded out in her sea of consciousness.

“Don’t go.”

“Main Body, is it you? Hurry up and descend! Ye Zichen can’t hold it anymore. Fatty is using Engulf the World to fight against the demons over him.”

“Engulf the World?” the voice in her sea of consciousness giggled playfully. “No wonder I found that fatty so weird. Alright, no need to worry about Ye Zichen, someone is going to save him. As for the fatty, he should have received a message from his Main Body.”

“What... You told laozi close my mouth? If laozi close my mouth, then Ye Zichen would get taken away by the demons!”

“Huh? Someone’s coming to save him?”

Meanwhile, Fatty Yin continuously argued with his main body. Then, at that moment, a three-eyed man in a silver armor and holding a lance appeared.

“Ha...” a cold chuckled sounded out from the man’s mouth. He glanced at Tuoba Ye and Qiu Yin, who both had a shocked look on their faces...

Then let his gaze onto the spatial crack.

His lance moved.

The crack shattered.

“Puny demonic leftovers. You actually dared to bully this true lord’s brother. Die!”

Chapter 352 – War God Yang Jian

The man rode the clouds just like a descending god and looked down upon everyone.

“Die!”

Ugh.

Qiu Yin spat out a mouthful of blood, then instantly appeared beside Tuoba Ye.

“An expert!’ Tuoba Ye and Qiu Yin couldn’t help but frown.

“F*ck, are you insulting laozi? I actually let you run,” rage appeared on the man’s solemn face. He grabbed the silver lance in his hand and thrust it crazily towards both Qiu Yin and Tuoba Ye.

Die!

Die!

Die!

“Why’s this guy going mad?” Qiu Yin and Tuoba Ye felt like their heads were going to explode. Why isn’t this guy acting like a master, and instead merely revealed an aura of a lowly person...

“Why are you still not dead!?” the man raised his eyebrows. He was truly a bit angry.

He had wanted to coolly deal with the two puny demons, but even after ten-odd attacks, the two demons were still alive and well in front of him.

It’s fortunate that I didn’t let that damn monkey see this, otherwise...

The man thought silently to himself, then imagined a scene in his head.

My son, I told you that you are a newb. You actually took so long to fight with two mere Human Immortals. You are still miles away from your Grandpa Sun!

Tsk.

The man spat, then shook his head, “Die!”

“Erlang Shen Yang Jian, isn’t it a bit outrageous for you to bully a junior like this?”

A huge black hand suddenly appeared in the sky. The man moved, then turned around swiftly, and stabbed his lance towards the palm.

Bang.

The huge hand shattered, while the man squinted his eyes and held the lance in his right hand, “Which lowly person is it? You actually dared to sneak an attack on your Grandpa Yang!”

“Hehe... You truly become lowlier the longer you live. Yang Jian, when can you get rid of your loser aura?” a mocking laugh sounded out in the sky.

Yang Jian!

The person in front of us is actually Yang Jian!

Both Tuoba Ye and Qiu Yin were completely shocked. No wonder we can't even muster up any feelings of resistance against him.

The war god of the Heavenly Court – Yang Jian!

It's so fortunate that a demon king level expert of the demon realm made a move. Otherwise, we would definitely get turned into dust by that powerhouse.

Ye Zichen was also shocked.

Erlang Shen Yang Jian!

Why did he descend? He didn't tell me through social media either...

“Who the f*ck did you call a loser? You only know how to hide in the dark and mutter. Come out... If you do, grandpa will definitely beat you until you become a retard!” Erlang Shen cursed with his war lance in his hand. “You are just like a naughty kid, and is hiding in the corner... I really do wonder if I, someone of your father's generation, am able to lower my own status to bully a pitiful child like you. You actually dared to call me a loser. Come... Come out. I definitely won't hit you just once!”

Yang Jian was already a master at arguing while in the Heavenly Court, and so he also started to fight back.

“Childish loser, can you stop making your reputation worse?” a faint snicker rang out in the air.

“Fight me if you don't submit!” Yang Jian couldn't be bothered with him anymore. He raised the war lance in his hand high, and gazed at the faraway sky. “Don't think about winning against me in an argument. You still lack a lot in terms of that. If you don't submit, then come out... And beat me until I submit.”

“Do you really think that this sovereign doesn't not dare to appear?” the demon king in the sky spoke up once again.

“Fight me!” Yang Jian said with determination.

“Hahaha, this king also wants to experience the power of the Heavenly Court’s war god. Then... let’s fight!” laughter sounded out from the sky like rolling thunder. A several-meter long foot reached out from the sky. Then, not long later, the entire body of the demon king was displayed in front of everyone’s eyes.

His face was like that of an ox’s with horns on his head.

His large eyes were of a blood red color, while his three hundred something meter tall body blocked off the sky like a descending demon god. Everyone seemed like insects in front of him, and could only look up to his might.

“You really dared to appear?” Yang Jjian smiled faintly without any hint of fear.

“Since the war god sent the invitation, then how could this king avoid the battle?” the demon king’s voice echoed out in the sky. He hooked his fingers at Yang Jian. “Come, let me know that you’re not just a loser who can only bullshit.”

“I’ll satisfy you!”

Zoom.

Yang Jian moved his arm. His silver armor let out a sound as it hit against itself, while the lance in his arm released a silver light...

“Die,” a clear shout sounded out from Erlang Shen as he stepped forward in the sky and pierced towards the demon king.

“Heh!” the demon king chuckled, then reached towards Erlang Shen with incomparable might in both his hands.

Not good.

Yang Jian thought in his heart, then rushed forward. However, the huge hand was truly too large, so it instantly gripped Yang Jian.

“Aren’t you overestimating yourself by fighting me without your Truth Body?”

“Hehe... Grandpa just wanted to go easy on you. Since grandson requested it, then grandpa will satisfy you!”

With that, the third eye on Yang Jian’s forehead opened.

Boom.

A loud sound echoed through the sky. Then, Yang Jian’s body instantly enlarged by several hundred times.

“Break,” Yang Jian called out softly, causing the demon king to feel like he had to open up his hand.

Yang Jian stood proudly in the sky and scanned the demon king...

This seem made the two of them look like a god and a demon god watching each other in the sky.

“Interesting!” the demon king raised the corner of his lips slightly.

Yang Jian also smiled. Then, he gripped his lance tighter, while a look of indifference flashed across his eyes, “Interesting? Hehe... Watch as grandpa beats you until you become a retard!”

Erlang Shen gripped his lance and shot out like laser, forming light that was so blinding that others were unable to look straight at them.

Every single time the two huge bodies collided, a shockwave would spread through the sky, while the terrifying nose would send a chill down people’s spines!

“Erlang Shen?” Gou Yuzhan had awaken at an unknown time, and felt rather heated up as he looked at Yang Jian, who was like a heavenly god in the sky.

Both Lu Lu and Fatty Yin also opened their mouths wide in shock. They never expected the person their Main Body talked about to be Yang Jian.

His title as the number one war god of the Heavenly Court was not just for show. Even though the demon king was huge, he was still completely dominated by Yang Jian in battle.

“Is this really my bro?” Ye Zichen, who had landed on the ground, also couldn’t help but raise his eyebrows. This truly changed his impression of Erlang Shen quite a lot.

Bang.

A huge hand landed on the ground, creating a huge crater. When Ye Zichen and co. saw it, they couldn’t help but be shocked.

It was very difficult to even damage a fifty-something meters long hand, and it was even more difficult to imagine how large the demon king’s Main Body was.

Despite that, Yang Jian still manage to chop off hand of his...

Being a war god really wasn’t just for a show!

“Yang Jian!” the demon king’s eyes were filled with blood, while purplish blood spilled from his ruined wrist.

“What are you calling grandpa for?” Yang Jian laughed mockingly, then pointed the silver lance at his chest. I’ll take your dog life with my next attack!”

Chapter 353 – You’ve Got The Wrong Person

“Yang Jian, I’m going to kill you!” the demon king’s eye flashed with a red light.

All of a sudden, the air was filled with a revolting smell. When Ye Zichen smelled the stench, he felt as if his spirits were starting to sag.

Bang.

Bang.

Bang.

When the people around him began to fall to the ground, he subconsciously activated the Fiery Eyes of Truth...

The souls of those people started to fly towards the demon king in the sky, and that even included the souls that had already been captured by the Underworld’s ghost servants!

“Not good,” Yang Jian frowned. His third eye was clearly able to see that the souls of the mortals below him were becoming the nourishment of the demon, and were replenishing his body.

The strength of the demon king opposite him gradually started to rise.

Yang Jian frowned. If the fight dragged on, then even he would have trouble against the demon king.

“Petty tricks. Die!” Yang Jian thrust forward.

When he did that, the demon king had already grown another hand to replace his lopped off one. He licked his lips slightly greedily, “The souls of mortals are truly great nourishment.”

As he watched Yang Jian’s lance pierced the skies towards him, the demon king did not retreat and instead met it face on. His fist shimmered with a black light as he punched.

“There!” the demon king roared. The moment the lance crashed against his fist, the sound of metal colliding sounded out.

The reflective force passed through the lance, causing Yang Jian’s purlicue to bleed, but he still maintained a tight grip on his war lance.

F*ck, it got slightly tricky. Yang Jian cursed silently in his heart. If I let the demon king continue devouring souls like this, then I have no chance of victory.

Stop fretting. Think about how the monkey will do in this situation! Yang Jian thought to himself. However, the only thing he was able to think of was a single sentence...

Ha, if it was Grandpa Sun, then just smash it down with my stick. Who cares about so much? Care about whether it can be beaten after hitting it!

Damn monkey, can't you say something useful? Yang Jian cursed angrily in his heart. At the same time, Great Sage Sun, who was eating fruits in the Water Curtain Cave on Mt. Huaguo, couldn't help but sneeze.

He frowned, chucked the peach in his hand to the side, then made a few incantation gestures.

"Yang Jian... What kind of danger did this grandson get into? I can't figure it out. Ahh, whatever, I can only pray that nothing happens to him!"

"Hahaha, the Heavenly Court's war god Yang Jian is only so-so!" the demon king laughed unrestrainedly.

Hearing that, Yang Jian clenched his teeth, "The monkey's right. Hit it first. How can laozi endure this grandson just bragging here!"

Bang.

Yang Jian gripped his lance tightly and rapidly thrust towards the demon king.

Ding ding dong.

What made people feel like giving up was that the lance could not do any damage to the demon king's body at all. It was as if the demon king's body had a layer of impenetrable protective shield over it.

“Yang Jian, you lost!” the demon king laughed madly, while absorbing the souls of the normal people around him without any restraint. Then, he set his gaze upon Ye Zichen, “Fallen... Come with me to the demon realm!”

The huge hand in the sky reached towards Ye Zichen.

Yang Jian immediately roared, “Bro, run!”

At that moment, Ye Zichen also felt like something locked onto him. He wanted to leave, but he noticed that it was as if someone casted a Body-Freezing Spell on him, causing him to not be able to move at all.

“Come with me!”

“Holy Illumination!”

At that very moment, a blinding holy light shone in the west. When the holy light shone onto the demon king, his body immediately broke down.

At the same time, a clear yell also sounded out in the sky, “Yang Jian, what are you waiting for!?”

“Ha, thanks!” Yang Jian smiled, he cut his lance towards the arm without any hesitation.

Splash.

Purplish red blood spurted all over the silver lance, while the huge arm fell down from the sky, causing suffocating dust to splash everywhere.

“Ahhh...” the demon king held his broken arm with his left hand. Then, before he could even react, Yang Jian charged towards him with the lance in hand once again.

“Die!”

The lance pierced towards the demon king’s chest in a trick manner...

“Heh!”

The demon king grunted, then looked down and saw that Yang Jian’s lance had completely pierced his chest.

Yang Jian forcefully twisted the lance, causing a huge hole to appear on the demon king’s chest.

“Ugh...” Purplish red blood flowed out continuously from the wound.

Yang Jian squinted his eyes when he saw this.

Take advantage of his weakness!

Zoom.

The war lance stabbed into the demon king's head.

Bang.

The demon king's head exploded like an exploding watermelon.

“Yang Jian, this king remembers you now!”

Contrary to Yang Jian's expectation, the demon king actually managed to survive the blow. A huge spatial crack appeared in the sky, then the demon king leaped into the it.

“You want to run!?” Yang Jian charged with his lance.

At that moment, Ye Rong appeared by his side, then patted his shoulder and shook her head, “Don't go, that is the Hellish Demon Realm, which the demons reside in. If you go... Not only you, it is

even impossible for the Three Pure Ones to return alive.”

“Thank you just now!” Yang Jian returned his body to normal, then cupped his hands towards Ye Rong.

Ye Rong shook her head with a smile, then turned around and flew towards Ye Zichen, “Zichen.”

She pulled him into her embrace, then checked him out with a worrying gaze. After a long time, she finally let out a long sigh of relief, “It’s great that you’re alright.”

“I’ve caused you to worry,” Ye Zichen’s expression saddened.

At that moment, the Gu family head walked over. His blurry eyes shimmered.

When Ye Rong saw him, a hint of depression also appeared on her face, “You’re also...”

“Lil-Lil’ Rong,” the Gu family head trembled.

Ye Rong’s shoulders shook intensely. Ye Zichen was able to feel just how much feelings went through Ye Rong’s heart at that moment.

However, she quickly calmed herself down, and spoke to the Gu family head with a smile, “Old Man Gu, this clown fiesta has come

to an end. I am deeply sorry about the Gu clan's loss. There was a pretty huge commotion this time. The Surveillance Committee might come over to question your clan tomorrow. You better clean this place up in order to prevent unnecessary trouble for the Gu clan. Oh yeah, when they investigate, please hide the appearance of Yang Jian and I."

"Lil' Rong!" the Gu family head trembled, then sighed. "Are-Are you blaming me?"

"What are you talking about?" Ye Rong smiled. "I just don't want to get into that unnecessary mess. Yang Jian is also of the same mind. Don't think too much into it."

"Gu Rong, just treat it as father's wrongs. Come back!" the Gu family head clenched his teeth and shouted.

Ye Rong's expression stiffened for a moment, then she smiled wryly, "I think you've got the wrong person. My name is Ye Rong, not Gu Rong!"

Chapter 354 – Twelve Demon Sovereigns

A helpless and wry smile covered the Gu family head's face.

Gu Tian, who was on the side, couldn't help but speak up, "Auntie!"

"Lil' Tian, you have to work harder after becoming the Gu clan's junior young master," Ye Rong patted his shoulders, then smiled towards Ye Zichen. "Zichen, let's go!"

"Sure!"

As Gu Tian watched them leave, he couldn't help but raise his eyebrows, "Grandpa, are we really just going to let them go like this?"

"Let them go!" a mournful smile flashed across the Gu family head's face. "I wronged her back then. Since she doesn't want to come back now, then don't make her return to this depressing place!"

...

"Tsk, he's just saying some fierce words. Just because this lord can't beat the monkey, it doesn't mean that I can't beat you," Yang Jian snorted towards the place where the demon king left from and put away his lance. Then he turned into the image of a muscular man once again, and walked towards Ye Zichen's side

with a raise of his eyebrows and a smile. “Bro, guess who I am! Oh, you’re here as well!”

The latter sentence was clearly directed at Ye Rong, while Lu Lu and co. also revealed a hint of surprise when they saw Yang Jian walk over.

They were rather stunned when Yang Jian appeared to save Ye Zichen earlier. They didn’t think that they were actually brothers.

“Zichen, chat with your friend. I’m a bit tired, so I’ll be leaving first!”

With that, Ye Rong leaped up into the sky and disappeared from sight.

Seeing that, Gou Yuzhan couldn’t help but gulp and mutter to the others, “It seems like Shopkeeper Ye’s mom is pretty fierce.”

Fatty Yin and Lu Lu both couldn’t help but nod. Indeed, she was pretty fierce, and not just a little.

“We’ll be taking our leave as well,” Lu Lu and Fatty Yin smiled, then turned around to leave.

Gou Yuzhan stood still in the same spot and looked at Yang Jian, then raised his eyebrows at Lu Lu, “Huh? We’re leaving just like this?”

“Brat, can you be more observant?” Fatty Yin raised his eyebrows, then grabbed Gou Yuzhan’s shoulders. “What can you do if you stay here?”

“But... It’s my first time seeing Erlang Shen Yang Jian!” Gou Yuzhan muttered.

“Stop bullshitting. Are you leaving or not!? If you aren’t, then sleep on the streets tonight!” Fatty Yin cursed.

“Fine, fine, fine, I’ll leave!” Gou Yuzhan reluctantly left with Lu Lu and Fatty Yin, leaving only Ye Zichen and Erlang Shen.

Seeing that, Yang Jian couldn’t help but raise his eyebrows, “Why did they all leave? Do I smell?”

As he said so, he even sniffed his armpits, “I don’t. Why did they leave just like that? Hey, bro, what is the relationship of those two women with you just now?”

“...” Ye Zichen also felt a bit speechless. This guy was pretty cool when he was fighting the demon king just now. Why did he return to his original form in just a few minutes?

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes, then suddenly felt something underneath his feet.

He looked down and saw a fan laying underneath his feet.

“Don’t move!” Yang Jian suddenly grabbed Ye Zichen’s shoulders, squatted on the ground and picked up the fan. After he looked at it a few times, he revealed an excited smile. “It really is the Plantain Fan. Hahaha, laozi’s rich this time. I can definitely get quite a bit of money if I sell it to the pawn shops in the Heavenly Court!”

“Give it over here,” Ye Zichen snatched the folded fan over and raised his eyebrows.

This seems to be the same one that Tuoba Ye had. Yang Jian actually said that it’s the Plantain Fan?

“You said that this thing is the Plantain Fan?” Ye Zichen asked in confusion.

“As true as it can possibly get,” Yang Jian nodded in confirmation. “Bro, this fan can sell for quite a lot.”

It really is hard to imagine what sort of life in poverty Yang Jian lived through before. His first thought after seeing a treasure was actually to sell it rather than keeping it.

“Bro, if you don’t have any use for the Plantain Fan, then give it to me. When I sell it, we’ll split the money 50-50, and I’ll just directly send the money to you,” Yang Jian rubbed his hands and gulped.

The Plantain Fan was of a similar ranking on the ranking of divine weapons to his Three-Pointed, Double-Edged Divine Lance. This would definitely be a treasure that divine weapon collectors in the Heavenly Court fight over. If we sell this...

“I don’t really believe that this is the Plantain Fan. Tell me how to use it,” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes.

Yang Jian immediately spoke up, “Bro, are you doubting me? Fine, then I’ll let you know how to tell that this is the real Plantain Fan...”

Woosh.

Yang Jian told Ye Zichen the method of using it.

Ye Zichen smiled mysteriously, “So just flap it using celestial spiritual energy?”

“Yeah,” Yang Jian replied with a smile. “I’m telling you, the force is pretty amazing. Back then, even the monkey...”

“Hehe... Then... Off you go!”

Ye Zichen fanned towards Yang Jian with the fan in his hand.

In the next moment, Yang Jian’s face revealed a look of confusion. He struggled and wanted to stand up on the ground,

only to see Ye Zichen wave his hand.

“Bye bye!”

He really isn't thinking if he wants to sell such a good treasure.

After Ye Zichen fanned Yang Jian away, Ye Zichen carefully held the fan. Now that I have the Plantain Fan, I'll just fan the person away after facing danger. It is definitely an amazing item to use to save myself.

In the demon realm...

Tuoba Ye, Qiu Yin, and the demon king, who only had his primordial spirit remaining, knelt on the ground and paid their respects towards a black dragon statue.

“You guys said that a Fallen appeared in the human realm?” a solemn voice sounded out in the palace.

Tuoba Ye quickly nodded, “Yes, that brat is my son... He is indeed a Fallen. Both Qiu Yin and his majesty, the demon king, can testify.”

“Why is your son in the human realm!”

“He is born of me and a woman in the mortal realm,” Tuoba Ye replied.

Qiu Yin also spoke up, “That woman is a saintess!”

“Oh?” a hint of surprise was continued within the voice. Then, he put that issue to the side and spoke to the demon king. “Why do you only have your primordial spirit remaining?”

“I was harmed by Yang Jian and the saintess,” the demon king clenched his teeth. “if it wasn’t that woman... Yang Jian definitely could not match up to me.”

“Hehe, ignorant!” a sneer sounded out in the palace, causing the demon king to bury his head. “The title of the Heavenly Court’s war god is not just for show. Do you think that he can’t beat you even without the saintess?”

The demon king did not reply. Then, a black pill appeared in front of his eyes.

“Saving Tuoba Ye and Qiu Yin is your achievement, so this pill is for you to reconstruct your demonic form. However... for fighting with the Heavenly Court’s war god recklessly, go and accept your punishment!”

“Understood!”

The demon king left with the pill in his hands.

Then, the voice in the palace sounded out once again, “You two don’t need to care about the Fallen anymore. Leave!”

“Understood!” Tuoba Ye and Qiu Yin also nodded and left.

Then, the scene in the palace suddenly changed.

“Twelve Demon Sovereigns, you guys also heard my conversation with them just now, right? Alright, tell me your thoughts!”

Chapter 355 – The Heavenly Court’s Method Of Charging Their Phone

Sizzle.

A red bonfire suddenly started to burn.

Within a hall of the palace, twelve chairs were situated around a long black table. One of the chairs was empty, while the rest were filled with men and women of various different characteristics.

“What does our lord want us to say?

“It’s clearly your thoughts about the Fallen,” the man on the throne smiled. “I want to hear what you all think!”

“That isn’t a Fallen. If what little fellow Qiu Yin said was true, then that Fallen is actually the son of a saint and a demon!” said the red-hair and red-clothed man with a huge sword strapped to his back.

“Back then, the Demon Emperor said that only those who possesses the bloodline of a saint and a demon can take that final step. I feel that we, the demon race, have to fight for this child of a saint and demon,” the one who spoke was an elder with completely white hair.

“Son of a saint and demon, that sounds really amazing!” an

extremely beautiful woman spoke up. She licked her lips, while excitement flashed across her alluring eyes. “I wonder how he tastes.”

“I feel like we don’t need to care about him.”

At that moment, one of the eleven raised a different opinion.

“Oh?” the man on the throne raised his eyebrows. “Tell me your reasoning.”

“It takes extremely long for a child of a saint and a demon to grow. It’s not like we, the demon race, did not have anyone of them before, but did anyone of them grow to the level of a demon sovereign?” the long-haired man said coldly. “If we chuck in large amounts of resources on them, then it’ll cause the younger generation of our race to have a pitiful amount of resources. Yet, this is the sort of result we end up with after investing in countless resources! Back then, the demon emperor did say those words, but... Is what the demon emperor said the absolute truth?”

Everyone in the hall set their gazes on the man. The long-haired man laughed, and continued, “Breakthrough requires talent and effort. If we have the time, then it’s better used on cultivation. Our main focus should be on the Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation. Even if that child of a saint and demon is truly very talented, we’ll just snatch him over when we discover that.”

“What do you guys think?” the man on the throne smiled.

An older elder voiced his opinion. “I still feel like we should bring him back here.”

“Hehe... since the opinions are not unanimous, then I shall decide!” the man on the throne touched his lips. “The Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation is naturally the focus of the attention of our race, but we can’t give up on that child of a saint and a demon. Isn’t Lianhua in the Modern Realm? We’ll just leave it to her.”

“Agreed!”

“Agreed!”

“Agreed!”

Everyone nodded in agreement.

The man on the throne also nodded, “Alright, then that’s it.”

At that moment, a man holding a strand of foxtail grass in his mouth smiled outside the palace, “Child of a saint and a demon. Interesting!”

...

“Bro, this really is a blessed place!” Yang Jian wore a Hawaiian-tourist like costume with black sunglasses as he stared at the white legs of the passing girls on the streets, as he squatted on the side of

the road like a rascal.

Even though Ye Zichen used the Plantain Fan, the strength of it was still on the small side for a great deity like Yang Jian.

After he was fanned off once, he understood that Ye Zichen wanted the Plantain Fan, so he did not mention selling the fan after returning.

“It’s alright.”

Ye Zichen had wanted to catch some rest, but Yang Jian had dragged him out, so he could not reply.

Since he had no choice, Ye Zichen could only squat with him on the road-side and look at the legs of the passing girls.

“Hey, look at that one... And that one... My god, is this really the mortal realm? Back when I didn’t become a deity, the girls weren’t this pretty!” Yang Jian continuously exclaimed as if he discovered a new continent. Then, he patted Ye Zichen’s shoulder with a smile. “Bro, pretty good! No wonder you didn’t want Chang’e to descend. If it were me, I wouldn’t let her descend either!”

“...” Ye Zichen sighed helplessly. Yang Jian just doesn’t know how amazing the cosmetic technology is right now, nor does he know how advance the plastic surgery technology is.

If these girls all came out plain and without make-up, then Yang

Jian might not be so excited.

Ye Zichen took out a cigarette from his pocket and gave it to Yang Jian. Then, he heard his phone ring after lighting a cigarette from himself.

Ye Zichen took out his phone, causing Yang Jian to look at Ye Zichen's phone like a curious kid, "Bro, you use this to contact us? It seems far more advanced than our advanced technology."

With that, Yang Jian took out a straight long board from his pocket, which was similar to the phones in the Modern Realm multiple years ago.

"Look!"

Ye Zichen subconsciously received the phone. He noticed that their phone was not particularly heavy, as if they didn't have any batteries.

That brought up a question he always held in his heart...

How does the Heavenly Court generate electricity? How do they get internet!?

Thus, Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows after returning the phone, "How do you charge the battery of your phone? Does the Heavenly Court have internet as well?"

“Charge the battery?” Yang Jian said after a brief pause. “Are you talking about charging the phone up with energy? We all use celestial spiritual energy. Bro, do you not do that?”

“Show me how you charge!” Ye Zichen handed his phone over.

Erlang Shen’s hand immediately glowed without him saying anything.

Then, when he returned the originally fifty-percent charged phone, the battery was already full.

“Just like that.”

“So advanced,” Ye Zichen was stunned. No wonder Han Xiangzi said that he could use the phone when I sent it over.

So they don’t need to generate electricity. They are portable chargers themselves!

“Bro, don’t you charge it up like that?” Yang Jian was stunned. Then, he asked once again when he saw that Ye Zichen did not answer. “Then how do you guys communicate using your phones?”

“Our Heavenly Court has the celestial net... But, I seem to be unable to get its signal after getting here,” Yang Jian replied

quietly.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen was completely stunned.

Celestial net? Then the Underworld has the Underworld net? But how can my Mortal Net let me contact them?

Is it seriously plot armor?

At that moment, his phone rang again.

Ye Zichen knitted his eyebrows and opened the social media app. Recently, no one talked with him using personal chats.

However, there was a small “1” on his contact list.

“Bro, how did you get on? I investigated it for an entire night, but still could not get on,” Yang Jian handed his over. The social media app continuously displayed that it was connecting, but he was unable to get into the main page.

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes at him. This guy seriously talks too much. I’ve been listening to him for an entire day.

“I’ll tell you later.”

After settling Yang Jian, Ye Zichen clicked to see his new friend

request. When he saw it, he subconsciously looked at the Plantain Fan in his pocket and turned to Yang Jian, “Is Princess Iron Fan someone of the Heavenly Court?”

Chapter 356 – A Chance Meeting With Qu Qitong

Ye Zichen was stunned, while a faint confusion look surfaced in his eyes, “Princess Iron Fan?”

“Why are you looking at me like that? You don’t know Princess Iron Fan?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

Yang Jian immediately waved, “Nope. I’ve merely heard of her. She is not someone of the Heavenly Court, and so isn’t particularly familiar with you. If there’s anyone she’s familiar with, it’d be the monkey. He was once a chaotic demon lord with the Ox Demon King, so you should go to him.”

Ye Zichen naturally knew that. Since he had watched Journey to the West plenty of times, he really would have lived for nothing if he didn’t even know that.

What he was curious about was how Princess Iron Fan managed to find his account since she wasn’t someone of the Heavenly Court.

Ye Zichen scratched his head and accepted the friend request.

“The Plantain Fan is in your hands, right!”

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but sigh when he saw the intimacy level

of cold.

It seems like it's not going to be a fun chat.

“It is in my hands. I want to ask...”

“Can you return the fan to me?” Princess Iron Fan instantly replied. “I lost my Plantain Fan a while back when I went travelling. I looked for it for a long time!”

...

Why is my luck so bad?

Ye Zichen couldn't help but silently retort. I barely used this Plantain Fan and now the actual owner came to ask for it.

“Excuse me, are you still there?”

Although the intimacy level was cold, Princess Iron Fan's tone was still extremely respectful.

If she forced the issue more, then Ye Zichen might have made up his mind to stand firm on his decision to keep it. However, her attitude was completely proper, even if Ye Zichen wanted to keep the Plantain Fan, it would go against his own conscience.

“Alright, I’ll give it to you,” Ye Zichen reluctantly scanned the Plantain Fan and sent it to her.

Dingdong.

Princess Iron Fan received your red packet.

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Princess Iron Fan increased by 100. Intimacy level leveled up. Current intimacy level: Friendly.

“Thank you so much. You really are a great person.”

I got sent [the good person card](#)...

Ye Zichen smiled wryly, then typed out his response.

“Be careful not to lose it in the future. Not everyone would return this sort of divine item to you after picking it up.”

“You are right, I will pay attention in the future.” Princess Iron Fan replied politely.

Ye Zichen tried to type out another sentence...

Your message has been rejected!

F*ck you!

Ye Zichen stood up with his eyes wide open. She actually blocked me.

Originally, Ye Zichen had felt a bit of reluctance when returning the Plantain Fan, and had comforted himself by telling himself that he exchanged it for intimacy level..

But that girl's too f*cking pragmatic. She immediately blocked me after I sent the Plantain Fan back?

That woman...

Ye Zichen continuously retorted in his heart. At that moment, a figure suddenly appeared in front of Ye Zichen.

When Ye Zichen looked up, he saw an extremely beautiful woman in front of him. Meanwhile, Yang Jian, who was beside him, was completely dumbfounded, and his saliva was on the verge of dripping out.

“What are you so angry?”

“You are?” Ye Zichen knitted his eyebrows slightly. He had no recollection of the woman in front of him at all.

“You can’t tell anymore?” the woman smiled softly, then glanced at Ye Zichen’s chest with a giggle. “You are currently cursing a woman in your heart, right? That woman stole your treasure?”

“Qu Qitong!” Ye Zichen was stunned. Out of the people he knows, the only one who could read someone’s thoughts like that was Qu Qitong.

However, her face was full of scars when he last met her...

“Your face healed?”

“Yeah, I really have to thank the product you developed for it,” Qu Qitong smiled, and swept her fingers across her smooth cheek. “If it wasn’t for your product, I might still be unable to face others with my real face. You are my savior!”

“There’s no need to go to that extreme, right?” Ye Zichen smiled coyly.

At that moment, Yang Jian had a perverted look on his face, while he yanked Ye Zichen’s clothes stealthily and signaled Ye Zichen to introduce him.

“Hello Ye Zichen’s friend. Qu Qitong,” any small movements were obvious in front of the woman. She took the initiative and reached her hand out.

Seeing that, Yang Jian quickly wiped his hand on his shorts and

smiled, “Hello, hello. I’m his bro! You are so pretty, even more so than Chang’e, who’s in the heavens.”

“This gentleman really knows how to joke,” Qu Qitong covered her mouth and giggled. From the looks of it, she really liked Yang Jian’s flattery.

“I’m telling the truth!” Yang Jian chuckled idiotically. “You really are prettier than Chang’e.”

“You speak as if you have really seen Chang’e,” Qu Qitong replied with a soft smile.

Seeing that Yang Jian seemed to want to continue the conversation, Ye Zichen quickly covered his mouth.

That woman was no simple woman. If he let Yang Jian continue to blabber on...

She might be able to guess that Yang Jian is Erlang Shen. Even though that was rather shocking for mortals... This woman seemed different from other mortals.

“Oh?” Qu Qitong raised her eyebrows.

Ye Zichen’s heart raced when he saw her meaningful smile.

He did like dealing with beauties, but not with beauties who are

overly smart. One example of that was the Qu Qitong in front of him...

When he chatted with her, he felt as if he was stripped naked in front of her. It felt really weird.

“Don’t worry. I didn’t guess anything. Boss Ye, your friend is not normal!”

F*ck!

And you say that you didn’t guess anything?

“Haha, you can actually tell that I’m not normal. Can you feel that my...”

Slap.

Ye Zichen smacked Yang Jian’s head. You still want to show off in front of this woman at a time like this?

“Bro!”

“Don’t say anything!” Ye Zichen glared at him, then changed the topic with a chule. “The sky is great. The capital’s sky isn’t as bad as what the people from Bingcheng said.”

“Boss Ye, you changed the topic way too forcefully!” Qu Qitong said with a smile. “Why not ask me why I’m here instead?”

“Mm, why are you here?”

Ye Zichen did decide to use his shameless ability. Since you taught me what to ask, then I’ll ask.

“Seriously, you...” Qu Qitong shook her head slightly helplessly, then pointed at the car behind her. “Maintaining Beauty Corporation is going to set up a branch company in the capital. I’m going to the ribbon-cutting!”

“Establishing a branch? So fast?”

Maintaining Beauty Corporation had only been established for a bit more than a month. Ye Zichen was truly unable to imagine them setting up a branch in the capital in such a short amount of time.

“You really are laid back as the hands-off owner. Right now, it really is understating it by saying that Maintaining Beauty has its income measured in gold... You will definitely be awestruck after seeing the transaction amount,” Qu Qitong smiled, then pointed at the backseat of her car with raised eyebrows. “Do you want to go together? Director Xiao is there as well!”

Chapter 357 – Press Conference

When Ye Zichen arrived at Maintaining Beauty's branch office in Qu Qitong's car, he was completely shocked by the scene in front of him.

The size of the branch company was comparable to that of the headquarters. What's more, the capital was a place where plots of land were absurdly expensive, so the establishment of such a huge branch company on went on to show just how much money Maintaining Beauty Corporation had made in such a short time.

“Stop watching like an idiot. You are the owner of Maintaining Beauty. You acting like this will lose face for Yumei,” Qu Qitong smiled.

At that very moment, Li Shuang, who was dressed in formal clothing, walked towards them with a smile on her face.

“Director Qu, you came!”

“Yeah, I even brought you guys your owner,” Qu Qitong indicated towards Ye Zichen with a smile.

Upon hearing that, a bright smile surfaced on Li Shuang's face, “Boss!”

When they arrived within the building, they noticed that the lobby was filled with journalists, while plenty of successful-looking

people chit chatted within.

Xiao Yumei wore a pale blue ankle length dress and smiled accordingly as she chatted with the people around her.

“Yumei!” Qitong waved her hand. When the people around Xiao Yumei saw her, they all nodded with a smile, then left.

“Why did you come?” her words were clearly directed at Ye Zichen. Since we haven’t met for a long time, I can’t help but to burn with the fires of passion for her after seeing her again.

“What? Can’t I not be here? Much wow, you actually didn’t tell me even though you came to the capital,” Ye Zichen’s words were clearly of a slightly jealous tone.

Xiao Yumei smiled and pursed her lips, then raised her hand to pinch his cheek, “I had wanted to go and find you after finishing all the work to give you a surprise. Who would have thought that Lil’ Tong would actually bring you over.”

“What? So bringing him here is my wrong,” Qu Qitong raised her eyebrows and giggled.

The two women in front of Ye Zichen definitely had an amazing relationship. They clearly weren’t so close before I came to the capital. Just how long has it been and they already seem like good friends of many years...

As I expected, the feelings between women is not something that men can comprehend...

“Bro, why are the women by your side all so pretty!?” Yang Jian bumped Ye Zichen’s shoulder. “If this was in the Heavenly Court, then those animals will definitely explode. We’re good bros, right? Introduce one to me when you have time. It’s alright as long as she’s like them.”

...

Yang Jian’s demand was rather high. Even with what Ye Zichen had seen, there aren’t that many women on the level of Xiao Yumei’s beauty.

What’s more, so what if he introduced one to Yang Jian?

It wasn’t like Yang Jian would be able to stay in the Modern Realm for extended periods of time. Was she supposed to bring the woman back with him when he returns?

Even if he dared, the girl might be unwilling!

“Stop being an idiot, it’s better for you to look for the large families in the Heavenly Court. If you really feel like the women over there don’t look good without any makeup, then I’ll find time to give them a few makeup lessons...” As Ye Zichen replied, he suddenly stopped. Chang’e had said that the skin care products I sent was bad. Then what about cosmetics?

The Heavenly Court shouldn't be researched into that, right? When I saw it through Taibai Jinxing's phone, even the seven fairies faced everyone with their original look.

“Bro, what did you say just now?”

“Nothing, don't think about the girls in the Modern Realm, go and look for one in the Heavenly Court. When I have time, I'll definitely help the beauty of the girls in the Heavenly Court reach a new height!”

Makeup lessons!

Loving beauty was a woman's nature, so Ye Zichen could already imagine the level of popularity of the lesson when he starts it.

Perhaps, when I begin the lessons, even people at the level of... the Queen Mother and Avalokiteshvara would join.

Hearing that, Yang Jian raised his eyebrows, “Bro is what you said for real?”

There are no ugly women, only lazy women.

As long as the women in the Heavenly Court wants to be beautiful, then I can definitely help their beauty reach a new height.

Ye Zichen confidently patted Yang Jian's shoulder and smiled, "When have I ever lied to you?"

"Boss, Director Xiao, the press conference is ready," at that moment Li Shuang walked over with a smile.

Seeing her, Yang Jian bumped Ye Zichen's shoulder once again, as if he was saying that "this girl is pretty nice too", causing Ye Zichen to roll his eyes at him.

Meanwhile, Xiao Yumei also nodded with a smile towards Ye Zichen, "Since you came as well, then let's go together. I'll give you a chance to counter smack his face!"

"Me? Counter-smack his face?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows in confusion. He didn't understand what Xiao Yumei meant at all!

However, Qu Qitong giggled, "Why are you so surprised? Aren't you the owner of this corporation? Why such a huge reaction for attending a mere press conference? Young man... You need training!"

Qu Qitong's actions like that of an elder caused Ye Zichen to roll his eyes. However, he still smiled, "Then let's go."

At the scene of the press conference, all of the journalists in the room acted as if they were about to face a major enemy as they stood solemnly in the room. All of the people around them were

their enemies, but of course...

What they cared about more was their salary.

Their questions would only catch the attention of their audience if they asked rather sharp questions.

“Director Xiao’s here!” Someone shouted out.

All of the cameramen in the room continuously pressed their shutter buttons. It was the first time Ye Zichen experienced anything remotely like that, so he really couldn’t quite accept it in his heart.

“We have half an hour. Alright, let’s start!” Xiao Yumei sat down in her chair naturally, while Ye Zichen gulped and sat beside her like an obedient child, as he looked dumbly in front of him.

“Director Xiao, according to my information, Maintaining Beauty Corporation has only been established for forty days. How did you manage to cause it to increase its size so much in such a short amount of time?”

“I think this question should be answered by our Director Ye. Let me tell you guys, actually, I’m just an employee. The one beside me is the decision maker of our Maintaining Beauty Corporation!” Xiao Yumei indicate to the position beside her, causing all of the journalists in the room to feel like their heads exploded...

Maintaining Beauty Corporation's CEO Director Xiao is actually just an employee, and she actually had an employer. More importantly, that mysterious employer actually finally appeared.

All of the hearts of the journalists leaped as they all thought the same in their minds. Coming really was the right decision. I actually got some huge news.

“Director Ye, you...”

“Director Ye, you...”

“Director Ye, you...”

All the journalists in the room asked alongside each other, so Ye Zichen could not hear their questions properly at all. At that moment, his brain was completely blank, he never expected Xiao Yumei to just sell him out like that.

I'm just a normal university student. I don't know how to answer this sort of PR question at all!

Xiao Yumei was also a bit nervous. She was doing it for Ye Zichen's own good because she unintentionally found out something about Ye Zichen's past.

That person actually dared to smack my little man's face, so I'll get my little man to smack his face! I'll make him regret his decision back then!

This is just the first step, please don't fall in front of these veterans.

That man is watching in front of the television!

Chapter 358 – Let's Set A Small Target For Ourselves

Qu Qitong, who stood in the corner, snickered, then stealthily gave Xiao Yumei a thumbs-up.

This act is definitely merciless!

She had unintentionally uncovered from her investigation of Ye Zichen that a certain successful businessman with the surname of Yang had humiliated Ye Zichen using a large sum of money.

She had unintentionally revealed it to Xiao Yumei, and Xiao Yumei immediately said that she would make that man pray.

Qu Qitong never expected that the day of the press conference to be the day.

Qu Qitong knew very clearly that Xiao Yumei also need a chance to make the people of her own family regret, and the press conference was clearly the best opportunity. Despite that, she still chose to give the chance to Ye Zichen.

“Their relationship is so amazing, it's making me want to stick my foot in,” Qu Qitong smiled helplessly. “That makes me feel so guilty! Never mind, there are plenty of good men, I'll just look for one when the time calls for it. What a pity, I am rather interested in this kid.”

The swarm of questions caused Ye Zichen's head to buzz. At that moment, he even felt like he was seeing shadows when he looked at the journalists.

“Those that want to ask questions can ask one by one. If you all continue to act so disorderly, then this press conference will end early,” Xiao Yumei said in a powerful manner, causing the journalists to instantly stop without daring to utter a word.

However, all of them had the same question in their heart. From Ye Zichen's face, they had clearly seen nervousness earlier...

The owner of such a huge company would get nervous at a journalist's question?

Also, isn't he a bit too young?

After suppressing the journalists, Xiao Yumei secretly reached her hand over and gripped Ye Zichen's hand with a smile, “Don't be too nervous, just say some nice sounding words. The Yang guy is watching, don't allow him to look down on you. You are my man.”

Boom.

Ye Zichen felt like his brain shuddered. He looked at Xiao Yumei in shock and wondered how she knew about his...

When he saw Xiao Yumei's warm smile, he nodded heavily.

Then he turned towards the journalist. At that moment, he no longer had the frantic look he wore earlier.

He smiled at the journalists, "Let's begin! One question maximum per person!"

"Director Ye, you seem to be at the age of an university student?" the one who asked was a female journalist.

"Yes!"

"Then..."

"Sorry, you no longer have any question quotas. Next," Ye Zichen's words radiated with power. Hearing that, the female journalist stomped her feet and cursed herself for asking such simple leveled question.

"Director Ye. You actually managed to establish such a huge corporation at such a young age. Do you have any kind of shocking background?"

"If I had any shocking background, then do you think I would tell you?" Ye Zichen smiled. "I don't have any such background. I'm just a normal university student. The reason I managed to establish such a huge corporation is only because I have a good project on hand. You guys should also know that I have a few investors in my company!"

“Director Ye, then how did you run the company to cause Maintaining Beauty to expand so rapidly in such a short time, and finally achieve today’s size?”

“First of all, it is because our company’s product is excellent enough, allowing it to quickly take over the market. Then, we also set a target...” Ye Zichen smiled softly. “First, set a small target. For example, earn a hundred million in this month!”

The moment he said that, all the journalists were shocked.

A hundred million!

Small target!

Listen to what he said in such a simple tone. Earn a hundred million in a month!

The fact that the journalists turned terrifyingly quiet, caused Xiao Yumei to be surprised. Then, a beautiful smile bloomed on her face...

My little man is really mesmerizing!

In the corner, Qu Qitong also revealed an alluring smile, “How could I not get interested in a man like this... Small target. He really dared to say that!”

Ha...

Ye Zichen felt extremely good about himself when he saw that the journalists were stunned.

He had imagined the scene when he shows off countless times, but he felt like this time was the most realistic.

“Director Ye is truly young and capable. As expected of a company owner that established this sort of large corporations, he actually set such a target,” as the journalists came out of their shock one by one, one of the journalists smiled. “Then have you doubted about not being able to reach it before?”

“At the very least, setting a target was right. Even if we can’t earn a hundred million, then we’ll still be able to earn eighty million, or at least fifty million. Isn’t that great too? What’s more, this is only a small target, how are we supposed to set large targets if we can’t reach these small targets?” Ye Zichen smiled in response.

...

The journalists went speechless again. Even though they had interviewed companies many times, the owner of this one was the one that displayed their openness most.

“Director Ye, most people your age should be enjoying school life. What caused you to think about establishing a company and

turning it so huge?” Hearing the journalist’s question, Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows...

This guy is truly understanding!

He actually no longer wanted anything to do with Yang Zhen. However, since Xiao Yumei wanted to help him get even, then he could not let his woman’s goodwill down!

What’s more, he actually wanted to as well!

He did want to make that amazing man regret it.

“I have to thank a... kind of savior from back then! I was dating his daughter back then, but I didn’t have a background that could compare to up to his. He had used a million to make me leave his daughter! Ha, I’ll stop talking about it. I am rather thankful towards him right now. If he did not exist, then the I of today would not exist!”

“I would like to ask what is your relationship with Director Xiao? I can tell that you two seem to be very close!”

“Let me answer this question,” Xiao Yumei smiled. “Actually, I’m his pursuer. I love him very much... Alright, the press conference ends here!”

Xiao Yumei smiled, then left with her arms wrapped around Ye Zichen’s.

After they left the room, Qu Qitong also left the room and raised her thumb at Xiao Yumei, “Amazing, you actually dared to say that sort of thing in front of those people. Aren’t you worried about them going ham on that? Your words revealed a lot!”

“So what? I don’t care!” Xiao Yumei smiled, then hugged Ye Zichen’s arms tightly. “I’m not afraid of anything with him here.”

Ye Zichen could feel his heart move. He raised his hand to caress Xiao Yumei’s hair, and smiled warmly.

“I really can’t compare up to you!” Qu Qitong let out a sigh, then smiled meaningfully at Ye Zichen. “But Director Ye is pretty amazing. Let’s set a small target for ourselves, such as earning a hundred million. Wow, such a small target. This really is a small step for Director Ye, a large step for mankind!”

“It’s alright. I gotta maintain it!” Ye Zichen smiled.

Qu Qitong nodded in agreement, “Yeah... I just wonder how many people will find it hard to fall asleep tonight!”

Chapter 359 – Chain Reaction

Ye Zichen suddenly raised his eyebrows as he looked at the smile on Qu Qitong's face.

“What are you looking me like that for? Alright, I admit that I told Yumei that. Boss Ye, you can't cancel my dealership,” Qu Qitong said in a slightly spoiled manner.

Seeing that, Yang Jian gulped. The girls here are so cute. If it wasn't because I still have work in the Heavenly Court, I might really just stay in this lower realm.

“I'm not that petty,” Ye Zichen smiled.

A moving smile surfaced on Qu Qitong's delicate face instantly, “That's great. Hehe... The press conference has ended. Then... Big boss who set up a little target, can you treat us to a meal!”

“Does a big boss like you require me to treat you?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“No matter how big of a boss I am, it isn't comparable to your small target of a hundred million!” Qu Qitong looked at him meaningfully.

This phrase was just for me act cockily, I didn't expect this woman to use it to mock me. Thus, in order to shut her mouth, Ye Zichen rolled his eyes in annoyance, “Fine, fine, fine, you choose

the place!”

“Then let’s go, Boss Ye!”

What Ye Zichen did not know was that his small target had already been widespread through the net. The number of replies in threads about him in various major forums already surpassed a hundred thousand, while he even gained several new titles...

Dominating CEO!

National Hubby!

National Love Rival!

What’s more, people even found his Weibo, causing his number of fans to soar up into the millions.

However, that was only the beginning.

Within a large courtyard house, a report about Maintaining Beauty Corporation’s press conference fell into the middle-aged man’s ear when he turned to the economic channel.

He was extremely curious about that corporation...

Until he saw that man.

“Ye Zichen!”

He knitted his eyebrows tightly together. When Xiao Yumei said that Ye Zichen was the true owner of Maintaining Beauty Corporation...

His face stiffened.

“He had used a million to make me leave his daughter...”

“Hehe...”

Slam.

The middle-aged man turned off the television while incomparable rage surfaced on his face. He used his hands break the remote controller in his hands, as well as the tea table, and the television...

He broke everything that he saw.

“Boss!”

The bodyguard rushed in from the outside, then blanked out for a moment when he saw the state of the room.

The man looked up and roared at the bodyguard, “F*-F*ck off!”

The bodyguard left in terror, while the man picked up a box of cigarette from the ground and took one out to hold in his mouth.

“Ye Zichen... Did you deliberately say it for me?”

At the same time, in the female dormitory of a certain university.

A slightly pretty girl held the Maintaining Beauty skin care products she bought after working for a month and lining up for several hours.

Just as she sat down on the bed, her roommates waved towards her, “Yao Yue, come, come. Look, is this person your boyfriend?”

The girl walked over in confusion, and saw an eye-catching title...

Maintaining Corporation’s Hidden Boss Has Spoken: A small target – A hundred million!

The accompanying photo below was the photo of Ye Zichen answering naturally in the press conference. She subconsciously snatched the mouse over, and read the text below, then turned to the skin-care products that she treasured...

“Yao Yue, he’s your boyfriend, right! No wonder you weren’t

staying in the dorm recently. Ai, Dominating CEO! Set a small target, and earn a hundred million first. Wow... If you become a famous person's wife, then don't forget about us!" the girl's roommates smiled flatteringly.

Yao Yue released her mouse dumbly, and sat onto her bed...

"Yao Yue, my dad also works in cosmetics and skin-care products. Can you get your boyfriend to meet him?" one of the girls asked. That girl's family background was rather wealthy. Previously, she had acted high and mighty with everyone in the dorm, and her manner of speaking was something that had never been seen before.

"He's rather busy recently. Wait till he has time!" Yao Yue smiled wryly.

The girl nodded, "True, it's normal for big bosses like him to be busy. Please help me out when he's less busy!"

With that, the girl took out an unused limited edition LV bag from the cabinet beside her bed. Yao Yue had already set her eyes on the bag several months ago, but she hesitated to buy it due to it being too expensive...

"Here, for you."

Yao Yue received the bag over in a flattered manner, while the girl spoke up again, "Promise, okay? You definitely have to

mention my dad with your boyfriend.”

“O-Okay!” Yao Yue had wanted to come clean, but when the bag and her vanity was placed in front of her, she chose to let the misunderstanding continue on!

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen did not know such chain reactions would occur just because of a single sentence he said. At that instant, he was within a hotel in the capital and answering toasts in a slightly troubled manner.

Wow, this woman, Qu Qitong, is really capable at drinking.

If it wasn't for Ye Zichen secretly using celestial spiritual energy to remove all the alcohol from his body, the woman might have already got him drunk.

“Boss Ye, you can seriously drink!” Qu Qitong raised her thumb, then lifted another glass of liquor with a high alcoholic concentration over.

“What's the toast for this time?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows helplessly. Qu Qitong managed to find something to toast for every single time, and she had pretty much mentioned everything already.

“A toast to your drinking capabilities!”

Ye Zichen smiled wryly and bumped his glass against hers, then

gulped down the liquor, only to find out that the woman had raised her wine glass once again.

“If you continue like this, then I will suspect you of trying to get me drunk so that you can act out your ulterior motives!”

“Boss Ye is really funny. I have no way of taking advantage of you with Director Xiao here!” Qu Qitong replied with a faint smile, while silently thinking to herself...

You really guessed it right. I do want to get you drunk!

But why is he so capable at drinking?

“Don’t mind me. If Director Qu wants to, then just take him home tonight,” Xiao Yumei smiled.

Meanwhile, Yang Jian, who sat on the same table, silently retorted.

Why not take me home tonight!?

“Really?” Qu Qitong’s eyes lit up. “Director Xiao is willing?”

“Why wouldn’t I be willing? Worst come to worst, I’ll just get another sister,” Xiao Yumei replied generously.

However, Ye Zichen felt rather troubled after hearing that. Just what are you guys talking about. If you guys keep talking like that, then I actually might get given away...

However, from the looks of Qu Qitong, it seems like she really does want to...

At that moment, Ye Zichen's phone on the table rang. During this period of time, his calls and messages have pretty much been endless, since most of them teased him for his dominating aura...

Ye Zichen glanced at the caller ID.

Gu Tian!

Why's this guy calling me. According to my understanding of him, he isn't that interested in these matters.

Ye Zichen picked up the call with knitted eyebrows, then heard Gu Tian shout, "Big Brother Ye, come to the Gu household. I can't manage it anymore!"

Chapter 360 – Shifting the Blame

At the Gu household.

The huge manor was filled with people, many of which hold guns, knives or metal bats, making it seem like they were about to start fighting at any moment.

“Family Heads of various clans, what are you guys doing here?” the Gu family head looked at the people in front of him, while the new Gu family head, Gu Tian, stood beside him. Behind them were some of the Gu family’s tribesmen and guest chamberlains, but due to the incident that happened on the day of the junior family head election, the overall strength of the Gu family was severely weakened.

Thus, there weren’t a lot of people that came out to meet the enemies, making it seem like they were unable to win in a battle.

“Gu Hai, we hidden families had always been like the well and the river, but your family actually assassinated the elites of our various families... Shouldn’t you give us an explanation?”

“Hehe, what explanation? I think the Gu family is just getting ambitious, and want to weak us various clans in order to continue being the leader!” other family heads began to speak up.

At the same time, the beautiful woman standing at the very front also questioned, “Gu family head, is what they said correct?”

“Zhuge family head, how are we supposed to accept the crimes you have pinned on us! All families know that we have recently been electing our junior family head, so how are we supposed to assassinated your elites?” Gu Hai knitted his eyebrows tightly together, then laughed coldly. “I think that... You guys saw that the Gu family’s strength has weakened, and so wanted to take this chance to engulf us whole, right! A starved camel is still larger than a horse, are you guys not worried about being too stuffed?”

“Gu Hai, have you no shame?” asked a scar-faced middle-aged man.

“Shangguan Xiong, don’t think that I don’t know you eyeing the position of the Gu family for a long time. The reason that all these families are here is because you had continuously blamed us, the Gu family, for everything. Hehe... You want to accuse the Gu family of assassinating your elites? Show me your proof!” a cold smile covered Gu Hai’s face.

All of the other family heads instantly hesitated.

Proof?

They didn’t have any.

However, their elites had indeed been killed. They had researched it for several days, and the conclusion they managed to come to was that someone in the Gu family did it.

The reason they came together was to force the Gu family to admit it!

“If you want proof? I’ve got it!” all of a sudden, a playful laughter sounded out in everyone’s ear.

“Who!”

“Gu Li!” a thin figure slowly entered everyone’s sight. Gu Li smiled faintly and swept his gaze across everyone’s faces, “Gu family, Gu Li!”

“How is it you!

Both Gu Tian and the rest of the Gu tribesmen were shocked. That day...

They had saw Gu Li’s head get chopped off by a demon with their own eyes.

“Hehe, are you very surprised to see me?” Gu Li smiled playfully, then bowed towards the other family heads. “Family Heads, this kid is originally Gu Li of the Gu family. However, the Gu family was unfair during the junior family head election, and wanted to kill me off... However, I did not die despite everything.”

“Gu Li!” Gu Tian knitted his eyebrows and roared.

Gu Li mockingly picked his ears, “What are you shouting for? You want to show off how loud you are? What? You’re pissed that you didn’t kill me? What a good brother!”

“Brat, you said that you have the proof of the Gu family assassinating our clans’ elites?” Shuangguang Xiong frowned.

Gu Li nodded with a smile, “I had wanted to hide it for the Gu family, but since they were unjust towards me, they should not blame me for doing the same!”

With that, he took out a USB from his pocket and a laptop from his backpack.

“Family heads, please watch!”

The family heads hesitated and received the laptop and clicked open the video file within the USB...

“Oh yeah, how are the things I got you to do going?”

“It’s already being done. The tribesmen of three of the hidden families have already been killed by is. We have their souls right now...”

“Very good. Make sure that the blame is shifted onto my brothers. Understood?”

“Understood!”

One of the two people involved in the video was not seen, and his voice was edited, but the other person was Hua Li, who stood beside Gu Tian.

The video was very short, but after the video ended, all the family heads looked towards Hua Li murderously.

“As everyone knows, Hua Li is the most trusted person beside my Tian-ge. Even though the other person in the video was not shown, I believe everyone here are intelligence. I can reveal that this video was taken threw a camera I installed at Gu Tian’s place. As for why I did so... It was the junior family head election a while back, so I’m sure you family heads can understand.”

The beautiful Zhuge woman also smiled, “Gu family head, I think everything has come to light!”

“Impossible, I have never plotted to assassinate the elites of these various families,” Gu Tian frowned.

“It isn’t you, but the old man beside you must have been involved, right?” the scar-faced Shuangguan Xiong sneered.

Gu Tian immediately shook his head, “That’s impossible as well. Elder Hua is the person closest to me. It’s impossible for him to do anything that would betray me!”

Hearing that, Gu Hai's expression drastically changed. He had already made up his mind to give up Hua Li, but Gu Tian's reply clearly tied the two together.

Gu Li's smile bloomed even more.

My idiot older brother, you are truly idiotic to the point of being cute.

"This is impossible, that's impossible... Lad, do you think we family heads are stupid?" Shangguan Xiong snorted with a cold gaze. "Gu Hai, hand this brat and the old man beside him to us, then hand over fifty percent of the Gu family's resources. Then we'll leave it at that!"

All of the surrounding family heads nodded. Rage surfaced on Gu Hai's old face. He clenched his fist and roared, "Shangguan Xiong, wishful thinking! Heh, if you want to engulf us, the Gu family, we'll at least make you lose a few teeth! Gu tribesmen, prepare to fight!"

"Gu Hai, just why are you doing this!" The Zhuge woman shook her head sadly, then turned to the people behind her. "Zhuge family members, do not go up... If they don't make a move against us, then we'll just watch!"

"Zhuge family head..." Shangguan Xiong's expression drastically changed.

The woman merely smiled in response, “We, the Zhuge family had no losses. Before coming here, I did not promise to deal with the Gu family with you guys. Sorry, but we, the Zhuge family is not getting involved in this mess.”

“Thank you, Zhuge family head!” Gu Hai cupped his hands towards the woman, while solemnity covered his old face.

A powerful spiritual pressure radiated out from his body!

“Come!”

“Zhuge Hong, wow...” Shangguan Xiong stepped forward furiously, while the aura around him fought back against Gu Hai’s.

“Do it!” as Shangguan Hong roared, the people of the other families all rushed towards the Gu family.

At that very moment, a blinding golden light landed in the middle of them all like a meteor, while a cold voice shouted from within the light, “Those who step forward. Die!”

Chapter 361 – Trespasser, Die!

The scene shocked the surrounding people a lot. Just when they pondered about who the owner of the voice was...

“Bro, was our entrance awesome?”

“Not bad, not bad. It’s rather amazing. I’ll give you full marks for the special effects!” a chuckle sounded out in the blinding white light. Then, a shimmering line appeared ten meters in front of the various family heads.

“Those that pass this line, die!”

“So evasive. Laozi doesn’t believe that you can kill laozi!” a man behind Shangguan Xiong walked past.

Bang.

An afterimage appeared, and before everyone saw who took action, the man fell on the ground, while blood continuously flowed out of this mouth.

“You...” Shangguan Xiong knitted his eyebrows tightly together. The person who was sent flying was one of his subordinates.

“You didn’t understand what I said, right? I said that anyone who passes the line will die. He passed the line!” a playful voice

was heard from the golden light.

All of the family heads raised their eyebrows worriedly, and did not dare to move forward.

“I wonder who you are? This is the grudge between us hidden families. It would be for the best if you don’t interfere.”

“So what if I interfere?”

Then, the gold light faded.

Ye Zichen stood in front of the various family heads with a faint smile, while the muscular Yang Jian stood beside him.

“Zichen-ge.”

“Big Brother Ye!”

Two voices sounded out. Ye Zichen looked up and saw that aside from Gu Tian, a childish figure opposite him also ran out.

“Zhuge Kongming!”

A hint of joy surfaced on Zhuge Kongming’s face, but he immediately stopped just as he was about to trespass the line. He scratched his head, “I think I won’t go over!”

“Did you, the Zhuge family, come to launch a crusade against the Gu family as well?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

Zhuge Hong walked out, “Mr. Ye, there is no need to worry. The Zhuge family did not take part.”

Ye Zichen was momentarily stunned when he saw the woman. Isn't this the auntie who came that day to take Zhuge Kongming back?

Even though I'm already of the Earth Immortal Level, I'm still unable to walk in the sky, speak without moving my mouth, or phase through walls like she did back then...

When he thought about the situation back then, Ye Zichen immediately felt troubled.

“Mm, alright. Rest a bit, I'll introduce someone to you guys later!” with that, he turned towards Gu Tian. “Alright, there'll be no problem with me here. Go over there and watch the show!”

Gu Tian immediately left happily. As he did saw, Ye Zichen set his gaze upon Gu Li, “You're not dead?”

Ye Zichen had indeed seen Gu Li's head get chopped off by Qiu Yin.

I didn't think that this brat would still be alive.

“How is that possible? However, my grudge towards you... brought me back to life,” Gu Li squinted his eyes closely. Even with his endurance, he was unable to completely suppress his anger when he saw Ye Zichen.

If it wasn't for him, I should be the Gu family's junior family head right now.

I might even be the family head.

The Gu family should have been ruled by me. Women, fortune, resources, I should be in control of everything. But Ye Zichen's appearance changed all that!

“Zeze,” Ye Zichen chuckled. Then, he ignored Gu Li and spoke towards Shangguan Xiong and the rest of the family heads. “You family heads don't seem particularly bright. Don't you know that you're being used by this brat? Or, perhaps, all you guys needed was actually an opportunity which allows you to take over the Gu family?”

At that moment, the none of the family heads, including Shangguan Xiong, did not dare to speak recklessly.

They had never seen the young man in front of him, but the fact that two hidden families were on good terms with him, while the muscular man beside the guy was strong to the point that they

could not detect his level...

“We just want an explanation...”

“An explanation,” Ye Zichen nodded with a smile. “Then I’ll give you one!”

Zoom.

He disappeared in the blink of an eye, and put his hand around Gu Li’s neck.

“He is the source of everything. I’ll kill him and treat it as the resolution for all you families.”

Ye Zichen gradually applied more force into his hands, but Gu Li maintained his calm and collected expression.

“You’re not afraid of death?” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes.

Gu Li smiled, “I am, I’m terrified to no end. But... Do you think that he’s afraid of death?”

“Elder Hua, what are you doing!” An exclaim suddenly sounded out behind him. Ye Zichen turned back in shock and saw that Hua Li had his hand around Gu Tian’s throat, while a look of craziness covered his ancient face.

“Let Gu Li go!”

“Elder... Hua,” Gu Tian grabbed at Hua Li’s arm in an attempt to make him let go. His entire face had already turned bright red from the suffocation, while he continuously kicked his legs and struggled.

“Hua Li!”

“Yang Jian!”

Gu Hai roared in anger, while Ye Zichen also called out.

However, Hua Li merely put more force into his hand, “I know you guys have experts, how about finding out if this old man can kill Gu Tian first, or if you guys can kill me first!”

The Gu family members instantly stopped moving forwards, while Ye Zichen also shook his head towards Yang Jian, “Let Gu Tian go, I can pretend like nothing has happened.”

“Hehe... Let Gu Li go first!” as Hua Li spoke, he merely tightened his hand around Gu Tian’s neck even more.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and let go...

Bang.

Gu Li fell onto the floor, while he held his neck and coughed intensely.

Hua Li also looked threateningly at everyone, while he continued to grip Gu Tian's neck as he walked over to Gu Li.

"Hua Li, good job," Gu Li smiled, then looked at Ye Zichen provokingly.

Ye Zichen shouted towards Hua Li, "Now you can let Gu Tian go, right? Do not challenge my patience or my bottom line!"

"Stop bullshitting!" Hua Li glared, then turned to Gu LI. "I have already done what you asked. Can you return my granddaughter to me now!?"

"You want your granddaughter? Then help me do one last thing!"

"Say it!"

"Kill Gu Tian!"

Gu Li's cold tone caused the entire Gu family to be enraged, while Ye Zichen also roared out in anger with trembling shoulders, "Hua Li, you dare!?"

"Don't mind their threats. Let me ask you. Do you want your

granddaughter?” Gu Li smiled.

A struggle instantly covered Hua Li’s ancient face.

“Elder Hua, kill me!” contrary to everyone’s expectations, Gu Tian actually spoke up. “If it wasn’t for you, I might have died ten-odd years ago already. Just treat it as me returning this life to you.”

“Young Master Lil’ Tian!” the hand Hua Li had already Gu Tian’s throat trembled, causing Gu Li’s face to be covered with a sinister smile.

“Wow, what a moving moment! However, I despite this sort of scenes,” with that, he said coldly. “Hua Li, if you still want your granddaughter to return to your side, then kill him!”

Chapter 362 – Escape

Both the hearts of the Gu family and Ye Zichen begun to worry as they stared straight at Hua Li.

“What are you hesitating for. Kill him!” Gu Li roared angrily, causing the struggle in Hua Li’s eyes to become even more apparent.

All of a sudden, his granddaughter’s cute look appeared in his mind.

“Bad grandpa, you didn’t play with me!”

“Grandpa, look at the cutie teddy I bought for you! Hehe!”

“Grandpa...”

Past memories filled Hua Li’s mind...

“Sorry, Young Master Lil’ Tian!” Hua Li’s gaze turned sharp. Gu Tian also smiled with a shake of his head, and didn’t say anything as if he could feel the change in Hua Li.

Hua Li used his right hand to pierce Gu Tian’s chest, causing endless blood to flow out.

“Sorry!” Hua Li apologized, then quickly retracted his hand and

pushed Gu Tian by his shoulder...

Bang.

“I... Killed him. Give me back my granddaughter,” Hua Li’s hand was covered in blood as he stared straight at Gu Li.

However, Gu Li suddenly started to laugh maniacally, “Hua Li, Hua Li, you are so foolish!”

“What do you mean?” Hua Li frowned.

Gu Li playfully took out a letter and handed it over, “You wouldn’t be able to see your granddaughter anymore, but she left this letter for you...”

Hua Li received the letter, then after reading the words, his shoulders and lips started to tremble intensely.

“Hua Li, your granddaughter was truly great towards you. I threatened her and said that if she didn’t listen to what I said, then I would kill you. She actually believed me! I’ll be honest, your granddaughter is pretty nice! I still have plenty of commemorative photos of her... Do you want to have a look? Zeze, her slutty look truly makes me reminiscent,” Gu Li sneered playfully.

Hua Li looked up with his bloodshot eyes, “Gu Li, I’m going to make you pay!”

Bang!

“F*ck you!” Gu Li kicked Hua Li to the ground, then pierced Hua Li’s chest with his hand without any hesitation. “You want me to pay? Go and reunite with your granddaughter in the realm of the dead!”

Moments before Hua Li died, his face was covered with blatant rage, yet, when he looked towards Gu Tian...

“Little young master, fortunately, I didn’t completely trust him!”

Then, Hua Li tilted, and he fell onto the floor.

At that moment, the family heads of the other families also ran over. If they were unable to see what was going on, then they really would have been retards.

“Gu Li, I’m going to make you pay for the lives of our family’s elites!”

“Zeze, so many people want me to pay. How could I manage to pay for so much with my life?” Gu Li suddenly smiled playfully, then snorted at Ye Zichen. “The vendetta between us will not be over so easily!”

“Yang Jian, get him!” Ye Zichen roared. Yang Jian instantly

pushed his foot against the ground, and shot out at Gu Li like a cannonball, while the ground cracked.

“Everyone, bye bye!” Gu Li smiled playfully, then completely disappeared.

Neither the various families nor Yang Jian were able to catch him.

Seeing that, Zhuge Hong also spoke out, “He already left!”

At that moment...

“Cough, cough...” the sound of a faint cough sounded out. Ye Zichen looked over at the source of the sound, and saw Gu Tian, who had a completely pale face, crawl up from the ground.

“Elder Hua I knew it. How could you betray me for real.”

Gu Tian clenched the hole in his left chest. If he was a normal person, then he would have already been dead, but Gu Tian was slightly special in that his heart grew more towards the right side.

Despite that, a hole in his chest was no small wound, so every time he coughed, plenty of blood would flow out from his mouth.

“Yang Jian, do you have any healing pills or medicine?”

“Yep!” Yang Jian took out a jade vial, which contained a pale blue pill within. “I won this from Old Lord Taishang. It is a level nine celestial pill. It can save him as long as he still have a single breath remaining within him!”

“Give it to me!” Ye Zichen reached out his hand, then tried to stuff the pill in Gu Tian’s mouth.

“If you want him to die, then give it to him!” Zhuge Hong walked over slowly.

Ye Zichen knitted his eyebrows, “What do you mean by this!?”

“Gu Tian is just in the early stage of the spiritual body level. You can already imagine what the results will be like when you let him take something that even Sky Immortals treat as a huge source of nourishment!”

“Then what do you think should be done!”

Zhuge Hong took out a huge black pill from her pocket. Seeing that, Ye Zichen was rather stunned...

Because it was the recovery pill that Maintaining Beauty was providing for the military.

“Giving him this is enough!”

Zhuge Hong popped the pill into Gu Tian's mouth, then emitted a faint light in the palm of her hand that she used to pat Gu Tian on the back.

After Gu Tian swallowed the pill, the color on his face turned for the better. The hole on his chest begun to gradually close, and even though it closed very slowly, it was indeed healing.

After doing all that, she stood up and raised her eyebrows at Gu Hai, "Gu Family Head, we, the Zhuge family, is interested in forging an alliance with the Gu family. I wonder what is the Gu Family Head's take on it?"

"I am extremely willing!" Gu Hai smiled softly. Gaining an ally like the Zhuge family was only of benefits towards the Gu family.

Then, Zhuge Kong also turned towards Shangguan Xiong and co. with a shrug, "The truth has come to light. The elites of your families were killed by Hua Li and Gu Li's plot. Gu Li has already passed on, and Gu Li is no longer part of the Gu family. Various family heads, please return. If you want to take revenge, then go and find Gu Li! If you still want to cause trouble for the Gu family, then prepare to receive the Gu family and the Zhuge family's wrath!"

"Heh!" Shangguan Xiong snorted coldly. "Let's go!"

Everyone in the surroundings all turned around to leave.

At that moment, Gu Hai also laughed coldly with a sullen look, “Take away the corpse of your dead clansman. The Gu family has no obligation to clean up after you!”

“Gu Hai, don’t get too full of yourself!”

Shangguang Xiong sent two clansmen to carry the corpse away, then began to leave. At the same time, everyone from the Gu family, who had been extremely tense until that moment, let out a long sigh of relief, while plenty of them directly sat limply onto the ground...

No one laughed at them when they saw that. The situation earlier was indeed far too dangerous!

“Alright, the unrelated people have all left, isn’t it time for us to talk properly about matters?” Zhuge Hong smiled at Ye Zichen, who watched Gu Tian leave. “Mr. Ye had said that you want to introduce someone to the Zhuge family. I wonder if the person you’re talking about... Is this gentleman over here?”

“Yeah, I heard Big Brother Ye call him Yang Jian!” Zhuge Kongming also skipped over and looked at Yang Jian with an admiring look. “Is he Erlang Shen Yang Jian?”

Chapter 363-The Reason Why Divinity Couldn't Descend

Yang Jian, the war god of the Heavenly Court.

He was an incomparable existence for a hidden family like theirs.

Seeing Zhuge Kongming's slightly curious and admiring gaze, Yang Jian raised his eyebrows proudly, "Little fellow, you're right. Laozi is the number one war god of the Heavenly Court, Yang Jian!"

The title of war god caused Ye Zichen to roll his eyes. If I remember correctly, he was beaten up by the monkey not so long ago.

"Really?" Zhuge Kongming asked with blinking eyes.

Zoom.

Yang Jian's body flashed. When he appeared in front of everyone once again, a silver armor had already been dressed on his body, while his lance rested in his hands.

"Now you should believe me right? I only just descended recently. If your family worships me, then you should have seen it before," Yang Jian smiled proudly. However, the moment he said that, he felt a hint of doubt in the eyes of the surrounding people.

“What are you guys looking at me like this for? Laozi doesn’t have any spare effort to lie to you guys! If you don’t believe me, then you can ask my bro!”

“No, no, no, great deity, we’re just wondering if you have truly let your divinity descend recently?” Gu Hai said carefully.

Yang Jian immediately nodded, “Of course, I care about my fans a lot. I have lived a troubled... Ahem, basically, I definitely care a lot about my worshippers. I normally descend my divinity about one every half a month!”

“But...” Gu Hai raised his eyebrows. “We haven’t seen the descension of your divinity for a hundred years. It isn’t just you, we haven’t seen the descension of any great deities from neither the Heavenly Court nor the Underworld.”

“How’s that possible!” Yang Jian was stunned.

He had been in poverty in the Heavenly Court for far too long, and relied on his worshippers to contribute either cultivation experience or reputation for him.

During his worst times, he had even descended his divinity every single day.

Yet, someone actually said that he had not done so, and they didn’t see the others from the Heavenly Court or the Underworld do so either.

“Gu Family Head is right. We hidden families haven’t seen the descension of any divinity for nearly a hundred years,” Zhuge Hong also spoke up calmly.

When he heard that, Ye Zichen felt like there was more to the woman than what she displayed.

She would remain composed at any time. On the other hand, even though Gu Hai was also the family head of a large family, they lowered their own status a lot when they saw Erlang Shen.

Even when they met people like the Black Impermanence intern, he also respected the person a lot, and the hierarchy was very clear.

Ye Zichen never felt that from Zhuge Hong.

It was as if these people from the Heavenly Court and the Underworld merely held an equal status to her, or perhaps, they held a lower one...

Yang Jian didn’t mind Zhuge Hong’s tone as he was a rather laidback person. All he thought about at that moment was why wasn’t any descension of divinity.

F*ck, each divinity descent cost quite a lot...

“Do you have any altars worshipping me here?” Yang Jian frowned.

Gu Hai immediately nodded, “We naturally do, you...”

“Take me there!” Yang Jian squinted his eyes and replied. He wanted to see just why did his divinity not descend. It was really for what he had spent before, since he was rich now and didn’t lack all the money spent before.

However, he didn’t want his number of fans to drop.

The divinity of a deity in the Heavenly Court was directly related to the number of their worshippers. If this continues, and his number of worshippers continued to drop, then even if he reaches the Sky Immortal level, he would only have the empty husk of one, and would not be able to use his strong prowess.

After a while, the Gu family head brought the rather important people to the altar.

Yang Jian’s statue laid on top of the altar. The interiors of the hall itself was completely clean, while the smell of incense filled the place, and three incense sticks burned on the incense burner.

“Great deity, look... I send someone to clean it approximately every three hours!”

Yet, Yang Jian’s gaze turned terrifyingly dark the moment he

entered the hall.

Creak.

Yang Jian clenched his fist tightly.

Seeing that, Gu Hai asked frantically, “Great deity, is there something wrong with the arrangement causing you to be unhappy?”

“Hehe...” a cold chuckle sounded out from Yang Jian’s mouth, as he pierced his war lance towards the statue.

“Great deity!” Gu Hai revealed a look of shock, while Zhuge Hong’s expression finally changed.

Destroying the statue of one’s altar was a huge crime. Just what caused him to be so furious?

Bang.

The stone statue shattered.

A black mist flew out from the statue, while mist swirled around the hall.

“Yang Jian, impressive, you actually noticed. Zeze, so pitiful,

such frequent divinity descension were all absorbed by this sovereign.”

“Demon!” Yang Jian clenched his teeth. No wonder our worshippers were unable to see the descension of our divinity, it was probably cut off by this guy. “Stay here!”

A blinding hold light shot out from Yang Jian’s third eye, causing the mist to gradually turn pale, until it eventually disappeared from the hall. However, the playful laughter of the mist still echoed within, “So what if you make me stay? All of the hidden families of the Modern Realm have traces of this sovereign. Can you make us all stay?”

“At least you met laozi here!”

Bang.

Yang Jian stabbed his lance into the ground, and grabbed at the mist with his bare hands, causing a batch of black hair to appear in his hands.

Sssss.

A golden flame burnt the hair to crisp, while a playful cold laugh sounded out in the hall once again, “You’re pretty resolute. You actually directly destroyed it. I thought you will actually try to regain your lost divinity descension! Alright, since you noticed this sovereign, then there is no need for this sovereign to stay here

anymore. This sovereign will take away all my incarnations from the other families. Of course... If you don't believe me, you can try going around all the families."

"Demon do you want to start a war with the Heavenly Court by doing this!?" Yang Jian replied resolutely, while he smashed his lance against the ground loudly.

"War? Does the Heavenly Court even have that right?" the demon mocked with clear disdain in his voice. "Back when the Great War of Gods and Demons, who knows where the Heavenly Court was!"

"That's cuz laozi wasn't there!" Yang Jian looked up proudly and pointed his lance at the sky. "Laozi will beat up every single one of you demons I meet. If laozi had been there back then, then you demons might actually be extinct now!"

"Stop lying," the demon said in disdain. "With your level, back when we demons were at our peak, even the weakest soldiers could squish you to death!"

...

Hearing that, shock filled Ye Zichen's face.

The demons were actually so strong back then. No matter what, Yang Jian was at the complete stage of the Human Immortal level...

Weakest soldier!

Just what was the Great War of Gods and Demons like?

“Hehe...” Yang Jian merely chuckled indifferently. He grabbed hold of his lance, which was stuck in the ground, and opened his third eye.

A powerful aura begun to radiate from his body...

“Fight me if you don’t submit it! Don’t argue if you can fight!”

Chapter 364 – I Will Protect This Land

An intense feeling spread out within the hall.

Gu Hai and co. subconsciously made way in the middle of the hall in order for the great deity to fight to his best potential.

However, the demon smiled playfully, “This sovereign’s main body is in closed cultivation right now. This sovereign has noted your challenge.”

Thus, the remaining black mist flew out of the hall.

Yang Jian snorted and cursed in disdain, “Grandson. Closed cultivation? If you really dared to fight, then laozi will beat you up until you’re an infant!”

Seeing that the fight wasn’t going to happen, everyone returned to Yang Jian’s side.

As Gu Hai looked at the shattered statue on the ground, he couldn’t help but raise his eyebrows, “Great deity, this statue...”

“Reconstruct one when you find time,” Yang Jian glanced at his statue. It was the first time he actually smashed his own statue.

“Do we have to go to the other families?” Zhuge Hong asked. “That demon seems to have said that he has been to all the families

in the Modern Realm.”

“Of course, laozi doesn’t trust what the demon said!”

Three days passed by in the blink of an eye.

Yang Jian did not lay idle during these days. He followed Zhuge Hong around to all the different families, and directly smashed the statues they used for worship without identifying himself.

During so, he saw several families that worships the monkey, and thus he smashed those statues to dust.

In his words, it was because “Since I can’t beat the monkey now, I feel good after letting off steam using his statue”.

At a certain high-class graveyard in the capital, there was a gravestone that costed as much as the most expensive apartment in the city.

As the autumn rain fell, Gu Tian held a bouquet of white flowers and a black umbrella as he stood in front of Hua Li’s gaze. His face carried hints of solemnity as he looked at the kind smile on the black and white photo.

“Even at the very end, Elder Hua did not betray me,” Gu Tian smiled. “During the day of the junior family head election, the only person that didn’t vote for Gu Li was Elder Hua, who voted for me.”

Ye Zichen patted his shoulders and comforted him, “The dead have already passed on, there is no need to mind so much now.”

“But I’m discontent with everything,” Gu Tian clenched his fist tightly, while a furious expression covered his face. “If it wasn’t for Gu Li... I was truly blind, I actually trusted his damn words!”

“I will not let that brat go,” Ye Zichen’s gaze gradually turned cold. Then, he smiled helplessly. “Of course, it doesn’t seem like he will let me go.”

“Zichen-ge, sorry!” Gu Tian suddenly put down his umbrella and allowed the rain to drench his clothing, as he gave Ye Zichen a deep bow.

“What are you doing!” Ye Zichen quickly handed his own umbrella over.

Gu Tian smiled wryly, “If it wasn’t for me, you wouldn’t have gotten wrapped up in all this!”

It seems like he feels like he is at fault for the grudge Gu Li has against me.

Ye Zichen shook his head with a smile and patted his shoulder, “Don’t be dumb, kid. Even if it wasn’t for you, some trouble will still come and find me. After all, that’s what my fate is like!”

Ye Zichen understood clearly in his heart that he most likely got involved with the demons was because he was the reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor.

It might even be that the demons are a fated tribulation in his life.

However, he did not know how many tribulations he has to pass through to live a peaceful life, nor did he know how many tribulations he had already passed through.

All he knew was that...

Trouble never stopped.

“You are now the Gu family’s family head. You have to manage the Gu family well, and make it flourish. That’s what you should be thinking about.”

“Actually... Zichen-ge, you are the actual family head of the Gu family,” Gu Tian looked up with a wryly smile. “Grandpa told me that he had promised Auntie before that her child would be the future Gu family head!”

“Don’t!” Ye Zichen raised his hand frantically. “Don’t bring this up. I’ll live a calm normal person’s life, and leave the Gu family in your hands. What’s more, isn’t it the same which of us is in charge?”

“Mhmm, Big Brother!” Gu Tian nodded with force.

At that moment, a ray of light fell down from the sky.

Seeing that light, Ye Zichen knew that Yang Jian had arrived, since he always created all these pointless special effects for his entrance.

“Bro!”

As Ye Zichen expected, Yang Jian, who was topless, walked over. Even though he didn't carry an umbrella, the rain silently disappeared from his body after landing on it, and his body did not get wet from the rain at all.

“You're about to go back?”

In recent days, Yang Jian had been focused on dealing with the statue situation in the Modern Realm, and now, he had to report all that happened to Taibai Jinxing, who was in the Heavenly Court very quickly.

Ye Zichen had initially wanted to get him to try the WiFi, but it didn't work for him...

That was slightly strange, since White Impermanence was able to receive messages from the Underworld even when she was in the Modern Realm.

“I have to return, the demon realm actually reached their claws out to this abandoned place. This was once the land of the Heavenly Court, so I have to report this in!” Yang Jian frowned, then patted Ye Zichen’s shoulders. “Bro, how about returning to the Heavenly Court with me? This place isn’t safe. Your strength doesn’t seem too strong either, so you should be reincarnating, right? It was fine for you here before, but now...”

The care caused Ye Zichen to feel a bit of warmth in his heart, but he still shook his head with a smile, “Never mind, I’ve stayed here for so long that I don’t want to leave. Go back to the Heavenly Court and report it in without worry. During so, I shall protect this land!”

Yang Jian’s expression was moved as if he felt the Ye Zichen’s determination.

He looked at Ye Zichen for a long while, then nodded with a smile, “Alright, then I’ll leave this land to you, bro. Erm, a friendly reminder first, it isn’t the time of descendance between Chang’e and I, so she might still descend in a while!”

“What!?” Ye Zichen had wanted to show off a bit using the heroic aura he put on moments ago, but that was instantly rendered futile when Chang’e was brought up. “She’ll still descend? Didn’t you...”

“I made it so that she can’t descend, but I’ll be returning. If I return, then what I set up wouldn’t work!” Yang Jian scratched his head with a coil smile, then looked up into the sky. “I’ll talk to you

when I get back to the Heavenly Court. I'll be off!"

Zoom.

Yang Jian immediately disappeared from the world without saying anything else. Ye Zichen scratched his head and let out a long sigh as he looked at the place where Yang Jian left from.

At that moment, Gu Tian spoke up, "Chang'e... Big Brother Ye, you can really talk to people in the Heavenly Court?"

"Mhmm!" Ye Zichen nodded, while his phone rang.

Ye Zichen said a few simple words to the person on the other side of the call.

Then, reluctance surfaced on Gu Tian's face, "You're leaving?"

"It's time to return!" Ye Zichen stretched lazily with a smile. "I've been in the capital for too long. There're still a bunch of stuff waiting for me to deal with over there!"

"Alright, then I won't make you stay. Big Brother Ye, take care!"

Ye Zichen nodded with a smile, then looked up at the darkening sky.

“It’s time to go back! Demon race... Come to Bingcheng if you want me!”

Chapter 365 – Song An

“Why are you the only one who came? Where’s Fatty and Lu Lu?”

Ye Zichen sat on a window seat in the plane, while Gou Yuzhan, who held a lollipop in his mouth, sat beside him. Since an unknown moment, that person had gotten used to following Ye Zichen around.

“Big Brother Fatty, and Big Sister Lu Lu said they are busy, so they told me to escort you back to Bingcheng,” Gou Yuzhan answered noisily while licking the lollipop.

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes speechlessly.

Gou Yuzhan clearly seemed the oldest out of them, yet he called the two older brother and sister. Of course, that was only when other people looked at their appearance. If they were talking about their real ages...

Then Fatty Yin and Lu Lu might actually be of the same generation as his ancestors.

Ye Zichen glanced at Gou Yuzhan, who continuously licked his lollipop. That fortune-teller had told him that this kid would be his lucky warrior.

But from the looks of him... He doesn’t look anything like one.

What's more, if I believe it, then wouldn't that mean that Sun Yige is my enemy?

Ye Zichen shook his head with force. As I thought, it's better not to pay any heed to fortune-telling.

"Boss Ye, what happened?" Even when Gou Yuzhan spoke, he would be reluctant to take the lollipop out, causing Ye Zichen to retort in his heart again...

How could the fortune telling be true!?

"It's nothing, my neck hurts. Go and eat your lollipop properly!"

"Okay!"

At that moment, the plane also started its engines. Gou Yuzhan merely paid attention to his lollipop without speaking, while Ye Zichen felt a bit tired after sitting still for a while, so he got ready to rest...

All of a sudden, a broadcast suddenly sounded out in the cabin.

"Dear passengers, is there a doctor among you? If there is, then please head over to cabin number three. A passenger suddenly fainted here..."

“Dear passengers...”

The broadcast was played thrice. Yet, Ye Zichen closed his eyes and originally did not want to care about it.

“Never mind, I’ll go and take a look. I won’t do anything if there’s a doctor, if there isn’t then I’ll just treat it as earning some merits for myself,” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, then left his seat and asked the flight attendant in front of him. “Take me to cabin number three!”

Cabin number three referred to the first class cabin. It was extremely spacious, and in the middle of the walkway laid a middle-aged man.

There was a rather pretty girl who stood in front of him, who looked anxiously at him.

“Yushi!

Ye Zichen was slightly stunned when he saw the girl in front of him. Then, he looked down at the man on the floor, and saw that it was Yang Zhen.

I told him to have a full body check done ages ago, but he didn’t listen...

Ye Zichen let out a sigh in his heart. The reason Yang Zhen ended up like that was clearly because he didn’t listen to Ye Zichen’s

warning. Otherwise, he wouldn't have just recklessly taken a plane.

At that moment, a man with gold-framed glasses squatted in front of Yang Zhen, and was checking up on his situation. Ye Zichen could tell that the person's actions were not extremely stiff, so he was most likely someone in the medical field.

"Zichen!" a look of surprise also surfaced on Yang Yushi's face. Then, intense worry was shown in her eyes. "Hurry up and take a look at how my dad is."

Even though Yang Zhen's actions were very much according to his own will, no matter what, he was Yang Yushi's father, so it was impossible for Yang Yushi to not worry about him.

"Isn't there already someone here?" Ye Zichen shrugged.

A look of anxiety instantly appeared on Yang Yushi's face, "I trust you. Hurry up and take a look at my dad!"

She knew Ye Zichen's medical capabilities very well. Since he managed to save me when I entered such dire circumstances, he would definitely be able to save my father.

"Beauty, do you mean that you don't trust me?" the man who was squatting stood up with displeasure plain on his face.

"No, you misunderstood," Yang Yushi smiled apologetically.

The man did not continue to argue with her and instead set his gaze upon Ye Zichen... “Doctor? From the look of your age... You are a student at a medical university at best!”

Intense hostility radiated from the man, but Ye Zichen merely shrugged indifferently.

The man instantly smiled with disdain, “You actually want to call yourself a doctor without finishing your degree. Let me introduce myself, I’m Song An!”

The man radiated with pride as he introduced himself. Plenty of the surrounding passengers opened their eyes wide in surprise upon hearing his name.

Even Ye Zichen had heard of the name Song An...

Song An had a master’s degree from the American Medical Institution, and had received countless rewards in the medical field.

Rumors said that he was the person with the highest hope to receive a Nobel Prize within the country, but he chose to immigrate to the US half a year ago.

“Zeze, Doctor Zong, I’ve admired you for a long time!” Ye Zichen smiled, but his tone carried no hint of admiration.

Song An could naturally understand Ye Zichen's mocking tone. However, he merely smiled in disdain and said with a tone as if he was educating his senior, "Do not think that you are a doctor after going to school for a few years before graduating. Even if you have graduated, and managed to somehow become an attending physician... That's it. A human life isn't as simple as you said. If I wasn't here, then your arrogance might have ended a human life."

"Senior Song is right," Ye Zichen smiled, then shrugged. "But as a doctor, shouldn't you place saving your patient as your utmost priority? Your patient is lying in front of you, yet you actually have the spare effort to bullshit with me? Time is related to a life. Don't you know that the patient is standing on the border of life and death?"

Ye Zichen's words caused Song An's face to go red. Song An let out a sigh, then smiled, "You are right, but I have a general understanding of the patient's situation already..."

"Then shouldn't you hurry?" Ye Zichen twitched his mouth. "Saving people is like putting out a fire. If you want to pickup a girl, then wait till you cure the person, alright?"

"Hehe..." Song An smiled indifferently, then turned to Yang Yushi. "Miss Yang, your father's situation is not that severe. I'll just massage him a bit, then he'll be as good as new."

"Massage," Ye Zichen frowned. He understood very well that Yang Zhen's situation could not be improved with a mere massage.

“How troubling do you think it’s going to be? Watch closely, I’ll use this chance to teach you a lesson!” Song An laughed recklessly, then lowered his thumbs towards Yang Zhen’s [Shenting acupuncture point](#)

“Wait!” Ye Zichen said with a frown. “You... are going to press his Shenting acupuncture point?”

“You can tell? Not bad, your foundation skills are good,” Song An did not reply directly, but his words did reveal that he was indeed going to press down on it.

“Did you not notice that the patient’s neck is slightly red, while his arms are slightly swollen?” Ye Zichen asked. “What if something goes wrong from you doing that?”

“Young man, I’ve gotten more awards than you have even seen. My words are of utmost authority in the medical realm. If a problem arises, then it’s completely my responsibility!”

With that, Song An pressed down on Yang Zhen’s Shenting acupuncture point without any hesitation.

Shenting Acupuncture Point (神庭穴) is an acupuncture point that is approximately five millimeters above the hairline at the center of the head.

Chapter 366 – This Is What You Meant By Authority?

His cocky tone made everyone in the cabin slightly displeased. Song An undoubtedly did have exceptional talent in the medical field, but saying his words were authority was slightly too much.

Despite that, most people just wanted the patient to be saved. The hearts of people were mostly kind, and nobody wanted to see someone die on a plane due to sudden health issues.

Of course, most of it might have been because they didn't want to see the flight delayed, or get forcefully transferred to another one.

The passengers did not have any medical knowledge, but Ye Zichen did.

However, he never expected Song An would be so prideful as to just suddenly say that his words were authority, then ignore his warning.

“Brat, watch this. Within a minute....”

Song An looked up with a cocky smile. From his perspective, Yang Zhen's situation was the most simple of altitude sickness.

What swollen arm? What redness on the neck?

All he awaited was for Yang Zhen to stand up from the ground and smack Ye Zichen's face real hard...

A minute passed by in the blink of an eye.

Yang Zhen, who was on the ground, did not recover at all. However, what worried people was that his face had gradually turned from stark white to purple, while his arm also became bright red as his blood vessels became more apparent.

"Why did my dad become like this!" Yang Yushi interrogated Song An.

At that moment, Song An also became extremely worried.

This shouldn't be. My treatment had no issue, but why didn't the patient wake up and instead get this sort of symptom?

"This is the authority you were talking about? F*ck off!" Ye Zichen pushed Song An, who was rather frantic, away. He truly felt a bit of pity for the US's medical prizes.

A person like this actually managed to gain countless awards and got a master's degree in the medical institution...

"Do you have silver needles here?" Ye Zichen frowned towards the flight attendant.

The flight attendant instantly nodded, “Yes, yes.”

“Bring some over for me. I’m going to give him an acupuncture treatment. Also, if you have a small knife and a towel, then bring it over as well. The knife must be sterilized at high temperatures!”

“No problem!” the stewardess quickly left the cabin. She did not dare to put on any airs against the passengers within the cabin.

The people in the cabin were all successful people, and the person who fell down was actually Yang Yushi’s father. There was no need to mention Yang Yushi’s identity since she was a beyond popular celebrity.

However, she seemed to have seen the young man asking for silver needles somewhere as well...

“Ye Zichen, my dad will be fine, right?” Yang Yushi said worriedly.

Ye Zichen patted her head with a smiled comfortingly at her, “He’ll be fine. What’s there to be worried about with me here? But after he wakes up, you have to convince him to do a full body check in the hospital, his body...”

Ye Zichen shook his head with a sigh, causing Yang Yushi to become more nervous. At the same time, the stewardess also brought the items Ye Zichen had asked for.

“Chinese doctor?” Song An frowned.

Ye Zichen disregarded him, and proceeded to cut Yang Zhen’s arm with the small knife.

“What are you doing!?” Song An criticized loudly with a frown.

Ye Zichen merely shrugged, “I’m letting out blood. If you can’t tell, then why are you still a doctor?”

“Do you know what consequences it’ll cause?”

“Are you trying to educate me, Expert Song?” Ye Zichen’s expression turned even darker as he laughed coldly. “I’m wiping your ass clean here. Otherwise, if someone dies, then you going to take criminal responsibility? Or are you just going to say that you tried your best, and stay silent about your uselessness?”

“Wipe my ass?” Song An sneered. He twitched his mouth as if he was about to ramble on about how many accomplishments he had achieved in the medical realm.

However, Ye Zichen merely rolled his eyes at Song An and snorted, “I don’t want to care about you. The patient’s family member is right here. I’ll start if she agrees.”

“I agree!” Yang Yushi blurted out without thinking.

Ye Zichen sliced the small knife along Yang Zhen's arm.

Blood squirted out as if it was stored in a high-pressured gauge.

Ye Zichen disregarded the blood that splashed on him, and silently counted the time in his heart as he grabbed the white towel and pressed down on Yang Zhen's wound.

However, that did not seem to slow down the blood flow at all. Not long later, the towel was completely dyed red.

"Silver needle!" the stewardess quickly brought the silver needles in front of Ye Zichen.

He used one hand to hold Yang Zhen's arm, while he used the other hand to pierce down on the acupuncture points with the silver needles without checking the location of the points first.

All the passengers in the cabin couldn't help but worry for Ye Zichen. After all, the spurt of blood earlier was far too terrifying.

"Bring me another towel!"

In several moments, six towels were completely dyed red with Yang Zhen's blood. At the same time, Ye Zichen squinted his eyes, and rotated the silver needles gently

"Phew," Ye Zichen let out a long sigh, then rotated his neck and

stood up from the ground.

The gaze of all of the passengers in the cabin were set onto him.

Yang Yushi also asked nervously, “How is he?”

“He’ll probably wake up soon,” Ye Zichen smiled softly, then looked towards the stewardess. “Please prepare some candy for him. He might feel a bit dizzy when he wakes up...”

With that, Ye Zichen turned around and walked towards his own seat.

However, Song An frowned behind him, “You want to leave? Are you trying to avoid taking responsibility?”

“Do you think that I’m you?” Ye Zichen sneered. “Bringing public shame to yourself without any skills. It was fortunate that I was here... If it wasn’t for me, then he really would have died because of you!”

“Bullshit!” Song An clenched his teeth and cursed. “Do you know how many...”

“So what I you received all of the medical prizes? You... did not save the person. Even if you stick all of the awards on yourself, it cannot hide your useless self. Did you manage to see what sort of acupuncture technique I used just now? No, right!? Since that’s the case, then why are you still competing...” The technique Ye Zichen

had used was the Nine Yang Life Continuation acupuncture technique. Ye Zichen had thought that it would shut Song An up after using it, but from the looks of it, Song An didn't know anything...

I seriously don't know why an idiot like him actually managed to gain such achievements in the medical realm.

“Alright, stop showing off how petty you are. I'm not a random person who walked by. We're on the same plane right now. Even if something happens... Just come and find me in my cabin!”

Ye Zichen shook his head with a soft smile and left. Song An clenched his teeth as he looked at Ye Zichen's back, while his face turned terrifyingly dark.

Please don't wake up, please don't wake up.

However, fate was not on his side...

Yang Zhen woke up mere moments after Ye Zichen left.

The invisible smack on Song An's face caused his face to hurt a bit.

Yang Yushi was also extremely happy, but put on an indifferent expression and asked, “You woke up.”

“What happened to me?” Yang Zhen rubbed his head in confusion, then turned to Song An. “Did this doctor save me?”

“I did not do a lot!” Song An answered shamelessly.

All of the passengers were truly speechless by his shamelessness.

Meanwhile, Yang Yushi retorted mercilessly “The person who saved you wasn’t him. If it wasn’t for Ye Zichen, then you might...”

“Who?” Yang Zhen glared. “You said Ye Zichen?”

Chapter 367 – Su Yan's Abnormality

Ye Zichen!

The moment Yang Yushi spoke aloud his name, all the passengers within the cabin were shocked. Plenty of them had paid attention to the news about Maintaining Beauty Corporation, and even though the news report did not mention Ye Zichen's name, someone did reveal afterwards that the young man who uttered such brave words at Maintaining Beauty Corporation's press conference was named Ye Zichen.

"No wonder I felt like that young man was a bit familiar," the surrounding passengers couldn't help but mutter, while the others also exclaimed in awe.

Song An's expression turned for the worse when he noticed the chatter of the surrounding passengers. However, nobody cared about how he felt.

What's more, Yang Yushi nodded towards Yang Zhen, "Yeah, it was Ye Zichen. You suddenly fainted earlier, then this self-proclaimed expert nearly caused you to pass on, it was Ye Zichen who saved you miraculously."

A hint of pride and excitement was evident on Yang Yushi's face when she mentioned Ye Zichen.

"What a joke. Both him and I acted. How can you be sure that it was the brat who cured him?" Song An couldn't help but snort.

All of the surrounding passengers revealed looks of disdain. None of them had known previously that this person actually had such bad character.

He actually still wants to steal the honor at a time like this. Some of the people who were subscribed to his Weibo all decided to unsubscribe after getting off the plane.

“F*ck, how can someone be this shameless?” a man amongst the passengers stood up and frowned. “Laozi doesn’t know you, Song An or whatever. This person was clearly cured by that little bro, and you actually still came over to take the honor. I seriously want to punch you. Hurry up and f*ck off... Laozi gets annoyed just from seeing you!”

“Hehe...”

“Hmm? Hehe? Trying ‘hehe’ing again!?” the man immediately rolled up his sleeves, while the surrounding passengers immediately held him back.

Song An glanced at his physique and shrunk his neck, “I don’t want to speak to a brute like you!”

With that, he hurriedly left the cabin.

“Tsk, what the hell!” the man snorted at Song An’s fleeing back. Then he raised his eyebrows towards Yang Zhen. “Let me tell you,

the only reason you managed to live is all thanks to that little bro's medical skills. We passengers all witnessed that. As for Song An, it would be better if it was named [Farewell](#)."

All of the surrounding passengers nodded in agreement.

At that moment, Yang Yushi also spoke up, "Dad, how about we go and thank him. No matter what..."

"We'll talk about it later!"

However, even until they got off the plane, Yang Zhen still did not go and thank Ye Zichen.

That was something Ye Zichen had expected. He understood Yang Zhen's personality way too well. Having Yang Zhen lower himself down to thank Ye Zichen was even harder than killing him.

...

"Ye-zi!" Su Yiyun immediately walked over with a smile when Ye Zichen walked out of the airport, while giving him a bear hug. "The Dominating CEO finally came back from the capital. Zeze, a small target of a hundred million."

"I just said it randomly. Is there a need of reacting so much?" Ye Zichen put on a helpless expression.

Su Yiyun immediately teased, “You just randomly said something that normal people and even some businessmen can’t even imagine in their entire lives. Did you know that you’ve even become an internet celebrity!?”

“Internet celebrity!?” That was something Ye Zichen never expected. It was something that didn’t happen even when he sang.

“Yeah... Dominating CEO, National Hubby, National Love Rival! Seriously, if you trust me and shout out that you’re Ye Zichen, a bunch of girls would immediately express their willingness to give themselves to you within three minutes!” Su Yiyun laughed.

Ye Zichen immediately frowned towards him and walked in front of Su Yan, “You came.”

“Mhmm,” Su Yan replied plainly, then smiled. “Congratulations, you’ve become successful.”

When she reached out her hand, the distant action caused Ye Zichen to frown. It shouldn’t be like this between us.

Ye Zichen thought that Su Yan was unhappy due to what Su Yiyun had said unfiltered, so he immediately wrapped Su Yan into his embrace with a small, “I’m still a worker in front of you no matter how successful I am! You are the proprietress!”

“Mhmm, that’s true,” Su Yan continued to reply plainly. Ye

Zichen could see how forceful her smile was, and he noticed how stiff Su Yan's body was when he pulled her into his arms.

As confusion rose in Ye Zichen's heart, Su Yiyun raised his eyebrows on the side, "Hey, if you are just being lovey-dovey here, then that's too outrageous!"

"You brat!" Ye Zichen held Su Yan's head, then shook his head with a chuckle. "Didn't you find your true love recently? Why don't I see her with you?"

"I came to welcome you back, so she..." the moment Su Yiyun replied, a faint giggle sounded out from afar.

"Who said I didn't come!?"

"Lil' E, why did you come? Didn't you say that you have lessons?" a hint of shock alongside excitement appeared on Su Yiyun's face.

The girl instantly pouted with a snort, "I'm just seeing if you're cheating on me. I'm just going on a daily patrol."

At the same time, Ye Zichen glanced at the girl.

The girl was rather tall, and emitted the feeling of being the daughter of a small family. Ye Zichen blessed them true-heartedly in his heart when he saw how well she and Su Yiyun got along.

“Oh my dear mistress, how would I dare with you here!” Su Yiyun’s face was covered with smiles. Then he introduced the girl to Ye Zichen. “Li Min’e, my girlfriend.”

“Hmph!” Li Min’e smiled and wrinkled her nose. Then she pouted at Ye Zichen. “You’re Ye Zichen? There’s nothing special about you.”

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but raised his eyebrows with a chuckle when he saw her cute expression, “What? Did I disappoint you?”

“Tsk, what does that have to do with me?” Li Min’e pouted with a snort. “Su Yiyun keeps on talking about you all the time, telling me just how amazing you are... if I didn’t know that Susu’s your girlfriend, I would suspect you two of... Ugh, that’s disgusting!”

With that, she stuck out her tongue.

Seeing that, Ye Zichen couldn’t help but exclaim in his heart. So this girl is pretty playful. Her personality definitely gets along well with a playful person like Su Yiyun.

“Damn girl, you actually thought that of me... It seems like I have to find a chance to eat you to make you know how amazing this lord is,” Su Yiyun chuckled.

“Hmph! Keep dreaming!” Li Min’e pouted, before the two started to argue again.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but smile as he looked at the scene with interest. He subconsciously look towards Su Yan, only to noticed that she looked as if she was lost, while she started straight in front of her with unmoving eyes.

“Su Yan?” Ye Zichen called her name out.

Only after a while did Su Yan return to her senses and smile brightly, “What happened? My older brother and older sister... They seriously just argue all the time!”

Seeing that Ye Zichen did not reply, she raised her eyebrows with a smile once again, “Are you a bit tired? Do you need me to get my brother to send you back?”

“Su Yan!” Ye Zichen said slightly worriedly, then looked at her confused face. “Just what happened to you?”

To be more precise, the original term was 送终, pronounced Song Zhong. It basically means the act of sending off a deceased person. Hence, the name is a pun on his surname of Song(宋).

Chapter 368 – Candidate For The Makeup Spokesperson

Even when Ye Zichen returned home and laid on his bed, Su Yan's earlier appearance continued to surface in Ye Zichen's mind.

Even though she had said that it was nothing, he could feel that... She definitely had something in her heart that she didn't want to voice.

“If it's Xia Keke, then she might know something!”

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and took out his phone. The moment he turned on his phone he saw that a “99+” appeared on his WeChat app.

What happened?

Is there a need for this to happen? It was just one flight

Ye Zichen opened WeChat and saw that his contact list had the “99+”, while he also had “99+” from his messages.

When he turned to the contact list, the huge variety of names completely stunned Ye Zichen.

The verification messages also made him beyond speechless.

“Dominating CEO I love you. Accept my friend request.”

“I have a better body than the girl beside you. I’m still young, accept!”

“Grandson, don’t think you’re amazing just cuz you’ve got some money...”

What’s going on?

Ye Zichen denied all of the friend requests with a look of confusion. When he finally finished doing so, another bunch popped up once again...

“What the hell!”

There’s no doubt about it now. My WeChat account was definitely exposed.

Ye Zichen took a look at his messages, but there wasn’t any from his roommates.

How did it get exposed!?

Thus, Ye Zichen decided to turn off incoming friend requests, then clicked on his chat with Yang Jian.

Since the 99+ messages were pretty much all sent by him, Ye Zichen decided to have a look at it first.

“Bro, I’m back in the Heavenly Court.”

“Bro, when can you start makeup lessons in the Heavenly Court?”

“Bro, why are you not replying!?”

“Bro...”

I seriously don’t know where Yang Jian got the spare time to send messages to me for an hour without me replying.

I guess he needed to send his fill after getting reconnected to the net in the Heavenly Court, since he couldn’t play with his phone in the Modern Realm.

“I just got off the plane. Don’t send if you see that I didn’t reply. If I see your message, then I’ll definitely reply!”

Dingdong.

Yang Jian replied instantly.

“I have nothing to do anyways, so I just sent messages to you for fun!”

Yang Jian’s reply caused Ye Zichen to roll his eyes. He truly doesn’t have anything to do!

“Have you dealt with the issue already and reported the news?”

“Mhmm!” the expression of Yang Jian, who was sitting on a chair made out of vines, drastically changed. “I told Taibai Jinxing already. He already sent people to go down to the lower realm to exorcise the demons. However, the people that are initially sent over wouldn’t be too strong, their main task will be investigation... When they locate the hideout of the demons, then we’ll send an army over to eliminate them all!”

“So it’s like that!”

I guess reporting the news of the demons to Taibai Jinxing was right. This geezer has a vendetta against the demons.

Even if the Jade Emperor didn’t want to care about it, Taibai Jinxing will definitely use his own words to convince the Jade Emperor. And the amazing qualities of his speech were already obvious just from seeing how he got the Great Sage to be the Protector of Horses.

“Let’s not talk about this anymore. Bro, when are you starting up the classes in the Heavenly Court? After going over to your place once, I feel like these girls in the Heavenly Court are very plain! Only Chang’e can compare with the girls over at your place, as for the others...”

His beauty standards actually got pickier after coming to the Modern Realm once.

But there’s no denying it, the makeup techniques of the modern realm are truly developed to the point that it can cause a huge change in woman. Even men can be mistaken as women after putting on makeup... That itself was evidence in showing just how powerful makeup techniques are.

“I can’t just start a lesson like this. At the very least, I need an opportunity!”

All of the ideas were still in Ye Zichen’s thoughts, and there was naturally a need for him to find a spokesperson if he wished to open up makeup lessons in the Heavenly Court.

Chang’e was no good since she was originally beautiful.

Even if makeup can make her even more beautiful, it cannot cause a cause too much discussion amongst the women of the Heavenly Court.

The most they would say was “Chang’e got prettier”.

If Ye Zichen wanted to make them truly pay attention to the prowess of makeup, then he had to find a common-looking woman. Of course, this woman had to be rather reputed as well to the point that the people in the Heavenly Court will take notice of her...

That was how he would cause surprise. By achieving that target, then the women of the Heavenly Court will naturally be interested in the makeup lessons.

“Bro, what sort of opportunity are you talking about?”

Yang Jian replied the messages in squinted eyes. At that moment, he felt like his heart was itching, and if Taibai Jinxing did not tell him not to casually leave the Heavenly Court, he might have already descended to the lower realm again.

That was the ocean of happiness for men. As for the Heavenly Court...

It is clearly several levels worse.

“Do you know a rather plain or ugly looking woman in the Heavenly Court. She can’t be not too normal, so just common fairies are no good. She has to be the kind that has a bit of fame in the Heavenly Court. Don’t find one that’s too fierce either, I’m worried that I can’t manage her.”

“What is it for?” Yang Jian didn’t quite understand.

“I need a spokesperson!” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. “You gotta get a spokesperson to get your brand famous regardless of what you’re going. Otherwise, if I just start a makeup lesson and tell them that it can make them prettier, who would believe me!?”

“That’s true.”

The other deities in the Heavenly Court might not understand this concept, but Yang Jian and co. definitely would.

Ye Zichen had gotten them to be the spokespeople in the very beginning. However, Yang Jian wasn’t interested in that matter, so that’s how Yue Lao ended up as the dealer.

A troubled look instantly surfaced in Erlang Shen’s eyes.

He was definitely one of the most vain people in the Heavenly Court, so he wouldn’t actually know the uglier ones.

“Bro, you should know me. I love beauty, so how could I know those ugly ones! The ones around me are all pretty much alright ones!”

“Alright?”

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. Everyone had a different sense of

beauty, so who knows what Yang Jian's "alright" was like.

"Send me a few photos and let me have a look!"

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

Not long later, a bunch of photos of fairies appeared on Ye Zichen's screen. To be frank, Yang Jian had pretty high standards of pretty, so these girls definitely looked alright...

However, Ye Zichen did manage to find a good target amongst them.

Her skin was dark, and she was rather buff.

While her face looked kind of delicate, her skin color and thick arms...

"F*ck, I sent a wrong photo," Yang Jian's message popped up on the screen. Then, moments later, Ye Zichen saw that Yang Jian redacted the photo of Ye Zichen's ideal choice.

"Why did you redact that one? I was going to get her to be the

spokesperson!”

“The heck!?”

Yang Jian, who was within the Erlang Hall in the Heavenly Court directly stood up from his chair with a shocked expression as he looked at Ye Zichen’s message.

“Bro, you’re serious?”

“What? Is this person of a really high status in the Heavenly Court?” Ye Zichen asked carefully. If her status was too high, and wouldn’t listen to him, then he can’t choose that person even if she is a good choice.

“No...” Yang Jian replied with a shook of his head. “Her status isn’t particularly high, but she is a rather controversial person in the different circles. She does fit your different criteria, but... Never mind, I’ll get her to add you!”

Chapter 369 – An Amazing Older Sister

Yang Jian's appearance of wanting to speak, but ended up stopping himself caused Ye Zichen to frown. Approximately ten-odd minutes later, another message from Yang Jian appeared on his screen.

“Bro, accept it!”

Ye Zichen quickly looked at his friend requests. When he saw all the friend requests, he rolled his eyes speechlessly.

“Send me her account, I'll add her!”

“Okay!”

Yang Jian immediately sent the deity's account over. Ye Zichen immediately added her and wrote “I am Sky Sovereign Nameless, a friend of Yang Jian.” on his confirmation message.

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen's friend request was accepted.

“Little Brother Yang Jian said that you can make me pretty?”

The woman named Stone Fairy promptly sent a message to Ye Zichen. Ye Zichen immediately turned speechless upon seeing

that...

Little brother.

Since she dares to call Yang Jian as her little brother, then she should be pretty amazing in the Heavenly Court!

But who the hell is this Stone Fairy? I've read tons of myths and legends about the Heavenly Court and the Underworld, and have read quite a few Baidu-pedia articles on them, but why have I never even heard of her?

"Indeed," Ye Zichen nodded. "But this is a paid service. If I am able to make you pretty, then you have to work for me."

"I understand," Stone Fairy typed out her reply with a smile. "Tell me how I should I help you!"

"Wait till after I make you pretty. Of course, it's not possible right now. We can set a time instead. How about tomorrow?"

Ye Zichen had no cosmetics on hand, and he also needed to find some time to search for some makeup videos online.

Of course, he could not do all that by himself, he needed to find a makeup teacher to begin the lesson as well.

Otherwise, wasn't it just pointless for a dude like him to teach

beauties how to put on makeup!

“I always have time. Just call me here when you’re free.”

“Alright.”

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Stone Fairy increased by 200.

Dingdong.

Intimacy level leveled up. Current intimacy level: Trusted.

“Bro, you finished chatting with her?” the moment Ye Zichen finished talking with Stone Fairy, Yang Jian immediately sent him a message.

“Mhmm, pretty much. This big sis was pretty cooperative. But who is this fairy, why is she called Stone Fairy, and why did she call you little brother?”

Ye Zichen asked in confusion.

“Ugh, about that...” Yang Jian chuckled slightly ashamedly as he typed out his reply. “I lost in arm wrestling to her not long ago. Ever since then, she began to call me little brother.”

“Arm wrestling? And you actually lost?”

Ye Zichen was completely stunned. An increase in cultivation level would cause a person's strength and everything else to increase.

No matter what, Yang Jian was of the complete stage of the Human Immortal level. Since he lost to her, then doesn't that make Stone Fairy a Sky Immortal level expert?

Then she'll definitely be famous in the Heavenly Court. But why haven't I heard anyone mention her?

“Yeah, I lost! She's just of the early stage of the Human Immortal level, but she was born with divine strength so even if the monkey tried, he wouldn't be able to beat her in arm wrestling!”

Yang Jian replied slightly helplessly.

“It really is my fault. If I didn't show off my muscles in front of those fairies, then I wouldn't have pissed her off.”

“This is karma!”

Ye Zichen chatted a bit more with Yang Jian, and only stopped when something seemed to have come up on Yang Jian's side.

Ye Zichen rolled over on the bed. At that moment, he felt a bitter gaze staring at him.

He didn't even needed to think about who it was. Only Liu Qing was able to appear in his room at that moment.

Ye Zichen turned around, and as he expected, Liu Qing laid beside him and watched him with her large eyes full of complaint.

"You terrible person," Liu Qing pouted while unhappiness covered her delicate face. "What did you go off to do? I haven't seen you in so long!"

Ye Zichen rubbed her head with a smile when he saw her pout, "I was busy."

"Since you were going away for so long, why didn't you bring me along?" Liu Qing muttered with a pout. "These few days, I've been either sleeping in the Dragon Eye, or flying around the room... There was nobody to play with me. Do-Do you not like me anymore!?"

"How could that be? Fine, I was wrong, alright?" Ye Zichen shrugged, then was reminded of the situation of the water soaking Soul Pearl Yiyuan.

Before he went over to the capital, Soul Pearl Yiyuan seemed to need to soak in the water for ten-odd more days. Since he stayed over in the capital for quite a long time, the water might already be

ready.

Since I've prepared all the necessary items for her revival, it's time for me to revive Liu Qing and accomplish my initial goal.

At that moment...

A green pearl shot over, which Ye Zichen noticed was Soul Pearl Yiyuan after it got close to him.

"Why did you come over?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows at the pearl. Soul Pearl Yiyuan continued to spin around him. Ye Zichen scratched his chin, then his eyes lit up. "It's been long enough?"

Soul Pearl Yiyuan instantly nodded in a human like fashion.

Seeing that a smile bloomed on Ye Zichen's face. He looked up and rubbed Liu Qing on the head, "You can be revived very soon."

Ye Zichen drove over to the apartment and saw that Third Fatty Jin was playing video games with Di Tian. Since Di Tian had identified the sheath of the Xuan-Yuan Sword, Ye Zichen kept his word and no longer forced him to do housework.

"Boss Ye, when did you come back? Why didn't you get little brother to get you?" Third Fatty Jin chuckled the controller onto the side and ran over with a flattering smile.

Di Tian glanced over at Ye Zichen, then called out between clenched teeth, “Boss Ye.”

Ye Zichen nodded towards them, and thought about his purpose, then said with a smile, “Keep on playing. I just came here to get something.”

With that, Ye Zichen ran straight to the room on the second floor.

The dark night caused his room to be pitch black. In the corner of room, the Holy Water of Yiyuan that Soul Pearl Yiyuan soaked in shimmered with a faint light.

Ye Zichen scanned it.

Dingdong.

The system has detected Holy Water of Yiyuan that Soul Pearl Yiyuan had submerged in for forty-nine days. Would you like to collect it?

“Right on time,” Ye Zichen smiled, then clicked “Yes” on the screen.

Zoom.

The Holy Water of Yiyuan on the ground disappeared. Ye Zichen

clicked open the Treasure Chest, and found the ready Holy Water of Yiyuan within.

“Oh? Has all the treasures that is needed for my revival been gathered?” Liu Qing blinked in wonder.

Ye Zichen nodded, then knocked on her little head, “Yeah, you can get revived very soon. What do you want to do after being revived?”

“Me?” Liu Qing giggled, then licked her lips. “Be with you!”

The sincerity in her tone caused Ye Zichen to smile wryly. This girl seriously wants to be with me. But if that’s the case, then I’ll get another woman by my side...

Ye Zichen scratched his head, then pushed away the other thoughts in his mind. He nodded towards her with a smile, then opened WeChat and found his chat with King Chujiang.

That old brat had said it back then that when Ye Zichen gathered all the items, Ye Zichen just needed to find him.

“King Chujiang! Come out quickly!”

Chapter 370 – The Underworld's Trouble

In the Underworld.

Within the Yama Hall that King Chujiang was in charge of.

At that moment, King Chujiang was looking at the large pile of paperwork in front of him with a frown. I wonder what's going on recently, there has been a lot more work for the Underworld. But all of these dead people cried out their innocence when they arrived at the Ten Yama Halls.

Judge Cui was beyond busy due to the workload, and the same applied to the Ten Yama Kings. All of the ghost servants from the Underworld were also all sent out to capture the ghosts, while the eighteen layers of hell were almost completely filled.

Within the Yama King's chat group.

King Pingdeng: Old Brothers, I'm already tired to no end.

King Yanluo: This is a bit strange, why did we suddenly get so much more work? My Yama Hall's ghost servants have all been sent out, but they are still unable to capture all of the ghosts in my area. Requesting help.

King Qinguang: My area isn't particularly busy. I'll send some people over to help.

King Yanluo: Oh, thank you so much.

King Chujiang had wanted to speak up in the group as well, but just as he was about to send a message, his phone rang.

He left the chat group page, and when he saw the person who sent him the message...

Gulp.

Why did this guy come asking?

King Chujiang licked his lips, then immediately entered the group to seek help once more.

King Chujiang: @everyone. Guys, that guy came to find me again.

King Lunhui: Which one?

King Yanluo: @King Chujiang, what are you talking about. Oh yeah, are you busy? Lend me some reapers.

King Chujiang: I'm pretty busy over here as well. I've sent them all out.

King Qinguang: Which guy? Is it him?

King Chujiang: Yes, it's the one who saved you, Big Brother. The last few times he came to find me, he wanted me to add some life span to people. I already added lifespan so many times, what if he asks me to do so again... Wouldn't the Heavenly Court cause trouble for me!?

King Qinguang: Don't forget about that master's identity. He might very well be the reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor. We have to treat him well. Hurry up and reply. If there is something that you can't do, then say it in the group.

King Chujiang: Alright then!

He left the group screen once again, then silently prayed as he gulped.

Master, please don't make me add anymore lifespan. Anything else is fine!

King Chujiang pursed his lips, then made up his mind to reply.

“Master, what sort of business do you have with this one?”

At that moment, Ye Zichen was already extremely impatient due to all the waiting. It was fortunate that King Chujiang had replied before his patience ran out, otherwise, Ye Zichen would have started cursing again.

“I naturally found you because I have business with you. Do you

still remember the secret art of revival a person who died before her time?”

“Of course, of course. Do you need this little one to repeat it for you?” King Chujiang typed out his reply with a coy smile.

“No need, I came to find you this time to inform you that I have gathered everything. Hurry up and open the gates of the Underworld for me. I’m going to revive that person!”

Ye Zichen said rather urgently, but King Chujiang was completely stunned.

Gathered everything.

The items required to revive a person who died before their time are all extremely hard to find treasures. If it was used on a normal person, then it might actually create an Immortal.

This master actually gathered everything, and from the looks of it, he doesn’t feel pained over the treasures at all!

“Master... Are-Are you sure you gathered everything? The celestial pill, Nine-Heart Lotus Root, Thousand-Year Dragon Eye and Holy Water of Yiyuan... Are you sure you gathered all that?”

“No shit, if I hadn’t, then would I come look for you? Hurry up and open the gates for me. Hurry, hurry!”

Ye Zichen continuously hurried him. King Chujiang swipe the seat from his forehead, before running back to the group for backup.

King Chujiang: @everyone. Brothers, help!

King Qinguang: What did that master say?

King Chujiang: That master told me to open the gates linking the Underworld and mortal realm. He wants to come over!

King Pingdeng: What is he coming over for?

King Chujiang: Didn't I tell you guys before? That master wants to revive someone who died before their time. He has already gathered all the treasures, so he wants to come over to revive the person.

King Yanluo: Awesome!

King Lunhui: 666!

King Songdi: This master is too amazing, he actually gathered everything.

King Chujiang: Guys, stop exclaiming here. That master is waiting for us to reply.

King Qinguang: Don't let the master down, at least, not currently. The Underworld is overly chaotic right now, if we recklessly open the gates of the underworld, then the vengeful ghosts might sneak out. If they harm the mortal realm, then it will be our wrongdoing.

King Chujiang: Then what do you think I should do?

King Qinguang: I'll go and speak to that master.

With that, King Qinguang left the group, then sent a message to Ye Zichen.

“Master!”

Ye Zichen did not expect King Qinguang to seek him out when King Chujiang didn't reply for a long time.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“What happened? King Chujiang asked you to come and speak to me?”

“Kind of!” King Qinguang answered. “Master has managed to gather all of the necessary items for revival, right?”

“Mhmm!”

“Master, here’s the issue. The Underworld is recently in some trouble, so we can’t open the gates linking the mortal realm and the Underworld. If you are not in a hurry, then can you wait a while...”

“You guys are the ones who said that you can open the gates, and now you’re saying that you can’t!?”

Ye Zichen laughed coldly, then sent a voice message to King Qinguang.

“I think that the Underworld is intentionally making it hard for this sovereign, right!?”

Boom.

Within the Yama Hall, a voice filled with rage sounded out, causing the ghosts servants within the hall to be scared senseless.

King Qinguang also opened his eyes wide in shock.

Laws of the World.

I didn’t expect this master to actually be an expert who has gotten a glimpse of the Laws of the World. Thinking that, King Qinguang immediately acted more subserviently. He got off his throne, and bowed.

“Master, please cease your rage. Since you can peek into the Laws of the World, then you naturally know the situation of the Underworld. We truly are not lying to you. Please cease your rage!”

“Heh!”

An indifferent cold snort sounded out, causing King Qinguang to quickly bow again.

At the same time, Ye Zichen also spoke up, “Did the Underworld get into some sort of trouble?”

“We don’t know why there is a large number of ghosts, who have died due to injustice. Some of these ghosts were bearing grudges as well, so they turned into vengeful ghosts. The Underworld is investigating this right now. After we find out, we’ll immediately open the gates for you!”

“A large number of ghosts who died to injustice suddenly appeared!”

Ye Zichen frowned.

King Qinguang replied, “Indeed. It is also rather strange, because all of them have lost a spiritual and a physical soul, while the way they died is extremely suspicious!”

“Oh?” Ye Zichen replied in surprise.

Hearing that, King Qinguang actually managed to muster up his courage out of nowhere and directly asked.

“Master, I wonder if you can lend the Underworld a hand!”

King Qinguang’s words stunned Ye Zichen as well, but he still asked with interest.

“What do you want me to help you with?”

“Investigate this situation!”

King Qinguang squinted his eyes and typed out his reply. This issue had already took up too much of their time, but no matter how they investigated, they were unable to find out the reason behind this.

Since this master has already peaked into the Laws of the World, then...

“Sure, but... what do I gain from that?”

Chapter 371 – The Nervous Yao Yue

After a long time...

King Qinguang still did not give any reply, since he was wondering just what benefits should he offer to ask for an expert who can peek into the Laws of the World to help.

“No need to make your promise so quickly. It’s fine to talk about it when I actually manage to help the Underworld solve the problem.”

Ye Zichen smiled.

Happiness instantly surfaced on King Qinguang’s face when he saw the message, “Thank you, Master!”

“No need to thank me so quickly. I might not be able to help you. Just tell me briefly about the situation over at your place!”

Approximately half an hour later, King Qinguang managed to tell Ye Zichen the entire situation.

Coincidentally, the increase in workload for the Underworld was during the time Ye Zichen met the demons in the capital. What’s more, the location with the largest workload was the area around the capital, which was under King Yanluo’s jurisdiction.

All of these coincidences might not mean much when taken out of context, but when they were linked together, it truly intrigued people.

“Alright, this sovereign has gotten the gist of it. That’s that!”

“Master, thank you for helping!”

King Qinguang bowed once again.

Ye Zichen merely smiled, then exited the chat screen, while he laid on his bed and stared at the ceiling.

“What happened? Your chat was so strange,” Liu Qing flew over and leaned on Ye Zichen’s shoulder.

Ye Zichen nodded with a smile. Even he begun to wonder why he actually agreed to King Qinguang’s request.

“The Underworld is in some trouble, so it looks like your time of revival is going to be delayed,” Ye Zichen patted Liu Qing’s head.

She shrugged without any displeasure, “Oh well, I’m fine as long as you bring me along by your side.”

“Sure!”

The following morning arrived into the blink of an eye. Ye Zichen called Xia Keke out to buy cosmetics. She had originally wanted to call Su Yan as well, but Su Yan told her that she wasn't free.

“What are you buying cosmetics for? You need to put on makeup as well?” Xia Keke tilted her head and blinked.

Ye Zichen knocked on her head with a dark look, “What are you thinking? Why do I need to put on makeup? Hurry up and choose a set of cosmetics, I need an entire set...”

“So strange!” Xia Keke walked off with a pout.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen stood on the spot and looked at the plentiful products in front of him with curiosity...

Eyeliners, eyeshadows, BB cream...

Women... Makeup is so much of a hassle.

“Yao Yue, is there something you like here? If there is, then just tell me,” the familiar name caused Ye Zichen to be stunned. He looked up in surprise and saw his ex-girlfriend, Yao Yue. She carried a limited edition name brand bag on her shoulder, while being surrounded by several girls around her like a celebrity.

“No need, you already bought so much for me. I feel so bad!” Even though Yao Yue said that, her eyes did not reveal any hint of

that at all. She liked the feeling of being surrounded by people, and loved the vanity...

Having someone to spend money for them was naturally good.

“I made you spend so much. How about this, I’ll call my boyfriend when I go back tonight and tell him to wire you the money.”

“No need, no need!” the rich girl beside Yao Yue quickly waved her hand. The reason she gave Yao Yue so much was to gain her affability.

As the saying goes, gifts blind the eyes.

Since Yao Yue took so much from me, then Yao Yue would definitely feel uncomfortable with directly refusing my request.

Maintaining Beauty Corporation is a huge corporation in the skincare industry, as long as my dad can get into contact with Maintaining Beauty...

Our family can definitely reach a new height.

Zeze...

Ye Zichen shook his head when he saw all that. It seemed like Yao Yue had gotten a new boyfriend, and the new boyfriend was

rather amazing. Otherwise, the girls wouldn't be so respectful towards her.

Ye Zichen shook his head with a chuckle. Yao Yue and him were already history. Ye Zichen had already experienced too much, so when he saw her, he no longer had any intention of taking revenge.

Since both of us have new lives, then I'll just silently wish the best for her.

Ye Zichen shook his head and left. At that moment...

"Yao Yue, look... Isn't that your boyfriend?"

Yao Yue's heart trembled. She subconsciously looked up at the figure within the shop and said with a smile, "How's that possible. He's extremely busy in the company right now. How could he come to a place like this!"

"Go over and take a look. It might really be him! Look, he came to a female cosmetics shop. Isn't it your birthday soon? He might want to give you a surprise?" The girls around Yao Yue teased her, while the rest nodded in agreement.

"Yeah, that's very possible. Your boyfriend is so romantic even after getting rich. I'm so jealous of you!"

These girls didn't know Yao Yue's relationship with Ye Zichen,

but Yao Yue understood clearly in her heart.

Birthday present!?

He might only send a wreath during my funeral!

The figure just now did seem to look like Ye Zichen, and since the girls around her continuously urged her on, she only felt more and more nervous...

If I really walk over, then I'll be exposed.

"I'm not going. Since he's preparing a surprise for me, then why should I go!?"

"He might prepare a even bigger surprise for you after meeting you there!" With that, the girls grabbed Yao Yue's arm and walked over, and did not give her any other choice...

"I said that I'm not going. Why are you guys making me go!?" Yao Yue suddenly got angry, causing the surrounding customers to look around.

The girl who dragged Yao Yue forward also looked down in shock and did not dare to say anymore.

"Say, you guys, Yao Yue since she's not going in, then there's no need to go!" the rich girl frowned, then held Yao Yue's arm with a

smile. “Don’t get angry at them. C’mon, let’s go and eat some dessert.”

But, at that very moment, Xia Keke walked out of the shop with her arms around Ye Zichen’s shoulder...

The two met their gaze with the girls...

Yao Yue’s expression drastically changed. Nervousness filled her eyes, while she begun to tremble slightly.

Am I about to be exposed?

“What a coincidence!”

After a long while, Ye Zichen broke the silence first.

All of Yao Yue’s roommates looked at her pitifully with the exception of the rich girl. So what if a man of his level has several woman outside...

My dad messes around outside all the time, but my mom is still the legal wife.

“Yeah, what a coincidence. Why aren’t you at the company?” Yao Yue bit her lips and said nervously.

Ye Zichen blinked, then raised his eyebrows at her in confusion, “What are you talking about?”

“No-Nothing!” Yao Yue shook her head, then dragged the rich girl beside her to leave.

The surrounding girls also glared at Ye Zichen fiercely before following suite.

“I offended them? Ye Zichen tilted his head in confusion.

Meanwhile, Xia Keke blinked in a moe manner, “I feel like I’m the one who offended them...”

Chapter 372 – Stone Fairy Learns to Put On Makeup

Both Ye Zichen and Xia Keke were rather confused when they thought back to the way the girls looked at them.

Thus, they couldn't help but wonder just how they offended the girls in their hearts.

The reason we went to the shop was just to buy a set of cosmetics, and it was completely unplanned. So were we not supposed to buy cosmetics...

Or perhaps they were only hostile towards us because they know that I'm Yao Yue's ex?

Fine, then I suppose it's my fault.

"Don't mind them, it might be because of me!" Ye Zichen shrugged helplessly.

Xia Keke couldn't help but frown, "What does it have to do with you? The two of you broke up because she cheated, it wasn't your fault."

"Who knows," Ye Zichen smiled, then rubbed Xia Keke's hair softly. "Ignore them, I still have an important mission for you."

When they got back into the car, Ye Zichen took out his phone, and went to find the Stone Fairy he had gotten into contact with the previous day.

“Stone Fairy, you there?”

“Yeah!”

Stone Fairy replied practically instantly.

Ye Zichen glanced over at Xia Keke, “You should know how to put on makeup, right?”

Even though he has known Xia Keke and the rest for a long time, he can’t recall seeing them with makeup on. Even if they did, it was a light makeup at best.

Since all of them looked amazing even without any makeup on, Ye Zichen truly had his suspicions that these girls completely ignored learning how to put on makeup because they were born with such beauty.

“Don’t ask this sort of idiotic question, alright?” Xia Keke rolled her eyes at him. “Do you think any university girls wouldn’t know how to put on makeup?”

“... I’ve never seen you with makeup on, so I thought that you might not know!”

“Tsk...” Xia Keke twitched her mouth. “I’m just too lazy to put any on, and am worried about being envied by those common girls. The prettier the girl, the better they are at putting on makeup. Got it?”

Ye Zichen smiled softly when he saw her tsundere-like reaction “Alright, it’s fine as long as you know how to put on makeup!”

“What? Don’t tell me that you want me to teach you how to put on makeup!” Xia Keke exclaimed as if she discovered a new continent. “I really couldn’t tell. You... I’ll definitely tell Susu when I get back.”

“Don’t overthink!” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes at her, then sent a response to Stone Fairy.

“Are you free? How about helping you become beautiful right now?”

“I’m always free.” Stone Fairy replied instantly once again. “What do you need me to do?”

“Mhmm, collect this red packet!”

Then, Ye Zichen directly sent over all of the cosmetics Xia Keke picked out.

Dingdong.

Stone Fairy received your red packet.

“What are all these? Zeze, the ingredients are so bad, and it’s actually harmful for the body.”

Ye Zichen was worried that Stone Fairy would retort, so he intentionally got Xia Keke to choose high-end cosmetics, but Stone Fairy still ended up retorting.

Fine, the Modern Realm cannot compare with the Heavenly Court. Since she was just pointing out how bad the ingredients are, I’ll admit it.

“Ignore what the ingredients are and how good the quality is. These can make you beautiful. Just tell me if you want to use it or not!”

“These shitty things can make laoniang beautiful?” Stone Fairy asked in disbelief. “Alright, someone that Little Brother Yang Jian introduced probably wouldn’t trick laoniang. Then tell me, what should I do?”

....

This fairy is definitely a strong independent woman in the Heavenly Court.

Ye Zichen thought quickly to himself, then handed his phone over to Xia Keke.

“What? You can’t possibly want me to teach Stone Fairy how to put on makeup, right!? No way, god knows if she’s a mistress you have outside...”

“Don’t overthink. This is a fairy from the Heavenly Court, I want to start a makeup class in the Heavenly Court...”

“Heavenly Court?” Xia Keke’s eyes lit up. She snatched over the phone with a giggle and muttered. “This is my first time dealing with anyone in the Heavenly Court since I was born!”

Yet, despite saying that, she did not chat seriously with Stone Fairy at all.

After a good half another has passed, Xia Keke directly told Stone Fairy all her knowledge about makeup.

“I can become pretty just by applying this shitty paste onto my face?”

Stone Fairy still didn’t believe it at all. These cosmetics were truly too low-leveled in her eyes. However, Xia Keke had made them sound so miraculous...

“Believe me, it’ll be alright!”

With that, Xia Keke did as Ye Zichen said, and sent Stone Fairy the makeup videos she prepared.

“Just do as I said, and follow the tutorial in the video.”

“Let me figure it out...”

Stone Fairy clicked on the video with her suspicions, then looked at the bottles in front of her with a frown.

At the same time, Xia Keke also returned the phone to Ye Zichen with a giggle, “Done!”

Ye Zichen rubbed her head again and smiled, “I’ll remember this achievement of yours!”

“No, I spent too much energy by teaching the fairy just now. A new dessert shop opened near our school. Take me there to eat!”

“Okay, okay, okay. Tell me the location, I’ll bring you over.” Ye Zichen began to drive with a smile.

At the same time, Yao Yue and her roommates also returned to her dorm.

While they were returning, Yao Yue did not utter a single word. All her other roommates thought that she was depressed after witnessing her boyfriend cheat on her.

However, she was nervous...

Just what would have happened if Ye Zichen exposed me there and then.

“Yao Yue, don’t mind too much. It’s very normal for a man of his level to have a few women outside,” the rich girl comforted Yao Yue when they got back to the dorm. “What you have to do is be forgiving. After he played enough outside, the one standing by his side will still be you.”

“I...” Yao Yue bit her lips as her heart struggled. There was many times that she wanted to come clean, but...

That damn vanity.

“Alright now, I can understand you very well, but I still advise you to not mind so much,” the rich girl smiled.

The other roommates also couldn’t help but retort, “I never thought that he was actually someone like that, and I actually followed his Weibo. I’m going to unsubscribe.”

With that, many of the girls ran over to their computers, while the rich girl continued to comfort Yao Yue by her side.

Approximately half an hour later, one of the girls stood up with a frown, then clapped in celebration, “The girl beside Yao Yue’s boyfriend is the school beauty of our school, right? Hmmph, now she’s notoriously famous!”

With that, the other girls all surrounded her computer, and saw that at the very top of the school’s forum was actually a thread about Xia Keke.

When they saw the contents...

Slap.

Yao Yue slapped the girl’s face, then shouted out crazily, “Who told you to do that!?”

At the same time, the phone of Xia Keke, who was eating dessert at the dessert shop near the school also rang.

Her expression drastically changed after picking up the phone. Then, she quickly hung up and logged onto the school’s forums...

“Who did this!?”

Chapter 373 – The Guilty Party Complains First

The face of Xia Keke, who was gripping her phone, was pale. Ye Zichen yanked the phone over in confusion, but when he saw the thread on the screen, he clenched his fist tightly.

Ye Zichen took out his phone and directly called Su Yiyun.

“Ye-zi!”

“Who is in charge of the school’s forums? Hurry up and get that person to delete the thread about Xia Keke, then help me find out the IP of the thread starter!”

Ye Zichen’s tone contained immeasurable rage. The original poster did way too much, that person was intentionally harming Xia Keke...

“What happened?” Su Yiyun was slightly stunned on the other end of the call.

“A thread about Xia Keke was posted on the school’s forums. Everything in it was intentionally harming her. Right now, there are tons of replies, so the thread is right at the top!”

“That happened? I’ll immediately go and deal with it.”

When Ye Zichen hung up the call, he looked up and saw Xia Keke's icy face as she clenched her fist tightly.

No wonder she's so angry, the contents of the thread were way too outrageous.

"Keke, I already got Su Yiyun to delete the threads. Calm down, I'll definitely help you get even after finding out who did it," Ye Zichen handed Xia Keke's phone over.

Xia Keke took it, then directly smashed it onto the floor.

This scene caused the customers within the store to look over at them.

At that moment, Xia Keke also squinted her eyes with a snort, "I really am a bit mad now."

A faint mirage of a golden dragon appeared from her body. All of the customers within the store couldn't help but shrink their necks, then hurriedly turned around without daring to look over.

"Don't mind it so much!" Ye Zichen comforted her.

"I don't mind!" Xia Keke smiled, while the coldness on her delicate face caused people to tremble. "I submit when they said that I'm a mistress! But the poster said that I was being paid good money by a rich man. Zeze... I really am curious, just which rich man is it? Why have I never received any money!?"

...

Xia Keke was truly angry. Not only her, even Ye Zichen was furious about the thread.

Buzz.

At that moment, Ye Zichen's phone rang, while the caller ID revealed that it was Su Yiyun.

"How is it?"

"I already got someone to delete the thread, and I've also found the IP of the original poster."

"Tell me the location!"

The girl, who posted the thread, covered her face and didn't even dared to move as she stood in the room. Yao Yue sat on the bed opposite her with an ice-cold gaze, while her heart beat quickly.

It really is all over now.

She had already told the girl to delete the thread immediately, but just as they were about to do so, the system already gave them a notification saying that it was already deleted.

Ever since Yao Yue received the news, her heart sank further and further.

“Yao Yue, don’t be so angry! That woman stole your boyfriend, so it’s good to teach her a bit of a lesson!” the rich girl comforted.

Yao Yue bit her lips and shook her head, “You don’t understand.”

She gripped her phone tightly in her hand, while the screen displayed Ye Zichen’s phone number. It was clear that she had been hesitating whether to dial the number or not...

Bang.

At that moment, the door to the dorm was kicked open. Xia Keke walked in with a cold and indifferent smile as she swept her gaze over the girls in the room.

“Who posted it?”

Ye Zichen stood behind her with a slightly awkward expression, while the dorm manager stood behind them.

“No fighting. That’s the school’s rules. Do you youngsters not want to stay in Polytechnic University anymore?” the dorm manager scolded them.

Xia Keke looked at everyone in the dorm with an indifferent gaze as if she didn't hear what the dorm manager said, "Let me ask you again. Who sent it? Stand forward!"

"Who are you trying to scare? I posted the thread, so what?" the girl who posted the thread straightened her neck. "You seduced someone else's boyfriend, and you're not letting anyone talk about it?"

"So it's you!" Xia Keke nodded with a squint of her eyes. "Who's boyfriend did I seduce? Tell me!"

"It's..."

"Enough!" Just as the girl was about to speak, Yao Yue, who sat on the bed, suddenly stood up and quickly walked in front of Xia Keke. She lowered her head and apologized. "Sorry, this is my roommate's fault. Allow me to apologize to you on her behalf. Can we just leave it at this?"

"It has nothing to do with you, go away," Xia Keke squinted her eyes. "The reason I came here is to find out just which rich man is paying me to be with him! Please tell me so I can go and ask him for money!"

"Can you stop asking!?" Yao Yue roared at Xia Keke. Her heart was in a mess. She subconsciously glanced towards Ye Zichen and her roommates, then she made up her mind. "You seduced my boyfriend and actually came over to calmly to interrogate my roommate. Do you still care about face!? I gave you face and

wanted to settle everything like this. Why did you take a mile when given an inch? Do you really think that I won't get angry?"

"Yeah, Yao Yue, the legal wife should be like this," Yao Yue's roommates immediately supported her, while they started to cursed at Xia Keke, calling her names and saying that she was shameless etc.

"Seduce your boyfriend?" Xia Keke suddenly laughed.

"You actually dare to continue smiling?"

When Yao Yue did not reveal everything at the very beginning, she had already lost her other choices. She could only continuously use lie after lie to cover up which was a lie in the first place.

She could have come clean just moments ago, but she was afraid of being criticized by her roommates...

Since more and more bystanders began to watch, she began to worry about being called shameless, and worried about how she would never be able to lift up her head in front of other people once again. Thus, she had no other choice, she could only continue on with her wrongs, and complain first.

"Ye Zichen is clearly my boyfriend. I can tolerate a man for being fickle in love, I can turn a blind eye to him courting you outside. My roommates merely helped me let off some steam, and now that the thread has already been deleted, you actually still dared to

cause trouble for me!” Yao Yue’s words completely stunned Xia Keke and Ye Zichen...

“Have you no shame?” Xia Keke nearly laughed when she said that. She had never seen a woman as shameless as Yao Yue.

“You clearly know who’s the shameless one here,” Yao Yue made up her mind. Now, even if Ye Zichen spoke up, she would not back down.

Several days ago, she had gone over to a phone store to recover all of her past photos with Ye Zichen in order for her roommates to completely believe that Ye Zichen was her boyfriend.

“You were clearly the one who cheated. You and Ye Zichen have already been broken up for nearly two months and you actually still dare to say that he’s your boyfriend?”

“Bullshit!” Yao Yue said darkly. “Don’t try to accuse me, just look at who you are...”

Xia Keke trembled in anger. All of a sudden Xia Keke moved her lips, but wasn’t sure of what to say.

“You can’t say anything now? Hehe... A mistress is a mistress!” With that, Yao Yue looked up at Ye Zichen with a cold life. “Manage your mistress. I’ve given you enough face outside, but don’t be too outrageous as to let her disturb my peace!”

Meanwhile, the suddenly discussions got louder and louder, most of which talked negatively about Ye Zichen and Xia Keke.

Xia Keke was a girl, so there was no way she was able to endure all the insults.

“You...”

At that moment, Ye Zichen, who had stayed silent until that point, patted Xia Keke’s shoulders, then walked forward and glanced at Yao Yue speechlessly, “Yao Yue, does it actually have to go this way? You still have the chance to stop!”

Chapter 374 – Completely Ruined

Stop.

A crazed look flashed across Yao Yue's face. There is no way that I'll stop now.

I have no other choice, I can only continue making this mistake.

“Hehe... What do you mean by this? What, since she served you well, and you've become successful, do you think that I am unworthy of you? Ye Zichen, don't forget who was with you in your darkest hours,” Yao Yue's passionate appearance caused the surrounding girls to all voice their support.

However, Ye Zichen merely looked at Yao Yue as if she was a pitiful child.

Yao Yue felt very uncomfortable due to Ye Zichen's gaze, so she raised her hand and slapped, “You traitor, screw off... I don't want to see you. Screw off!”

“Speak out the truth. I can pretend that nothing happened. We'll just end it at this if you apologize to Xia Keke, okay?”

“Apologize to her? Neither of you are anything good. F*ck off!” Yao Yue grabbed the pillow on her bed and threw it.

However, Ye Zichen did not allow her to just let off steam like before. He raised his hand to grab the incoming pillow, then walked coldly beside Yao Yue's bed to put it down.

Then, he turned around.

He had been forgiving enough, but... she didn't want to turn back.

Under everyone's criticism, Ye Zichen held Xia Keke's trembling hands and left.

The moment they walked out of the room, Yao Yue fell down onto the floor, while her eyes twitched. She grabbed her hair with her right hand.

Just what was I doing!?

“Yao Yue, don't cry, it's that unfaithful jerked who wronged you.”

All of Yao Yue's roommates surrounded her, while the bystanding students outside their room walked in to comfort her. In the fight between truth and lies, Yao Yue had gained everybody's support using her superior acting skills.

I won.

“Yes, that bastard wronged me!” Yao Yue stood up with red eyes. She walked in front of her computer, and opened the school’s forums, then posted a thread in her own name...

The thread was filled with intimate photos of her and Ye Zichen, while the text following those photos insulted Ye Zichen, Xia Keke and all of his women.

At that moment, she had already gone mad. She had made up a dream for herself not so long ago. She had understood very clearly that all of that was a mere dream a few moments ago, and she had to wake up from the dream one day.

However, now, she was already submerged in it, and was no longer able to wake up.

People already paid huge attention to Xia Keke in Polytechnic University, and with the thread calling her a mistress, and the fact that someone had called her out with their real name, the number of replies shot up to new heights.

Xia Keke was not the only one involved in it. Even Su Yan, Lu Lu and the other school beauties, and even Xiao Yumei was included.

Buzz...

The phone on Yao Yue’s desk buzzed. She looked at the message on her screen with bloodshot eyes.

“Are you really going to continue on with your mistake?”

The person who sent the message was Ye Zichen.

“Stop shitting me. You wronged me, so don’t blame me for this! Wait till you are completely ruined!”

Yao Yue replied with a cold laugh, then chunked the phone onto the bed, while beginning to post threads in all the major forums she could think of.

She wasn’t going to make only the entire school know, she was going to make the entire world know that Ye Zichen was an unfaithful bastard, and all of the women around him were shameless mistresses.

She was going to ruin all those people completely.

Ye Zichen smiled wryly within the dorm as he looked at Yao Yue’s reply. Until that moment, he had still wanted to give that pitiful woman, Yao Yue, a chance, but... She refused to realize her own error.

“Ye-zi, since she has already done this, then there is no need to worry anymore!”

“F*ck, she really is shameless to a new level. If this happened to laozi, laozi would definitely slap that dumb bitch to death!”

“She’s so shameless. Wow, I’ve never seen anyone this shameless in my entire life!”

All of Ye Zichen’s roommates also paid attention to the situation of the threads in the different forums, while they transformed into keyboard warriors to help Ye Zichen and co. come clean.

“Never mind, since you want to be ruined completely, then I... will let you have it!” Ye Zichen let out a sad sigh. I clearly didn’t want things to come to this. But why did she not listen?

Ye Zichen dialed the number of his phone, then said coldly, “Begin!”

In a short ten-odd minutes, threads talking about the truth begun to appear in the school’s forum and all the other major forums. All of these threads clearly stated the relationship between Ye Zichen and Yao Yue, as well as their conflict...

What’s more, they even contained powerful proof of Yao Yue cheating on Ye Zichen.

In three hours, the number of searches Ye Zichen, Yao Yue and co. shot up. As both sides continuously revealed more evidence, the truth became rather confusing.

All of a sudden, the viewpoints in the different forums came into conflict.

Yao Yue, who was paying attention to all that smiled, “You are forcing me.”

With that, she contacted the water army leader that she had called a while before...

“It’s time for your debut!”

“Ye-zi, that bitch hired a water army!” Zhang Rui raised his eyebrows. “I already told my friends to refuse this job, but she is already dead set on it. She hired an astronomical number of them, and now all of the discussion within the forums are against your side...”

“The price of Maintaining Beauty Corporation’s is also wavering,” Su Yiyun said with a frown.

Since Ye Zichen was the true owner of Maintaining Beauty Corporation, the fact that the internet was flooded with negative news towards him impacted Maintaining Beauty Corporation as well.

“She truly did everything she could. I didn’t actually want to use this evidence at all, since it will truly impact her too much,” Ye Zichen let out a sigh.

Su Yiyun snorted coldly, “It’s already come to this, so why do you mind at all. My little sister is also involved, even if you don’t want

it to get out of hand, I can't possibly let it go just like this."

"Mhmm," Ye Zichen nodded, then took out his phone once again to dial a number. "You can release it now."

At that moment, Yao Yue was sitting proudly on her chair. Taking the first move was of use in any situation.

Right now, the internet is filled with criticism against Ye Zichen and co., while I'm the victim...

Not only did I not lose this? It has turned me into an internet celebrity.

Just as a smug appeared on her face, a bunch of videos appeared on the various forums. The moment she clicked open the videos...

Yao Yue's expression stiffened.

All of the videos were security video camera recordings. It displayed her... with Guo Qiang as they mocked Ye Zichen, alongside... evidence of her getting a room with Guo Qiang.

At the same time, words from a man claiming to be Guo Qiang also appeared on the internet.

Ba-thump.

Yao Yue fell limply onto the floor. Her face turned stark white, while she began to tremble.

At the same time, Ye Zichen, who saw the stream of Guo Qiang's words, shook his head as he looked at Yao Yue's message on his screen.

“You’ve been completely ruined. Yao Yue! Is this what you really wanted?”

Chapter 375 – Makeup Spokesperson

Since this event affected a lot of things, and a lot of people, the names within the threads became heated topics that people searched for. Out of these names, Yao Yue and Ye Zichen's name were the most searched.

Yao Yue's actions caused the situation to develop to a point that there was no space for any negotiation any longer. As the different sites continued to play Guo Qiang's video, the clicks on the videos captured by the security cameras exceeded ten million.

In the end...

Yao Yue lost.

Yao Yue held her head with her hands and trembled. After her roommates saw the security clip, and Guo Qiang's stream, the way they looked towards Yao Yue completely changed.

"I seem to have seen this man by Yao Yue's side before."

"Yao Yue, was it fun?" the rich girl also stood up from her bed. She tilted her head and looked at Yao Yue with a sneer. "Was it worth tricking us for so long just for the clothes and bags? Have you no shame? Should I say that you hid it well, or should we call ourselves foolish. I've actually never doubted you!"

"Would you have gotten tricked by me if it wasn't because you

wanted to gain something from me? Actually, since it was a willing thing, you can't blame me for it," Yao Yue stood up from the floor with a cold smile.

The rich girl shrugged with a nod, "Indeed. There is no doubt that I did want to get something from you, but it seems like I'm unable to get anything. Of course, since I gifted those to you, then so be it. This lady doesn't care about that trash anyways. But, now you're notorious. Also, I do have to pay you back for tricking me!"

With that, the rich girl took out her phone and dialed a number under Yao Yue's slightly terrified gaze.

"Ye-zi. Wow. Your move was basically a killer move!" Su Yiyuan put his hand on Ye Zichen's shoulder with a smile, then glanced at the changes in the stock market. "If there is no surprise, then our corporation's stock will definitely start to rise. The impact of this incident will cause you to be a controversial topic for half a month at the very least... Seriously, this woman, Yao Yue probably never would have dreamed that all her actions merely helped us out!"

Everyone in the dorm nodded with smiles as if they just won a war. However, Ye Zichen could not feel any sense of joy.

Was this result really what I wanted to see?

I clearly didn't want it to end up like this, but why didn't she listen to me.

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Stone Fairy increased by 200. Current intimacy level: 400.

Ye Zichen's phone vibrated. He took out his phone to look at the system notification. Then, after a short while, a small "one" popped by on his chat with Stone Fairy.

"Kid, you really didn't trick me."

Stone Fairy was beyond happy. She never expected that the stuff that she thought was trash actually helped her become pretty.

Even though she spent her entire afternoon figuring out how to put on makeup, and didn't walk outdoors to let others see her.

She was certain that as long as she wandered around the Southern Heaven's Gate, the stinky men would definitely be shocked.

"Mhmm!"

Due to the incident with Yao Yue, Ye Zichen felt rather sad the entire time, so he merely replied indifferently.

Then, Stone Fairy spoke up once again.

“Say it, what do you want me to help you with? I will definitely do what I can as long as I can do it!”

“No need for so much trouble, just walk around more in the Heavenly Court. Also, when you chat with the other deities in the Heavenly Court, just unintentionally reveal that I am going to start makeup lessons. If they are interested, then drag them into the group!”

With that, Ye Zichen dragged both Erlang Shen and Stone Fairy into a new group.

Erlang Shen: Bro, this group... Oh, Heavenly Court Makeup Lesson.

Stone Fairy: Little Brother Yang Jian, come out with Big Sis later.

Erlang Shen: Let's not! <insert a roll of emojis with sweat drops as they smile>

Stone Fairy: Don't come if you want to die.

Erlang Shen ignored the pair's conversation within the group. He merely clicked back to his chat with Stone Fairy and typed out another message.

“The group just now was the Makeup Group. If they're interested, then invite them in. The lesson will start when there is 20 people in the group.”

“No problem, I can do something as simple as this,” Stone Fairy replied without any hesitation. “Is there anything else you need my help with?”

At that moment, Ye Zichen did not walk to think too much into it. He shook his head as he replied, “There doesn’t seem to be anything right now. I’ll tell you when I think of it! Of yeah, remember to use the massage cream. It will help your skin and physique a lot.”

“No problem!”

After Stone Fairy ended her chat with Ye Zichen, she mentioned Yang Jian in the group and told him to prepare to go out with her.

Yang Jian merely sat onto his vine chair with a troubled expression. He felt extremely troubled after seeing Stone Fairy’s message!

Going out with this sis is definitely a miraculous experience.

Yang Jian licked his lips, then spammed in his chat with Ye Zichen.

“Bro, bro!”

“What is it?”

Ye Zichen had already gotten ready to put his phone down and rest, but when he saw Yang Jian's message, he had already guessed what Yang Jian wanted to ask him about.

“Stone Fairy succeeded with putting on makeup. You can try and go out with her. It won't make you lose face.”

“Bro, you do get me.”

Yang Jian immediately replied with a smile.

After seeing the response, Ye Zichen shook his head speechlessly before he chucked his phone to the side of his bed, rolled over, and stared blankly at the ceiling.

...

“Mom, I don't want to go to school anymore,” Yao Yue shrunk her body as she squatted in the corner of a room. At that moment, her clothes were already in shambles, while plenty of palm marks covered her face and body...

As she mumbled to her mother on the phone, the door to the room was pushed open. The person who walked in was a thin man with a smile on his face.

“You... You...” Yao Yue subconsciously hung up the call, and

looked at the man in terror.

“Zeze, truly a pitiful girl,” the man walked over with a pitiful gaze. He lifted Yao Yue’s chin with his right hand. “You look pretty good too...”

“What do you want?”

“Don’t be nervous!” the man caressed her cheeks, then smiled. “According to what I know, you ended up like this because of Ye Zichen, right?”

“No... it was due to me!” Yao Yue shook her head with force.

However, the man shook his head and refuted her, “No, it was Ye Zichen’s fault. If he still cared for you ever so slightly, then he wouldn’t have done it to such an extreme, and you wouldn’t have turned into someone that everybody detests.”

“No...”

“Stop denying it. Actually, you already know in your heart, right? Do you not want to make those people who bullied you pay? Don’t you want to see Ye Zichen and the women around him be completely ruined, then make them experience what you feel right now?”

“I-I do!” Yao Yue suddenly looked up. She bit her lips, and clenched her fist.

“That’s right, isn’t it?” the man touched Yao Yue’s face with a chuckle, then reached below her neck.

Yao Yue subconsciously wanted to refuse.

However, the man also spoke up at the same time, “Listen to me properly. I can help you get revenge!”

Chapter 376 – Murder in School

Deep in the night.

Yao Yue returned to her dorm with a cold smile. When she returned her roommates were still sitting together talking about her.

“I really didn’t expect it. How can someone be that shameless!”

“Yeah, she actually tricked so many of us. She even slapped me... I’m angry just thinking about him!”

“What’s there to get angry about?” the rich girl smiled meaningfully, then twirled her fingers, while a look of disdain could be seen on her face. “I already helped you guys teach her a lesson. Didn’t you she slap you once? I got her slapped ten times!”

“Jing-jie is still the most amazing one,” all of the girls in the dorm smiled in flattery...

Back.

At that moment, the door to the dorm was suddenly kicked open. When everybody looked back, they saw Yao Yue walk in, her clothes in shambles.

“You still have face to return?” the rich girl smiled meaningfully,

then raised her eyebrows at Yao Yue's messed up clothing. "Zeze, it seems like they screwed you up pretty nicely. It truly is a shame that I didn't go and record it!"

"Hehe..." Yao Yue suddenly smiled coldly. Seeing that, the rich girl immediately raised her hand to hit Yao Yue.

"Cutie, you can't hit my darling!"

The hand the rich girl raised was suddenly grabbed by a man. All of the girls within the dorm looked at the man in shock, because they did not see anyone behind Yao Yue before.

"Who are you? Let go of me!" the rich girl struggled.

Yao Yue suddenly raised her hand and slapped the rich girl repeatedly.

"Yao Yue!" the rich girl felt as if she was going crazy. She had never once been bullied like that.

"Hehe..." Yao Yue merely laughed sinisterly in response. Then, a sharp dagger suddenly appeared in her hands.

The rich girl suddenly stopped daring to speak. She trembled and spoke with a forced smile, "Yao Yue, don't act impulsively. Didn't you say that you like Maserati Quattroporte last time? I'll give one to you!"

“Hehe, do you think that... I need it?” Yao Yue suddenly laughed coldly, then stabbed the dagger in her hands towards the rich girl’s neck without any hesitation. Blood immediately began to spurt out.

Seeing that, the surrounding girls also tried to run outside the room frantically...

However, when they reached the door, they noticed that they were unable to run out no matter how much they tried.

Bang.

Yao Yue casually pushed the rich girl, causing the girl to fall limply towards the floor. The, she also turned around with the dagger and walked towards the other girls.

...

Buzz...

Six o’clock the next morning.

As the sky just started to turn bright, a screeching siren sounded out within Polytechnic University. Many students were awoken by this siren, including Ye Zichen.

He opened his eyes blurrily, and subconsciously took out his phone to look at WeChat, and saw that White Impermanence had sent him a message.

“I’m going out to work at Polytechnic University. Is that anywhere close to your place?”

Work at Polytechnic University? Could someone have died here?

Ye Zichen put his phone to the side with a confused expression and looked up, only to see that everyone else had already gotten up from their beds.

This is too unusual...

“No, what happened? Why did you guys wake up so early? What’s the siren outside for?”

“A murder happened at our girls’ dorms. When Yao Yue came back during midnight, she killed all the girls in her room. The bailiffs, and people from the police department and Department of Education are all here! Our school’s in a complete mess right now!” Zhang Rui pushed up his glasses and replied with a frown.

Hearing that news, Ye Zichen immediately sat up from his bed.

“What? Murder!?”

Ye Zichen quickly got dressed, then hurried to the girls' dormitory as fast as he could without even washing up.

Ten-odd police cars parked outside the dorm, while police and bailiffs continuously walked around the scene.

Plenty of girls in pajamas and slippers were being questioned, but all of them said that they did not hear any unusual sound the previous night.

“Zichen-gege!” Su Yan and her roommates were also there, and when they saw Ye Zichen, they immediately ran over.

“Murder. Yao Yue... killed everyone in her room?” Ye Zichen could not even imagine Yao Yue doing something like that.

Su Yan nodded, while her twitching eyes revealed the terror in her heart, “All of them. When we passed by her room just now, we saw that their room was covered in blood.”

“Who called the police?” Ye Zichen frowned.

Su Yan raised her eyebrows and spoke up, “It seems to be Guo Jing, who lives in that room. She didn't stay in the dorm the previous night. When she returned and noticed this, she immediately called the police...”

“Guo Jing?”

“It’s the rich girl in their room,” Xia Keke also frowned. “You’ve seen her. She stood beside Yao Yue when we went to their room yesterday.”

“That girl...” Ye Zichen nodded blankly. However, his heart was still completely shocked.

I don’t understand why Yao Yue would actually go and kill people? Did I force her to do this!?

“It’s him...” At that moment, a loud yell sounded out beside Ye Zichen.

He turned back and saw Guo Jing, who had bloodshot eyes, walk over with a few police officers, “It’s this person. If it wasn’t for him, then Yao Yue wouldn’t have done something this crazy.”

“Guo Jing, shut your damn mouth!” Xia Keke cursed. “What did Ye Zichen do? What does Yao Yue killing people have anything to do with him!”

“Yes, not just him, it’s you guys as well!” Guo Jing pointed her fingers in sadness and cursed. “If it wasn’t for you guys, would Yao Yue had been forced into that situation? You mistresses who stole Yao Yue’s boyfriend. Also, you, Ye Zichen, isn’t any good shit. Unfaithful bastard, you started to mess around just after getting rich!”

At that moment, white-cloth covered stretchers were carried out. Seeing that, Guo Jing immediately leaped over and started to sob.

“Yao Yue... Why did you act so foolishly!”

At the same time, a few police officers also walked over, “Captain, we have surveyed the place thoroughly. The reason of death is initially judged to be due to the wounds by a sharp object. We will need to wait for the forensic reports for the details.”

“Mhmm, understood. We’re heading back!” the police officer with a hat on waved towards his team members. Then, he turned around to Ye Zichen and co. “Sorry, you guys also need to come with us to the police station for investigation.”

“Okay,” Ye Zichen answered without thinking, while his gaze remained on the stretchers.

He really could not understand why the situation turned out like this. Could it be that everything was really my fault?

Chapter 377 – Substitution

Within the interrogation room.

Ye Zichen sat on the chair with a despondent look on his face. The police officer from the scene walked over and placed his notebook on the desk.

“I got a brief understanding of the situation from Guo Jing. I feel like we can’t press any charges against you.”

Ye Zichen nodded silently, then after a long while he finally spoke up, “Did... they all die?”

“They’re all dead,” the police officer nodded in confirmation. “The murderer committed suicide after killing all the victims. The situation of the case is definite now, there is nothing else to truly investigate. You are safe now.”

“Is that so!” Ye Zichen smiled wryly as he stood up from his chair. When he walked out of the interrogation room, he saw that people he knew were all waiting for him outside the door. Not only Su Yan and co. were there, even Liu Jing’s father, Commissioner Liu was there.

“You also came!” Ye Zichen smiled wryly once again.

Commissioner Liu nodded, “I heard that you got into some trouble from Lil’ Zhang, so I came over to take a look. How is the

situation?”

“I’m fine,” Ye Zichen shook his head with a smile. “You should receive the report from your subordinates very soon...”

At that moment, the officer who chatted with Ye Zichen walked out. When he saw Commissioner Liu, he quickly walked over.

“Commissioner Liu, why did you come? That being said, I do have a case I want to talk with you about, could you...”

“Let’s go!”

After Commissioner Liu and the police officer left, Ye Zichen and co. also exited the police station. During their journey back, Ye Zichen was in a very foul mood...

Murder.

Suicide!

Why did she do something like that?

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen’s phone buzzed. When he took out his phone, he saw that it was a message from White Impermanence.

“Where are you? Let’s meet. We haven’t met up in so long!”

“Where are you now?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and asked.

“I’m still at Polytechnic University. I’ve only just now caught the ghosts....” White Impermanence replied.

“Then wait there for me. I’ll come back immediately!”

“Okay.”

Approximately some ten-odd minutes later, Ye Zichen immediately raced to the girls’ dormitory after returning back to school. There, White Impermanence waited for him as she wandered around while yanking four spiritual bodies along.

“Hey, you came!”

When she saw Ye Zichen, she immediately ran over.

Ye Zichen took a glance at the ghosts in her hands. Those ghosts were the girls in Yao Yue’s room, but what was strange was that all of them had a blank look on their face. Even when they saw Ye Zichen, they did not act like they recognized him at all.

Strange.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, then suddenly noticed that Yao Yue's spirit was not present.

“You only caught four ghosts here? Didn't five die?”

“When I came out, they did say that five died, but I only found the four of them here. These little fellows are rather pitiful, they had a spiritual and a physical soul taken away from them. Even if they go through the cycle of reincarnation, they will only be idiots!”

A spiritual and a physical soul taken away!

Ye Zichen was shocked. King Qinguang had told him before that many of the ghosts entering the Underworld lacked a spiritual and a physical soul...

He had once suspected that to be the work of the demons. Did the demon race already stretch their claws over here?

But, where did Yao Yue's soul go?

“Strange, too strange.”

Ye Zichen knitted his eyebrows tightly...

Fiery Eyes of Truth, activate!

A faint golden light surfaced from his eyes. When he looked towards the girls' dormitory, he noticed that there was no demonic energy in the dormitory at all.

If a demon actually came, then the demonic energy here should be intense.

Even if a long time has passed, there should still be traces of it.

But, I can't feel any demonic energy here at all.

"Hey, what are you thinking?" White Impermanence waved.

Only then did Ye Zichen return to his senses with a smile, "It's nothing."

"Mm, I just wanted to come and see you. The Underworld is rather busy, so I have to hurry back."

"Alright, then keep doing your thing!"

White Impermanence then disappeared with the female ghosts instantly. After that, Ye Zichen gazed at the girls' dormitory... For a long time.

At the same time, in a room inside a commercial hotel.

Guo Jing sat on the sofa within the room in a bathrobe, while a smiling man was beside her.

“How is it? Are you used to this body?”

“It’s alright,” Guo Jing nodded indifferently. “But using someone else’s body is still troublesome. When her parents called just now, I was rather worried.”

“What’s there to worry about? Just use her body calmly!” the man smiled darkly and took out a small glass vial from his pocket. “Guo Jing’s soul is inside this vial. If you don’t understand anything, then ask her.”

“Soul?”

“Don’t try to know too much. We’re just cooperating,” the man smiled darkly once again. “From now on, you’re Guo Jing. I will tell you what you need to do in the future.”

“Actually-Actually, I feel like this is enough, I don’t want to do anymore!”

“It’s no longer an issue of whether you want to, my darling!” the man patted Guo Jing’s cheek with a smile. “From the moment you agreed to my terms of exchanging bodies, you’re already in on this. It’s impossible for you to give up halfway! Now, just calmly work for me, I... will not treat you badly!”

“Then when can I return to my own body!” Guo Jing frowned.

“That would depend on how obedient you are,” with that, the man opened his bathrobe and spread his legs. “Come, my darling!”

...

After Ye Zichen left the girls’ dormitory, he did not return to his own dorm, and instead returned to his mansion.

“Why did you rush back in such a hurry?” Ye Rong couldn’t help but raise her eyebrows when she saw how desperate Ye Zichen looked. “Wait a moment, Mom will go and wash some fruits for you.”

“No need!” Ye Zichen quickly stopped his mother. “I came here because there is something I want to trouble you with.”

“What is it?”

“Can you feel the existence of demons in Bingcheng?”

With that, Mother Ye immediately closed her eyes, while her body shimmered with a holy light. Not long later, she opened her eyes once more and shook her head, “No. What is it? Did the demons stretch their claws to Bingcheng?”

Rage flashed across Mother Ye's eyes. She had no affable feeling towards any of the demon race at all.

"N-No, I'm just asking," Ye Zichen shook his head with a coy smile. "There really isn't anything, keep doing what you were going to do!"

"Ai, then mom will go and wash some fruits for you," Ye Rong turned around and left without thinking too much into it.

At that moment, Lil' White ran over with his tongue out.

"Boss, you're looking for demons?"

"Mhm," Ye Zichen nodded.

Lil' White immediately replied, "I can sense where the demons are!"

Chapter 378 – Don't Use Him

Three days passed by in the blink of an eye.

The situation unfolded as Su Yiyun predicted, as the stock of Maintaining Beauty continued to rise during the three days, causing the company's market worth to more than double itself.

“Sorry, the comments on the internet affected you quite a lot, right?” Ye Zichen said apologetically while sitting on the sofa in Xiao Yumei's office.

During the past few days, she essentially did not leave her home at all since the entrance was continuously flooded with a group of journalists, and that situation only turned for the better today.

“What's there to be sorry about? I was just worried that talking would cause an unwanted impact. Otherwise, it isn't a problem for me to admit that I'm your mistress. You aren't actually married yet, so it's not like I destroyed your family's happiness. Just what sort of thing can those gossip tabloids makeup?” Xiao Yumei stood up from her chair with a smile and sat down next to Ye Zichen. She immediately kissed him on his cheeks. “But you, you managed to help our stock rise so much. What sort of reward do you want?”

If it was normally, Ye Zichen definitely would not be able to resist it when Xiao Yumei said something so seductive. However, he had been worried about things to do with the demon race for the past few days, so he was not in the mood.

“Give some money to the victims’ families. Even if it wasn’t my fault that Yao Yue murdered them, she wouldn’t have done it if that incident didn’t happen,” Ye Zichen signed.

Xiao Yumei pursed her lips and smiled, “My little man is truly kind. Although, you didn’t need to say that at all. I already have people on it.”

“That’s for the best,” Ye Zichen smiled.

The two continued to chat for a while until it was lunch time.

“My little man, let’s go to dinner together. We haven’t ate together for so long.”

“It’s not too long, right?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. “We ate together in the capital.”

Ye Zichen wanted to hurry back to the mansion. Other people were unable to detect the demonic energy because it was too faint, but Lil’ White could sense it, and he had spent the last three days tracking it.

Ye Zichen wanted to go back to the mansion to ask Lil’ White about how the tracking is going.

“I said it’s been ages, so it is. Are you going or not?” Xiao Yumei said with her hands on her hips.

Seeing that, Ye Zichen immediately shrugged and gave in, “I’m going, I’m going, okay?”

“Humph!”

Only then did Xiao Yumei smile proudly as she wrapped her arm around Ye Zichen’s and left the building.

To be frank, Ye Zichen did not know why the women around him all liked to eat foreign food. From his perspective, it was nowhere as cost efficient as random stews...

The place where Xiao Yumei took him was a new Thai restaurant. Since Ye Zichen was completely clueless when it came to Thai food, he naturally handed the task of ordering to Huge Beauty Xiao.

“What? Can you be happier when eating with me?” Xiao Yumei couldn’t help but say after ordering when she noticed that Ye Zichen’s eyebrows were still knitted closely together. That was how he has been ever since they left the company.

“I’m just thinking, there’s been too many things annoying me recently,” Ye Zichen replied apologetically.

Xiao Yumei immediately twitched her mouth and held out outstretched hand, “Don’t pressure yourself too much. You aren’t Christ, understood?”

“Mhmm,” Ye Zichen nodded with a smile.

All of a sudden, an angry roar sounded out in the restaurant, “Waiter, waiter... Just what kind of shitty store is this place?”

A waiter quickly ran over, and asked questioningly with his hands at his side, “Sir, is there anything about our restaurant that’s not to your liking?”

“I heard that your restaurant manager wants this restaurant to be for the elite only. Normal people can’t even get in, right?”

“That is the case, sir,” the waiter nodded in confirmation. “Our restaurant is made for elites .The only people that can enter are all elites of a certain field.”

“Then what about their table?” The man pointed at Ye Zichen’s table with a frown and cursed. “I don’t feel any kind of the aura of an elite from their table. That is clearly just a rich man’s mistress and her sugar baby.”

The waiter’s expression drastically changed. Many people in the surrounding area looked over at Ye Zichen’s table, but were completely shocked when they saw the people at the table.

“Seriously...” Ye Zichen shook his head with a wry smile. Why is there so much trouble when we only came out to eat?

“What are you spacing out for? I request you to kick those two out. They are severely affecting my appetite. I have a guest coming later, so what is this supposed to be?”

“Song An, you just like to seek thrills so much? Ye Zichen, who didn’t want the trouble, stood up and walked in front of Song An with a mocking laugh. “What? Did I not teach you enough of a lesson on the plane?”

“Oh, it’s junior!” Song An immediately smiled in surprise when he saw Ye Zichen. “I didn’t see your figure clearly from the back. I definitely would not have said that if I knew it was junior. Sorry, sorry!”

“Hehe, did you know that you’re sick?”

“Hmm?” Song An did not catch his drift.

Ye Zichen pointed his finger at Song An’s head. “Brain damage!”

“Say that again!?” Song An’s expression immediately turned cold.

At that very moment, the door of the restaurant was pushed open. Deng Cheng and Liu Qianqian walked in side by side.

“Elder Deng!” Song An immediately hid the gloominess of his face, and walked over with a warm smile.

“Song An, you actually remembered to come back to work in our nation after studying in the US for so long. Not bad!”

“It is what I should do,” Song An nodded with a smile.

Deng Cheng smiled in satisfaction, then noticed Ye Zichen, who was standing beside Song An. “Lil’ Ye is here as well.”

“Gramps, your eyesight is just... I’m standing right here, can you not be so surprised?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

Deng Cheng immediately chuckled, “I’m old, so my eyesight is naturally not as good. Isn’t it normal for me not to have seen you?”

Song An couldn’t help but interrupt with a frown when he noticed that the two people in front of him chatted more and more, “Elder Deng, you and this little... junior know each other?”

“Naturally. Song An, let me introduce you. This person is called Ye Zichen. His medical skills are amazing, and even I have to learn from him,” Deng Cheng smiled humbly.

However, Song An’s expression turned for the worse.

Noticing that, Deng Cheng was rather surprised.

At the same time, Ye Zichen also chuckled, “Gramps, you can’t

have been invited here by Song An, right? He wants to be a doctor at your hospital?”

“Yeah!” Deng Cheng nodded. However, he couldn’t help but ask when he noticed Ye Zichen’s meaningful smile. “What is it? Is there any problem?”

“Problem?” Ye Zichen suddenly snickered. “It’s a huge problem, but I don’t want to be so blunt, since I do have to leave some face for your Master Song. However, I do have to remind you... It would be better if your hospital doesn’t accept him!”

Chapter 379 – Plan A Succeeded

“What did you say?” Song An’s expression immediately turned cold as he snorted with a mocking smile. “Little fellow, this is not a place for you to act out of line!”

“Then is this a place for you to act out of line?” Ye Zichen smiled. “I was merely telling Gramps to choose doctors properly. What? You aren’t letting people speak their mind now?”

At that moment, Deng Cheng suddenly reached his hand out towards Song An...

“Sorry, Mr. Song. I feel like you are unable to work with our hospital anymore. I hope you will find a way out in other hospitals.”

Elder Deng’s words completely shocked Song An.

“Elder Deng, are you kidding? Just because of what this brat said, you...”

“I believe in Lil’ Ye’s words,” Deng Cheng smiled.

Hearing that, Song An couldn’t help but cursed with a frown, “Foolish old man!”

“Can I interpret that as you cursing me?” Deng Cheng’s

expression suddenly turned cold.

Xiao Yumei also snickered on the side, “Mr. Song, your words just now have caused huge troubles for me. I will tell my lawyer to send you a lawyer letter later.”

“Zeze, lawyer letter? Sorry, I’m American!” Song An sneered with a snort, as he said with a tone full of disdain. “Just a bunch like you want to sue me? Do you even dare?”

“So cocky!”

Bang.

Ye Zichen directly kicked Song An to the ground. Then, he squinted his eyes with a snort, “We’re not only going to sue you, we even beat you up. So what? You gonna find the American Consulate to punish me? Seriously, instead of being a good Huaxia citizen, you started to act cocky just because you’re an American now. Don’t forget, this is Huaxia!”

“Mr. Ye,” the waiter was unsure of what to do, and the restaurant owner also gulped after he rushed over.

The people that are fighting are important figures. I can’t afford to offend any of them!

“Don’t mind too much, if he really dares to sue anyone, tell him to sue me. I am Ye Zichen, the Chairman of Maintaining Beauty

Corporation. I await your lawyer letter. I will accompany you until the very end no matter what sort of lawsuit you want to get into!" Ye Zichen smiled, then sneered at Song An, who was lying on the ground. "Remember, I'm called Ye Zichen. Come, punish me!"

Then, before leaving, he couldn't help but to kick Song An once again.

However, nobody noticed the smile on Song An's face when Ye Zichen did that.

After getting up from the ground, he acted furiously as if he was going to go to the consulate, but the moment he left the restaurant, he took out his phone and smiled sinisterly, "Master, Plan A has succeeded!"

After leaving that restaurant, Ye Zichen and co. went to another one nearby.

After they sat down, Deng Cheng finally raised his eyebrows, "Lil' Ye, why did you tell me not to use Song An earlier? It seems like you two have a bit of a grudge?"

The fact that Deng Cheng supported him without any conditions made Ye Zichen very happy. I guess helping this Grandpa deal with all those troubles wasn't a waste after all.

"It isn't really a grudge..." Ye Zichen let out a sigh, then spoke about the incident on the plane, and told Deng Cheng about what

had occurred in the restaurant.

“It’s lucky that I didn’t let him work in the hospital. Otherwise, someone like that definitely would have a bad effect on our hospital,” Deng Cheng replied.

Meanwhile, Liu Qianqian, who sat beside him did not say anything, and merely played with her chopsticks.

“Lucy, why aren’t you speaking?” Ye Zichen teased when he saw Liu Qianqian’s quite appearance.

Liu Qianqian immediately rolled her eyes, “Seriously!”

Deng Cheng couldn’t help but chuckle when he saw them. Then he turned towards Ye Zichen once again, “Lil’ Ye, do you remember what I promised you when we went to help take a look at Old Lin?”

“Huh?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrow in confusion.

Deng Cheng chuckled, “Didn’t I say that I’ll introduce you to my granddaughter? This is my granddaughter Liu Qianqian... How is she, the two of you...”

“Ahem!” Ye Zichen suddenly coughed intensely, while Liu Qianqian also blushed.

“Grandpa!” Liu Qianqian hammered Deng Cheng’s shoulders.

However, he merely chuckled once more, “Lil’ Ye’s medical abilities definitely make him worthy of you. What? Are you not satisfied?”

Xiao Yumei maintained a faint smile as she stood on the side. She did not reveal any sense of displeasure or acceptance. Ye Zichen’s heart jumped. This Gramps...

He’s screwing me over!

Ye Zichen doubted that someone as old as Deng Cheng would be unable tell his relationship with Xiao Yumei. What’s more, he also had that Huang Shengmei in the hospital...

This Gramps probably knows, but why is he still doing this?

He’s definitely trying to screw me over.

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but retort in his heart.

Meanwhile, Deng Cheng’s face was covered with a faint smile, “Lil’ Ye, how about it...”

“Then... Can we talk about this topic some other time? Ye Zichen smiled wryly.

Deng Cheng nodded, "Sure, my granddaughter just gets embarrassed easily. Make sure to keep in contact in private!"

"Grandpa!" Liu Qianqian called out again.

Only then did Deng Cheng grab a pork knuckle and raise his eyebrows, "Mm, this restaurant's pork knuckle is pretty good."

...

When Ye Zichen and Xiao Yumei got into the car once again, Ye Zichen focused on her expression, and wondered about how he was supposed to explain it to her.

"No need to explain to me. I will be by your side regardless of how many women you have."

"Yumei, that Gramps was just screwing me over. That geezer's really crafty, god only knows what ploy he's crafting," Ye Zichen smiled coyly.

"Perhaps, but don't mind so much. I'll send you back to the mansion. Since Tiantian wants to stay with me these two days, I'll stay at your place as well," Xiao Yumei nodded. Then suddenly said. "Actually, never mind, I'll take Tiantian back to my place. What if I affect you picking up girls!"

"Please stop teasing me!" Ye Zichen shrugged.

Xiao Yumei also giggled and stopped talking.

When they arrived back in the mansion, Mother Ye immediately grabbed Xiao Yumei away to chat, while Ye Zichen sat down on the sofa and hooked his fingers at Lil' White.

Lil' White immediately glanced over at the second floor, then shot over.

“Boss.”

“How's it going?”

For the past few days, Ye Zichen had been waiting for Lil' White to finish. The moment Lil' White confirms the location, then he'll charge over...

The demons must be killed in their cradle!

“I've already located them,” Lil' White smiled proudly.

Ye Zichen immediately lifted Lil' White up by his two front legs, “Lil' White, I will remember this achievement. Tell me, where are they!”

“I can't tell you!” Lil' White suddenly shook his head.

Ye Zichen immediately revealed a confused expression. “Why not!?”

“Because I don’t want you to go and die!”

Chapter 380 – The Queen Mother’s Birthday Feast

Die!

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but shudder when he saw the seriousness in Lil’ White’s eyes.

“Little kid has learnt how to joke with Boss now huh? The demonic energy is clearly very faint, so how is it possible for me to die there. I am of the False Earth Immortal level, alright?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and chuckled, then patted Lil’ White’s head. “If you joke randomly with Boss like this again, then I’ll cut you off dog food!”

“Do you really think that I’m kidding?” Lil’ White did not care, while he continued with a tone filled with sincerity. “The density of demonic energy does not determine their strength. I already calculated your chances of victory, the result was...”

“How much!?”

“One in ten thousand!” Lil’ White said with a faint smile. “of course, I’m talking about you and the two stronger ones. There are two weaker ones as well, but I don’t suggest you going over. They might be together.”

Lil’ White’s words had already surprised Ye Zichen, but his following words caused Ye Zichen to be even more worried.

Two stronger ones, two weaker ones...

Four demons have already infiltrated into Bingcheng. Ever since he had returned from the capital, he had paid close attention to the presence of demons, and Mother Ye had done the same.

However, four of them actually hid themselves from Mother Ye and Ye Zichen's detection.

"Are you certain?" Ye Zichen asked.

Lil' White nodded with a smile, "I'm ten thousand percent sure. I'm a male dog that's going to become a beast god. If I can't even detect a puny demon, then how am I supposed to become a beast god?"

Slap.

A merciless five finger mountain was the response he got...

"Stop bragging in front of me. If you are truly amazing, then go and bite those demons all to death."

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes at Lil' White.

At the same time, Lil' White also said in a troubled manner that was no less prideful, "Tsk, give me some time to grow. When I

truly become a beast god, then I can scare them to death with a sneeze. Of course... the current me cannot beat them.”

Even Lil’ White got slightly embarrassed when he said so.

As Lil’ White scratched his head with a coy smile, Ye Zichen rubbed his head and said sadly, “You... I want you to hurry up and become a beast god as well. Then I wouldn’t be so tired out.”

Ye Zichen let out another long sigh, “Tell me just what level of strength do the two weaker ones have!”

“You can’t be wanting to deal with them, right? I told you not to already,” Lil’ White said worriedly.

Ye Zichen knocked him on the head, then chuckled, “Is your boss such an idiot? I just want to know their strength to figure out how to defend against them. The demons have already come to Bingcheng, so I can’t just stay idle, right?”

“That’s alright then,” only then did Lil’ White stop worrying, then closed his eyes to sense the demons, before he spoke up again. “The two stronger ones are stronger than Sky Immortals. As for the weaker ones, one of them is about the strength of an Earth Immortal, while the other has the strength of the Spiritual Body level!”

Ye Zichen nodded, then bought a few packets of dog food from the Treasure Shop for Lil’ White before returning to his own room.

While he was in his room, Mother Ye brought some fruits over. Ye Zichen considered telling her about the information he got from Lil' White, only to resist that impulse.

I can't let mom get involved.

Ye Zichen's gaze turned more resolute as he held an apple in his hand.

Those demons might very well have come for me...

Damn reincarnation.

Ye Zichen grabbed his hair. If I wasn't the Yellow Emperor's reincarnation, then I wouldn't get in so much trouble. What's more annoying is that those Rogue Immortal guys didn't send me some helpers either.

God knows how many people the demons will send over later to deal with me. What's more, it isn't just the demon race, the half-beastmen also have me as their target.

I only have "Tribulation", and its members are not particularly strong. But, I can't find any strong people right now, so I can only try and develop the current members quickly.

Ye Zichen clenched his teeth, then took out his phone to find Old

Lord Taishang on WeChat.

“Old Lord, come out and chat a bit.”

At that moment, Old Lord Taishang was focusing on refining pills. The Queen Mother’s birthday feast was soon, and as the head of the Three Pure Ones, he couldn’t go empty handed, so...

He stayed in the Pill Refining Room for several days, and didn’t even go out to play cards.

When his phone near the furnace buzzed, he raised his eyebrows and picked it up. After seeing the sender of the message, he immediately turned to the two aides within the room, “Pay attention to the flames. I’m going to rest for a bit!”

“Understood, esteemed master!”

The two aides focused on the fire of the furnace.

At the same time, Old Lord Taishang also walked to his chair and typed out his response.

“How is Sky Sovereign Nameless so free as to come out talk to this old man?”

The two of them did have a small grudge between them, but due to Yue Lao’s advice, they had already put it past them.

At that moment, Ye Zichen and him were not very close, but they were not enemies either.

“Old Lord, it’s not like I came to you for nothing. I just want to ask whether you have any treasures that can raise a person’s strength.”

Old Lord Taishang raised his eyebrows and replied, “Sky Sovereign is funny. How could I possibly have treasures that can help you raise your strength? Even Level Nine Celestial Pills are of no use to use! If I can truly refine something like that, then I would have become a True Immortal already.”

The moment Ye Zichen saw Old Lord Taishang’s reply, he immediately knew that the old man misunderstood, so he quickly explained himself.

“It’s not for me. I want to train a bunch of disciples. They are mostly at the Spiritual Body level, while the highest level is an Earth Immortal.”

“Sky Sovereign is actually training disciples, they are truly lucky,” Old Lord Taishang flattered. “This old man is able to refine pills of that level, but I can’t do so currently!”

“Old Lord is busy?”

“Sky Sovereign should know, right?” Old Lord Taishang smiled

helplessly. “The Queen Mother’s birthday feast is soon. I’ve been refining pills for her these few days. Although I have plenty of furnaces here, but there cannot be any mistakes when refining pills for her. I’m telling you, if anyone else talked to me... I would just ignore them!”

The Queen Mother’s birthday feast?

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“Then your pills are your presents for the Queen Mother?”

“Naturally!” Old Lord Taishang revealed a wryly smile. “This old man is only talented at refining pills. If I was to try and give anything else... I don’t have anything else to give!”

A small gradually appeared on Ye Zichen’s lips.

At the same time, Old Lord Taishang also raised his eyebrows.

“Sky Sovereign is coming back soon, right? What present did you prepare for the Queen Mother? If it’s Sky Sovereign, then you will definitely present an amazing treasure that surprises everyone!”

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but shake his head with a smile when he read the message.

“Hehe, I might not be free, but... I do have a treasure that’s so

much better than your pills. Do you want it?”

Chapter 381 – Black Stockings

Ye Zichen was rather surprised when he saw the message.

He knew how amazing Sky Sovereign Nameless was. Although his strength was unknown, and Old Lord Taishang had never met him in the Heavenly Court, this master's endless number of creative treasures were very popular among the people in the Heavenly court.

Ignore the food, even when he just thought about the Landlord game that Sky Sovereign introduced...

Isn't that being played by everyone in the Heavenly Court in their free time?

"I wonder does Sky Sovereign want to give me a treasure to play with, or is it food? Or an even more amazing treasure!?"

Old Lord Taishang replied with anticipation.

Ye Zichen smiled, "It definitely is a new thing. It is also a great treasure that the Queen Mother will love."

"Then quickly send it over, Sky Sovereign!"

Old Lord Taishang was already in deep suffering due to trying to prepare a present. Although he had been refining pills, he had

already gifted pills for a hundred thousand years. Even though his pills were worth a fortune, even if the Queen Mother wasn't sick of getting pills, he was already sick of giving them.

He had tried to think of a new treasure to give a few days ago, but he didn't know how to do anything except refining pills...

That was why he started up the fire furnace to refine a pill to deal with it.

“Ha, I don't have the treasure here right now, but I promise that I definitely won't screw you over. I'll send it to you tomorrow. Of course, the quality might be kind of bad, but you can get a female craftsman in the Heavenly Court to make one that's exactly the same!”

Ye Zichen smiled.

Old Lord Taishang raised his eyebrows after a brief hesitation, then typed out his response. “Are you for real?”

“Do you think that I'd trick you?” Ye Zichen smiled.

Old Lord Taishang hesitated once again, then replied. “Alright, I'll believe Sky Sovereign's words... I'll immediately start refining the pills Sky Sovereign needs. Give me the treasure tomorrow, and I'll give you the pills!”

“You're understanding,” Ye Zichen said quickly to himself with a

smile. Then, he responded to Old Lord Taishang's message.

“Sure, then let's chat tomorrow.”

Ye Zichen put his phone to the side. Since he was able to gain Old Lord Taishang's promise, Ye Zichen was able to relax quite a bit.

It was also the same for Old Lord Taishang, who chucked his phone to the side, and called his aides standing beside the pill furnace over, “Stop watching it. We aren't refining this pill anymore!”

“We aren't? Esteemed master, they will finish refining in a few days!” One of the aides frowned.

Old Lord Taishang chuckled, “Refining this stuff takes too long. From now on... You guys are going to refine these pills with me.”

Flap.

Old Lord Taishang threw several pill formulas over, all of which stunned the aides.

“Esteemed Master!”

“Don't ask so much. I'm telling you to refine this, so do it. Just listen to me!” Old Lord Taishang looked at the two aides.

The two aides immediately lowered their heads, “Understood!”

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen bought a pair of black silk stockings from a department store, then went directly to the teahouse which served as Tribulation’s base. When he entered, he was rather surprised that the beautiful middle-aged woman, who was not part of Tribulation, was actually still working there.

“Boss Ye, I haven’t seen you come over for a long time,” the beautiful woman smiled. “Mr. Wei Chen is on the third floor. Just directly go up to find him.”

Ye Zichen nodded towards her. Even though he had not seen her in so long, when he looked at the woman once again, he could still feel that she was not simple person.

When he arrived on the third floor, he was not surprised to see Wei Chen play cards with his subordinates at all.

“Boss Ye.”

Everyone on the third floor put down the cards and mahjong in their hands. Ye Zichen swept his gaze over the members and noticed that there seemed to be a few new members...

“Come with me for a moment.”

Ye Zichen pushed open the door to a room on the third floor.

Not long later, Wei Chen also followed him in. “Boss Ye, didn’t you go over to the capital? Why didn’t you say anything after coming back?”

“If I told you, then I wouldn’t have seen this scene!” Ye Zichen smiled.

Wei Chen revealed a troubled expressions, “Those brats are all tired, so I just took the lead in telling them to relax.”

“I have no intention of criticizing you guys, but the situation is rather unusual right now... Do you know of the demon race?” Ye Zichen sighed.

Wei Chen opened his eyes wide, “Demon race?”

“It seems like you do know,” Ye Zichen smiled. “The demon race has already infiltrated into Bingcheng. I cannot be certain whether they came for me or not, but since I protect this land, I cannot allow the demons to do as they wish here. Of course, my own prowess is limited, so I will need your help.”

However, Wei Chen continued to frown in silence for a long time.

Why did the demons appear in the Modern Realm?

If they truly appeared, then these organized soldiers are not going to be able to stop them at all.

“Boss Ye, I’m not trying to discourage you, but if the demons really came, then even the lowest level of demon warriors cannot be stopped by the people in our organization.”

“I know that of course,” Ye Zichen nodded. “From today onwards, I will provide them with things that can speed up their strengthening process. Of course, it’s not like everyone can use it. You have to make them get it through achievements. Then again, you can directly give them to those you find more trustworthy.”

With that, Ye Zichen picked up the pair of black silk stockings from the table.

Wei Chen had already noticed the black stockings since a while ago, so he couldn’t help but ask, “Does this pair of black stockings have any sort of special ability?”

“What are you thinking!?” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes speechlessly at Wei Chen, then went and found Old Lord Taishang, who he had contacted the previous day.

“Old Lord!”

Old Lord Taishang, who was sitting near the pill furnace, picked up his phone as fast as possible when he heard it buzz.

Meanwhile, a pile of vials and canisters sat in front of him, all of which contained pills that he and his disciples refined the previous night.

“I’m here!”

He had already prepared the pills, and all he awaited was Sky Sovereign Nameless’s miraculous treasure.

Dingdong.

The moment he sent the message, a red packet appeared on Old Lord Taishang’s screen.

You received Sky Sovereign Nameless’s red packet.

When Old Lord Taishang picked up the treasure, he blanked out for a while as he looked at the packaging. He was able to see a black silk product through the transparent packaging, but he did not know what it was.

He carefully placed it aside, then directly sent all his vials and canisters over.

You received Old Lord Taishang’s red packet.

Body Enhancement Pill x300.

Body Strengthening Pill x300

Spirit Gathering Pill x300.

“Sky Sovereign, the Spirit Gathering Pill is suitable for people of the Spiritual Body and Earth Immortal levels. Taking two per day, one in the morning and one during nighttime can greatly improve the intimacy between immortals and celestial spiritual energy. Body Enhancement Pill and Body Strengthening Pills are to strengthen a person’s body and remove the impurities within one’s body.”

Old Lord Taishang explained carefully. Then he picked up the black silk stocking Ye Zichen sent over and asked with a look of curiosity.

“I wonder what treasure did Sky Sovereign send me? And how should I reply when the Queen Mother asks?”

Ye Zichen chuckled, then imagined the Queen Mother with black stockings on...

“This treasure is called black silk stockings. Just open it and see.”

Chapter 382 – Artifact Spirit-Jiejie

Black Silk Stockings?

As expected of Sky Sovereign Nameless, he always brings out these miraculous treasures. Just as Old Lord Taishang was about to open the packaging to see what was inside, he saw another message from Ye Zichen.

“This black silk stocking is of rather poor quality. You can use from better materials to weave one that’s identical. Of course, it’s fine if you can’t find any, but they’ll get a run in them.”

“Okay, okay.”

Old Lord Taishang replied with a chuckle. However, when he opened the packaging...

What the hell is this!?

What Old Lord Taishang saw was a pair of item that was similar to a pair of socks, but it was very smooth and elastic, while the texture also felt very good.

“Sky Sovereign, I want to ask. Just how in the Heavens do you use this treasure?”

Since Old Lord Taishang did not understand, and was unable to

see how the black silk stockings were anymore special than normal items.

“It’s to be worn on the legs. Oh yeah, research into it yourself. I still have stuff I have to do!”

“Okay!”

After typing out the response, Old Lord Taishang stared at the pair of black silk stockings for a long time.

Then, approximately ten minutes later, he took off his shoes, and begun to put them onto his feet. He only managed to put them on a good half an hour later. Then, when he walked in front of the bronze mirror to look at his image...

Ugh.

Old Lord Taishang quickly looked away. Just that look had nearly caused him to puke.

Are you kidding me? Can this actually be given to the Queen Mother!? If I offer it as a gift, the Queen Mother might even want to kill me!

Sky Sovereign screwed me over!

“Sky Sovereign, can you stop messing around? Hurry up and

send me the real treasure!”

“Aren’t you just messing with me!? I was so sincere with you, you can’t treat me like this!”

“Sky Sovereign...”

Although Old Lord Taishang was extremely anxious, Ye Zichen had no time to pay any attention to him.

“Understand now? These pills are all beneficial towards them, so just get them to take it.”

Ye Zichen withdrew all the pills, filling up the majority of the room.

Wei Chen nodded in shock.

At the same time, Ye Zichen also spoke again, “Try to find some stronger people to join our organization soon. Tell me directly what you need. As long as I can do it, then do what you can to satisfy them!”

“If that’s the case...” Wei Chen suddenly licked his lips. “Then Boss Ye can try to get Xiang-jie to join our organization.”

“Xiang-jie?”

“She’s the big sis down stairs. She... isn’t a normal person. According to my recent observations, she is an Earth Immortal or even above that. I have offered a position to her several times, but she ignored me. You can go and try if Boss Ye really needs the strength!”

It truly was as I thought.

Ye Zichen thought to himself. I already felt like this beautiful woman wasn’t a normal person, but I didn’t expect her to be an expert that was at least an Earth Immortal.

But why is an expert like her working at this teahouse previously. What makes me mind more is that she didn’t even leave after the tea house changed owners.

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes and licked his lips, “Distribute the pills, and get those brats to quickly increase their strength. I’ll go and try to invite Xiang-jie. If I can, then I will, if I can’t, then try to get her to leave our teahouse as soon as possible.”

“No problem!” Wei Chen nodded.

Then, Ye Zichen walked down stairs.

When he passed by the beautiful woman, she spoke up with a smile, “Boss Ye is leaving again?”

“Xiang-jie? Ye Zichen suddenly stopped in his tracks.

The beautiful woman nodded with a smile, “What is it?”

“Why do you keep on staying at this teahouse?” Ye Zichen glanced at her with a smile. “I don’t feel like trying to make a living is too impossible. You are staying here in order to guard something, right?”

Xiang-jie remained silent for a brief moment, then smiled, “Boss Ye is truly smarter than others. You guessed it right, I am guarding a certain treasure.”

“Then... I wonder if you are a friend or a foe?” Ye Zichen asked once again.

However, Xiang-jie shook her head with a smile, “Neither. I am purely here to guard the treasure. It will be taken by the fated one. When the treasure is taken away, then I will follow that person away as well.”

“You are an artifact spirit!” Ye Zichen was stunned.

Xiang-jie blinked, “You guessed it right again.”

...

I didn’t think that this beautiful woman was actually the artifact spirit of a certain divine artifact. No wonder I couldn’t tell her

original form using my Fiery Eyes of Truth just now.

“It looks like you want to try? You are too weak. You have to be at least an Earth Immortal if you want to touch that divine artifact!” Xiang-jie smiled.

Ye Zichen scratched his head awkwardly when his thoughts were pointed out, “Does everyone have a chance to take that divine artifact?”

“No! Those people at least have to be people that I like the look of. I like you quite a bit. Come and find me when you become an Earth Immortal, big sis will give you a chance to try,” Xiang-jie smiled softly, then shrugged. “I have stood guard here for too long. I really hope that you can take me away!”

“Then I’ll definitely come and bother you when I become an Earth Immortal,” Ye Zichen cupped his hands.

Xiang-jie nodded, “Come then. Oh yeah, you are looking for demons, right? Actually, a demon has been by your side the entire time... Work hard, little brother!”

Ye Zichen, who was about to leave, was shocked. He turned around and only saw Xiang-jie tilt her head with a smile at him, while she waved her hand.

“Don’t think about gathering information from me, and don’t even consider getting me to help you against the demons. The only

reason I told you was because big sis got interested in you all of a sudden.

Ye Zichen nodded and left with a smile. Then, after he left, Xiang-jie sat down at the teahouse reception once again without speaking as usual.

By my side!

The expression of Ye Zichen, who sat in the car, was filled with worry. The people around him were mostly normal people, so how could they be demons?”

“But what that divine artifact-jie jie said should be used. I need to give it a good thought.

Ye Zichen parked his car by the side of the road, then shut his eyes tightly, while he pictured all of the people around him. However, the result he got was that none of them was a demon.

Could there be someone that I didn’t count?

Ye Zichen’s phone rang once again while he hesitated. When he took out his phone, he placed the phone by his ear after seeing the caller ID.

“Fatty, what is it?”

“Eldest Hou, you guys try and hold on for a bit longer, I’m calling Boss Ye,” Fatty Yin’s scream sounded out from the other end of the call.

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes, “Just what exactly happened?”

“Hurry up and leave, if you don’t... Then I’m going to attack!”

“F*ck, I am the third disciple of Great Emperor Qingmeng, you actually dare attack me?” Third Fatty Jin shouted, then he turned to the phone once again, “Boss Ye, can you hear me?”

“Yeah, I’m asking you what happened?”

“Boss, hurry back!” Third Fatty Jin’s voice contained a faint sense of worry, “Third Fatty Jin said with an extremely nervous voice. “Di Tian’s older brother is here. He wants to take Di Tian away. We can’t really stop him anymore!”

Chapter 383 – Di Zun

At the apartment.

Di Tian, who was wearing green clothes, stood beside a man with a similar appearance to him, who also had a long braid.

The Hou brother stood on either side of the room flanking the man, while Third Fatty Jin stood opposite Di Tian and the other man with a frown.

“Great Emperor Qingming has already told the Di family, do not come and mind Di Tian...”

“I don’t care about so much. Move aside, or fall!” The man beside Di Tian snorted coldly. He had been in closed cultivation earlier, and when he came out of it the previous day to find his little brother, he had found out that his little brother was actually being detained.

As the older brother, there was no way that he could tolerate it, so he promptly bought a plane ticket to Bingcheng against his family’s objections.

“Brat, you really are cocky. Wait a moment if you dare!” Third Fatty Yin snorted with a laugh, and put his hands on his hips.

However, Di Tian’s older brother merely shrugged, “What can you do even if I wait here for a year?”

Even since his closed cultivation ended, he was already half a step into the level of Earth Immortals. He truly did not think highly of the people present in the room at all.

“Fine, brat... You really are cocky enough!” Third Fatty Jin gulped silently, then turned to Di Tian. “Di Tian, we’ve treated you rather nicely these days!”

“Hehe...” Di Tian’s expression suddenly turned cold. It wasn’t too big of a deal if it wasn’t mentioned, but getting reminded of it really made Di Tian angry. “You really dare to say that. All I’ve been doing here is wash toilets and clean up the apartment. I’m essentially your maid, and you still say that you treated me nicely?”

“What?” Di Tian’s older brother raised his eyebrows. “You guys actually made my little brother do that sort of dirty work!?”

Dong.

He kicked off the floor with force, and punched towards Third Fatty Jin.

“Have you asked me whether you can hit my people?”

Bang.

Faint laughter sounded out as Di Tian's older brother was thrown to the side. He subconsciously looked up and saw Ye Zichen had appeared beside Third Fatty Jin without him even noticing.

“Boss Ye,” Third Fatty Jin's face was filled with joy. Then, he put his hands on his hips and cursed at Di Tian. “Grandson, try acting cocky now? Look, your dumb older brother was completely hit and shocked by Boss Ye. Hehe... Keep acting cocky!”

“Big Brother... It's this brat!” Di Tian pointed at Ye Zichen and cursed. “He's the one who turned me into a Transformer, then forced me to clean the toilet and stuff!”

Ye Zichen merely maintained an indifferent smile in response.

He looked at Di Tian, who was voicing out his troubles indifferently, then set his gaze upon the man beside Di Tian.

“What are you called?”

“[Di Zun](#)!” Di Tian's brother answered sullenly.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. Wow, this Di family really names their children such bossy names. What's more, Ye Zichen was able to feel that Di Zun was very powerful.

Similarly, Di Zun also felt that Ye Zichen was equally troublesome.

“Let my little brother go. We won’t cross each other!” Di Zun broke the oppressive silence first.

“Give me a reason!” Ye Zichen pursed his lips and smiled.

“I won’t pursue the matter of you guys making my little brother be a maid!” Di Tian answered forcefully.

Ye Zichen merely shook his head and smiled, “So what if you did pursue it? Do you think that I’m scared of you? Young man, don’t be so naïve, your little brother has to work here for me in order to repent for his crimes!”

“What crimes?” Di Zun asked.

“You’re going to have to ask him,” Ye Zichen said meaningfully.

Di Zun looked over at Di Tian, causing Di Tian’s expression to stiffen when he felt the interrogating gaze.

I definitely can’t tell him. The Di family rules are very strict, hidden families were not allowed to deal with people from the Modern Realm. What’s more, they weren’t allowed to hurt the people from the Modern Realm either...

If I tell the truth, then wouldn’t I end up being skinned by my older brother?

“Big Brother? How about I stay here to keep working? They are pretty nice to me here,” Di Tian answered with a coy smile.

Di Zun immediately shook his head solemnly, “No.”

“You really are hilarious. Di Tian himself said that he’s not leaving, and you want to forcefully take him away? In front of me?” As he spoke, Ye Zichen radiated a hint of spiritual pressure from his body. The heavy spiritual pressure caused everyone to feel fear in their hearts.

It also made Fatty Jin raise his eyebrows in shock. Out of everyone, he was the one who knew the most about Ye Zichen’s change in strength.

He actually achieved this sort of strength in less than two short months.

The Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation is truly not normal.

Di Zun was also able to feel the heaviness of the spiritual pressure. After thinking about it for a while, he relaxed his clenched fist, then stepped forward defenselessly and said, “I don’t want to fight you. We can actually strike a deal.”

“Do tell!” Ye Zichen smiled.

“I noticed several people spying on your place. I didn’t pay too much attention then, but now that I think about it, they should be your enemies. I’ll tell you their position. Let me take Di Tian away,” Di Tian called out softly.

Ye Zichen twitched his mouth and scratched his chin, “How strong are they?”

“The ones I can detect are naturally weaker than the Earth Immortal level. My guess is that they are of the Spiritual Body level at most,” Di Zun smiled. “If you don’t believe me, I can go and capture them!”

“Please!” Ye Zichen smiled towards Di Zun.

The other party clearly did not expect Ye Zichen to answer like that either, but he did not say anything else, and instead left the room with a nod.

“Ahem...” After Di Zun left, a look of nervousness blatantly surfaced on Di Tian’s face. The reason he acted so cockily earlier was only because his brother was supporting him.

Now that his older brother left, he was truly afraid of getting beaten up before his brother returned.

“Big brothers, let’s chat properly. My older brother is going to come back soon.”

“You’re still talking about your brother?” Third Fatty Jin raised his hands up as if he was about to hit Di Tian.

Di Tian quickly took a defensive posture, “Fatty, I’m telling you. If you truly dare to hit me, then my older brother won’t let you off.”

“Ha, I, Lord Fatty, will definitely try today...” Third Fatty Jin prepared to walk over as he rolled up his sleeves.

Seeing that, Ye Zichen couldn’t help but knit his eyebrows, “Enough!”

Dong.

At that very moment, the door of the room was pushed open once again, while Di Zun walked in from the outside with two people in his hands.

Bang.

He chucked the two men onto the floor. Both of them held binoculars, Bluetooth earpieces and other equipment of the sort, making it obvious that they were planning to commit a crime.

“I’ve brought the people over to you,” Di Tian clapped with a chuckle.

Ye Zichen nodded, then squatted on the floor with a smile, “Why are you guys spying on me?”

“What are you saying? We’re filming a celebrity in secret. Why did you guys capture us? We’ll call the police,” the thinner man immediately answered.

Ye Zichen nodded with a raise of his eyebrows, “Which celebrity? Tell me. But if you can’t...”

Zing.

Three silver needles appeared in his hands...

“I will definitely make you guys very happy!”

Di Zun (帝尊) basically translates to Emperor Supreme if you were to translate it literally.

Chapter 384 – To the Underworld

The silver needles in Ye Zichen's hands shimmered with a chilling cold light. However, the two watchers, who were suppressed on the floor, suddenly smiled strangely...

“Be careful!” Di Zun suddenly yanked Ye Zichen behind him, then quickly formed signs with his fingers, causing a barrier of light to instantly surround the two people on the ground.

Boom.

A deafening explosion sounded out from within the barrier, while countless cracks appeared on the barrier.

“They self-exploded...”

Ye Zichen looked at the two people who had already turned into dust within the barrier of light blankly. Then he looked gratefully at Di Zun. If he didn't yank me backwards in time, even though I have Unbreakable Body, I would have either died or at least been seriously injured judging from the commotion of the explosion.

“Thanks.”

“It's nothing,” Di Zun maintained his calm look as he glanced within the barrier of light, then dispersed it.

As thick smoke flowed out of the dispersed barrier, Di Zun asked, “I brought you the people, but they self-exploded. That has nothing to do with me.”

“Mhmm, take Di Tian away!” Ye Zichen nodded. Then, Di Zun looked at Di Tian without any hesitation, and left.

“Boss,” Third Fatty Jin was on the verge of tears. Due to his personality of enjoying showing off, he was the closest to the two people who exploded.

If Di Zun didn’t created that barrier, he might have turned to dust already along with the two watchers.

“Clean this place up. If the neighbors ask what happened, then tell them an electrical appliance exploded.

Ye Zichen looked at the scorched places on the floor. Di Zun probably had a barrier above the floor as well, otherwise, from the looks of the explosion, it might have caused a pit in the floor.

...

“Master, Number 3 and Number 4 self-exploded after being discovered,” within a certain high-class mansion within Bingcheng, Song An said as he walked towards a man in the living room.

The man on the sofa nodded to signify that he understood, then

chuckled, “Ye Zichen is pretty vigilant, but Plan A has already succeeded. We will be able to know his location even if nobody watches him.”

With that, he turned his head to look at Guo Jing.

“How is it going on your end?”

“There’s no issues,” Guo Jing smiled, then handed the phone to the man. “I’ve already mesmerized this guy. Now, even if I want to take his life, he might give it to me with a smile.”

“Is that so?”

The man scrolled the screen to skim the chat history, then returned the phone to Guo Jing.

“Not bad, just continue to infiltrate to Ye Zichen’s group. When you have done enough, I will tell you the next step,” the man caressed Guo Jing’s face, then stretched lazily as he looked outside the window. “Ye Zichen, I truly anticipate our moment of meeting!”

...

As Ye Zichen laid on the bed in his bedroom, his mood became rather unstable. I already tried my hardest to cause myself to be strong, and to accept all of this...

However, the continuous danger truly made Ye Zichen feel weak. For example, he had nearly lost his life earlier during the day.

I clearly just want to be a normal civilian and live a good and peaceful life.

“I’m going to go crazy,” Ye Zichen hammered his bed.

Liu Qing, who had been nurturing within the Dragon Eye came out. When she saw how Ye Zichen acted, she could only sigh softly...

Actually, she understood Ye Zichen very well. No matter how strong a person’s acceptance was, for him to experience so many strange things all of a sudden after being a normal person for twenty-something years, he will definitely have a moment of breaking down.

What’s more, Ye Zichen’s experiences placed him at the boundary of life and death, multiple times.

“Stay calm, don’t overthink the problem. Or... Can you contact that Flame Emperor and the rest of them? Tell them to send some bodyguards over,” Liu Qing said softly.

However, due to Ye Zichen laying with his chest to the bed, Liu Qing did not know that Ye Zichen’s eyes were already filled with tears.

“For what? If they wanted to give me bodyguards, then they would have given me some from the start. But have they? Think about how many times I’ve been in danger. Have they ever sent anyone over to protect me?”

At that moment, Ye Zichen’s mental state was already as fragile as a child. He cowered on his bed with his fist clenched, “Why do I have to rely on myself for everything? I need to train up my own power, and have to make connections a bit at a time by myself. Heh, I really am pitiful as the reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor. But then again, it is rather fortunate, at the very least, I’m still alive.”

Ye Zichen laughed wryly, then wiped away his tears with the blanket and apologized, “Sorry, I couldn’t quite help myself just now.”

“I can understand you. Seriously!” Liu Qing flew over, and hugged Ye Zichen’s head. “I really can understand you. No one is born strong. Just how long have you experienced all this for? You still need to get used to it. Everybody is afraid of dying...”

“Mhmm,” He patted Liu Qing’s head with a chuckle, then let out a long sigh. “I feel much better now. People do have to let out steam once in awhile. If you always hold it in, then someone is going to go wrong. I’m serious, when those two self-exploded, I pretty much pissed myself. These people truly disregard their lives in an attempt to kill me. But then again, I really am pitiful...”

Ye Zichen laughed in self-mockery. At that moment, Liu Qing was like a trash can for all his feelings, as she sat beside him and listened to his retorts with a smile.

A good half an hour later, after Ye Zichen said everything he wanted to say, Liu Qing squinted her eyes with a smile, “If you didn’t experience all this, I definitely would say that you’re a troll.”

“You even noticed that?” After speaking out what was on his mind, Ye Zichen was in a much better mood. “I thought I hid it really well.”

“You...”

Liu Qing lifted her finger and pushed Ye Zichen’s forehead.

At that moment, Ye Zichen’s phone, which he put beside his bed, buzzed.

Liu Qing floated over and raised her eyebrows when she saw the message, “King Chujiang sent you a message!”

King Chujiang!

Ye Zichen quickly picked up the phone and read it.

“Master, you there?”

This brat actually proactively came looking for me. The Sun definitely rose from the East today. Normally speaking, he can't avoid me often enough.

“Yeah, what is it?”

Ye Zichen replied in confusion.

When King Chujiang, who was sitting with the other Yama Kings, saw the message, he immediately replied underneath the gaze of all his brothers.

“Didn't you say that you want to revive the person who died before their time?”

“Mhmm!” Ye Zichen nodded faintly. “But didn't your big brother say that the Underworld is too busy, and I can't go right now?”

“It's because King Ksitigarbha came out of closed cultivation. Those vengeful spirits do not dare to act outrageously when he's here. We just thought that we don't want to delay you too much, so... How about we immediately open the gates for you to come over?”

Chapter 385 – Meng Po! Meng Xiang!

Go to the Underworld?

That seems to be what King Chujiang means by sending this message.

Ye Zichen licked his bitter lips, then hesitated as he looked at the message.

“Are you sure that I can go now?”

“Master, if you are going to come over, then hurry. We don’t know when King Ksitigarbha is going back into closed cultivation. When that happens, you might have to wait for a long time again.”

King Chujiang replied.

Ye Zichen glanced at Liu Qing, then thought about it for a moment.

“Then open the gates for me!”

Ye Zichen’s heart begun to skip. We’re going to the Underworld in a moment...

Nobody would believe a mere mortal like me actually having gone to the Underworld. Of course... It’s not like I dare to tell

others either.

“Wait a moment.”

Approximately three minutes later, a spatial crack appeared in Ye Zichen’s bedroom. At the same time, King Chujiang’s message also appeared on his phone.

“Master, just directly enter.”

“No one’s coming over for reception?”

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. I need to always be careful, after all, what if King Chujiang is trying to screw me over?

“Master, we, the Yama Kings, are unable to casually go in and out of the Modern Realm. All of the ghost servants are capturing ghosts outside, so we really can’t assign anyone to receive you!”

King Chujiang revealed a helpless expression.

Ye Zichen twitched his mouth.

“Fine, then I’ll go by myself.”

He patted Liu Qing on her head, then placed his phone back into his pocket, “Let’s go to the Underworld to revive you.”

Zoom.

The scene before their eyes changed as they walked through the crack.

The very moment Ye Zichen walked through the spatial crack, he found himself on top of an ancient bridge. In front of him was a stele with “Helplessness” written on it!

“Another new person came... If it’s going to continue to be so busy, then I’m going to resign,” a woman in yellow clothes muttered as she stood on the bridge. When she saw that neither Ye Zichen nor Liu Qing moved, she raised her eyebrows. “What are you guys spacing out for? Come over here!”

“Oh, okay!” Ye Zichen gulped, then walked over. When he got closer, he asked with a look of confusion on his face, “You’re Meng Po, right?”

“You know me?”

The girl’s appearance had nothing to do with “[Po](#)”, she merely looked to be around Liu Qing’s age.

“Never mind, all dead people should know me. I’m Meng Po. Drink these two bowls of soup, then continue walking inside! But why didn’t any ghost servants come with you?” Meng Po questioned.

Ye Zichen immediately chuckled, “We didn’t come to move onto our next life. I’m actually alive, while this girl is a ghost. I brought her here to revive her.”

Meng Po blinked, then tilted her head and snickered.

“You really are funny kiddie. How could a mortal come to the Underworld? And you said that you’re going to revive a ghost? Do you know what sort of ghost that’s beside you? A virgin ghost girl. If she gets revived, then she’ll be an immortal...”

“Immortal?”

“Mhmm, since nobody’s coming right now, then I’ll chat a bit with you,” Meng Po pulled over a stool and sat on it and crossed her legs. “The amount of treasures that is needed to revive a ghost is tremendous, it is even possible to forcefully turn someone into an immortal using it. The girlie beside you is a virgin, so she can absorb most of the treasures, meaning that she’ll be at least a Human Immortal, and a Sky Immortal at the very best... But, kid, I’m not trying to criticize you, but the items used for reviving people are treasures that even those of the Heavenly Court finds valuable. Say, you are just a mortal, and you actually want to revive her? Are you kidding with big sis?”

“...”

Ye Zichen looked at her in shock.

Meng Po thought that she was right, so she raised her eyebrows and smiled, “You have nothing more to say, right? Here, Meng Po’s soul. A bowl for each one of you. Hurry up and drink it!”

“I really came to revive her, King Chujiang told me to come,” Ye Zichen put on a look of helplessness.

Meng Po raised her eyebrows with a smile, “You even know King Chujiang, it seems like you did your homework in the Modern Realm!”

“Everything I said was true!” Ye Zichen sighed helplessly. “If you don’t believe me, then go and ask King Chujiang. After all, don’t you guys have the staff chat?”

...

Meng Po’s face drastically changed.

The staff chat was an internal thing for the Underworld. Even ghosts who have died a very long time ago would not know of it if they do not become ghost servants.

This person actually knows of the staff chat.

This time, Meng Po started to question herself. She glanced over at Ye Zichen, then took out her phone and mentioned King

Chujiang.

Meng Po: @King Chujiang, I have a person here that's claiming to be a mortal that have come to revive a virgin ghost girl.

Ox-Head: You're kidding, right?

Horse-Face: Big Brother Ox-Head is right!

Judge Cui: ...

Everyone in the group continuously retorted, even causing Meng Po herself to feel like she acted like an idiot. How could a mortal revive a ghost?

King Chujiang: Hurry up and send that master over. Do not display any signs of arrogance. We will be waiting for you in the Reincarnation Pool of the Sixth Hall.

Wow.

Everyone in the group were stunned.

Ox-Head: Master truly came?

Horse-Face: Big Brother Ox-Head is right!

Judge Cui: ...

Hua Tuo: This...

Meng Po looked up at Ye Zichen, who was standing in front of her with a dumb look on his face.

Zoom.

She quickly stood up from her chair, then giggled after putting her phone back into her pocket.

“Master, I have caused much offense just now. Please forgive me!”

“Now you believe my words, right?” Ye Zichen sighed helplessly.

Meng Po immediately nodded, “Yes, yes, I’ll take you over to the Reincarnation Pool in the Sixth Hall right now...”

“Then your...” Ye Zichen pointed at her station.

Meng Po giggled, then shouted towards a nearby tent, “Hey, come out and watch over this place for me. I’ll do half an hour of your shift!”

“Okay.”

Not long later, a middle-aged looking woman with the exact same outfit as the Meng Po in front of Ye Zichen walked out of the tent.

“... So Meng Po is not a unique job in the Underworld!”

“Yeah, only people of the ghost marshal level and above are unique. Everyone else are just staff,” the young Meng Po giggled.

Ye Zichen shook his head with a smile, “What are you called?”

“I... Meng Xiang! Uncle King Chujiang gave it to me!” Meng Xiang scratched her head with a giggle. “You are definitely wondering why I’m so young even though I’m Meng Po, right? Actually, I’m only seventeen!”

“So young!”

“Hehe, I was seventeen when I died, so I am forever seventeen. But that’s what the Yama King Uncles told me!” Meng Xiang giggled.

Ye Zichen was stunned, before he put on a different expression, “Sorry!”

“It’s nothing!” Meng Xiang continued to smile. “I am already used to it. Since I’m already dead, there’s no point of thinking about useless matters.”

As they chatted happily, the three of them arrived in front of a glorious palace.

“We’re here,” Meng Xiang giggled.

Ye Zichen subconsciously let out a sigh, then grasped Liu Qing’s hand tightly.

Yama Hall, here I come!

Po (婆) means old woman.

Chapter 386 – Reincarnation Pool

The Yama Hall was decorated like a manor from the ancient times. Two stone lions with fierce eyes sat in front of the hall. When Ye zichen walked over, the two stone lions suddenly spoke.

“Mortal, this is not a place that you can come to. Hurry up and leave!”

The sudden words shocked Ye Zichen, causing him to quickly look around.

Meng Xiang immediately jumped in front of the stone lion with a giggle and patted its head, “This is Uncle King Chujiang’s important guest, don’t randomly scare him.”

“Girlie, you are showing less and less respect for you elders,” another stone lion sighed.

Zoom.

A man in a long robe appeared forth from the stone lion. He shook his head with a smile, then looked at Ye Zichen closely, before speaking up, “Please!”

Dong.

The black metal gate slowly pushed open. What entered their

sites was a huge heated pool with ten men wearing ancient governmental uniforms standing around it.

“Your Majesties, this person proclaimed himself to be an important guest of yours!”

The stone lion, who took the form of a man, took a step back, and revealed Ye Zichen.

The Yama Kings looked at him, but when they saw Ye Zichen, they couldn't help but frown.

He's actually so weak...

Before they met, they had thought extremely highly of this master's strength. The fact that he was brothers with the Great Sage, the fact that he was the Yellow Emperor's reincarnation, and the fact that he was on good terms with the people in the Heavenly Court, they naturally thought that even if he wasn't a complete rank Sky Immortal, he would at be a Sky Immortal at the very least!

But now... He hasn't even reached the Earth Immortal level?

Everyone looked at Ye Zichen with a puzzled gaze.

At that moment, a man in black robes and a wearing a red hat walked over and bowed underneath the gazes of the rest of the Yama Kings.

“You-You are that master, right?”

They were extremely curious about the master, so they couldn't help but to look at him some more.

“King Chujiang?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

The man instantly nodded, “Yes, yes, I am King Chujiang. These are my various brothers, and we are the Yama Kings of the Ten Halls!”

The other Yama Kings also nodded.

At that moment, Meng Xiang giggled, “I brought the person over. Remember to send me a red packet later. I can't have done this for you for nothing!”

“Sure sure sure!” King Chujiang nodded his head with a wry smile.

Only then did Meng Xiang giggled, then skipped out of the Yama Hall.

Ye Zichen set his gaze upon the huge pool in the hall. The water within the pool was as red as water, while heat radiated from it.

Noticing Ye Zichen's gaze, King Chujiang nodded with a smile,

“Master, this is the Reincarnation Pool. Is this girl the one you need to revive?”

“Mhmm.”

Ye Zichen already felt the weird gazes of the surrounding Yama Kings. It was clear that they had already noticed how weak he was.

That was why he had to pretend to be colder and more indifferent. Speaking less might actually cause them to worry more.

King Chujiang was also rather stunned by the indifferent reaction. However, since he had talked with Ye Zichen a lot before, he did not mind. He would have been confused if the master was too passionate, but now...

He felt like this was normal!

Although this master truly looks too weak, but his identity is amazing...

No matter what, we Yama Kings would not dare to make a move on him.

“Master, we don’t take up your precious time any longer. The Reincarnation Pool is right here. Give those items needed for revival over to me, then tell that ghost girl... Hmm? A virgin ghost girl?” King Chujiang raised his eyebrows. No wonder this master

wants to revive her so much. Although it takes up a lot of treasure to revive this kind of female ghost, but what he gains in return would probably be worth far more than these materials?

“Is there any issue?” Ye Zichen’s expression darkened.

King Chujiang instantly shook his head with a smile, “There isn’t. Give me the items used for revival and tell this ghost girl to get into the pool...”

“Don’t try anything,” Ye Zichen warned.

King Chujiang smiled coyly, “What are you saying? How would I dare to try anything in front of you.”

“That’s for the best,” Ye Zichen glanced at him indifferently, then took out his phone.

The symbol for his 4G had already disappeared, and it was replaced by a small wave. Ye Zichen opened up WeChat, only to find it rather strange, since he actually managed to connect to the servers.

Ye Zichen knitted his eyebrows, but did not mind it so much, he merely opened up the Treasure Chest and took out all the items used for revival.

Gulp.

Even the Yama Kings gulped after seeing the treasures. Those were all extremely valuable and rare treasures. If they had any of them, they might even be able to increase their strength further.

However, they did not dare to have any thoughts about taking them. Ignoring the fact that their big brother King Qinguang would not allow them to, they could not afford to offend the monkey, who supported Ye Zichen.

“Start quickly!” Ye Zichen knitted his eyebrows once more.

King Chujiang instantly nodded with a smile, “Sure...”

He pointed towards the pile of treasures, causing them to fly into his hands. He then poured the Holy Water of Yiyuan into the Reincarnation Pool before dropping Thousand Year Dragon Eye and Nine-Heart Lotus Root into the pool as well.

Bubble.

A stream of bubbles suddenly arose from the blood red Reincarnation Pool, while the temperature of the pool itself seemed to rise a lot as well.

“Liu Qing, just promptly tell me if you feel any discomfort.”

“Nah, it is really comfortable here,” Liu Qing giggled, as she

swam around in the pool.

King Chujiang also smiled wryly, “Master, you still seem to be vigilant against us. Let me tell you the truth, it isn’t that easy to get reborn. The treasures I told you about were just the ones that the Underworld does not have. We didn’t tell you the other treasures that can be found here. To put it bluntly, this pool of reincarnating water is worth as much as a Sky Immortal!”

“...”

Ye Zichen was shocked. He instantly activated the Fiery Eyes of Truth to glance at the pool, and saw that there were indeed plenty of treasures inside.

“Ahh, I’m so tired. I’m going to sleep for a while,” the eyelids of Liu Qing, who was playing happily in the pool, suddenly drooped. She immediately found a place she could lean against to close her eyes and sleep.

“What’s going on!?” Ye Zichen frowned upon watching her fall asleep.

King Chujiang quickly explained, “There is too much energy within the pool. This girl needs a while to absorb it all, so it is a normal situation!”

“Then how long is she going to take to awaken?”

“That would depend on how much she absorbs. But either way, her waking up will mean that the construction of her body has succeeded. Then, she will be completely reborn after taking this Heaven-Returning Pill!” King Chujiang smiled.

Ye Zichen also nodded silently. Since he felt that he could not completely trust the people around him yet, he took out his phone stealthily, then sent a few messages to Yang Jian and the monkey.

If these people dares to have any ill intentions, then I’ll get my two bros to take the Underworld apart.

However, at that moment, the metal gates of the Yama Hall were pushed open. A monk sitting cross-legged on a straw cushion floated in.

At the same time, King Chujiang, who was smiling before Ye Zichen, quickly bowed. “I offer my greetings to King Ksitigarbha!”

Chapter 387 – The Phone’s First Mission

All of the Yama Kings bowed and greeted Ksitigarbha. Ye Zichen could tell that Ksitigarbha had a rather high status in the Underworld.

He also glanced towards King Ksitigarbha, only to find Ksitigarbha looking back at him.

King Chujiang smiled, then moved aside. King Ksitigarbha directly flew above the throne in the hall. All of a sudden, the space around him bent, a strange animal with a tiger head, a horn, dog ears, a dragon’s body, a lion’s tail and qilin feet appeared.

This should be Diting, King Ksitigarbha’s ride.

Rumour has it that out of the rides of the four bodhisattvas, Diting was the only one that did not turn into a monster and harm Tang Zeng and his disciples. However, there were also others stating that during the events of the true and false Sun Wukong, although Diting could tell who was the real one from their sound, since it did not dare to offend the fake one, it did not point out the fake one.

However, none of that was of much importance. The main thing was that...

For some reason, Ye Zichen felt like Diting was rather similar to Lil’ White.

“King Ksitigarbha, why did you come over here!” King Qinguang, who was wearing a red robe, smiled.

King Ksitigarbha who sat on the throne, touched Diting’s head and smiled, “I heard that a very important person came to the Underworld, so I came over to have a look.”

He came for me?

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but wonder.

King Ksitigarbha smiled, then glanced at Ye Zichen, “This is the very important person who came to the Underworld, right?”

“Mhmm!” the Yama Kings nodded in response.

“You are the first mortal to step into the Underworld,” King Ksitigarbha smiled, then turned to look at Liu Qing, who asleep as she was slowly getting reborn in the Reincarnation Pool. “Reviving a person who died before their time. You’re very capable.”

Why is he speaking so strangely...?

Ye Zichen felt like the way King Ksitigarbha spoke was a bit strange. It was as if he was mocking Ye Zichen. Logically speaking, bodhisattvas shouldn’t speak like that.

Didn't Sakyamuni say that everyone is equal? If he keeps speaking like that, then I'll definitely report him if I meet Sakyamuni in the future.

"All you of can leave, I have some things that I want to say to this young man in private."

King Ksitigarbha waved his hand. The Yama Kings instantly looked at each other, then silently left the Yama Hall.

Thus, only King Ksitigarbha and Ye Zichen were left in the hall.

Only then did he speak up, "Young man, what do you think about our Underworld?"

"The Underworld... is rather amazing. You are in charge of the cycle of life of the mortals in the mortal realm, that's pretty amazing!" Ye Zichen did not know why Ksitigarbha asked him that, so he replied with the mindset of "it was fine as long as don't say any bad things".

"Then what do you think about me?" King Ksitigarbha smiled with a warm gaze. "Do you think I have any chance of returning to the Buddhist Region?"

"Nope!"

Ye Zichen shook his head indifferently. However, he was immediately stunned after saying that. That wasn't what he had

intended to say at all, since he had intended to kiss ass. However, his mouth somehow still spoke those words uncontrollably.

“Is that really the case?” King Ksigitahba’s expression saddened. When he had chose to go to the Underworld, Sakyamuni had once told him that if he wanted to know when he would be able to return to the Buddhist Region, then ask a mortal that had journeyed to the Underworld.

You’ll be able to return if he says you can.

You won’t be able to if he says you can’t.

King Ksitigarbha had remembered those words for several tens of thousands of years. However, as time passed on, he gradually got used to the life in the Underworld, so returning to the Buddhist Region begun to turn less important to him.

However, he was still a bit sad when he heard the reply.

“Can you tell me the reason?”

“The reason you came here was to help deceased souls in the Underworld to move on. Back then, you said it yourself that you will not return to the Buddhist Region until there are no more deceased souls in the Underworld. However, people will eventually die, since the cycle of life is destined. You will never be able to help all deceased souls move on!” Ye Zichen spoke indifferently once again. However, he was once again shocked by what he said...

What's wrong with me today!? Did something happen? Why isn't my mouth listening to my brain!

As Ye Zichen watch King Ksigitahba's expression sadden, he wanted to explain himself, but he was unsure of how.

I said it so confidently just now, was I supposed to refute what I just said?

"Never mind, it isn't bad staying in the Underworld," after a long time, King Ksitigarbha shook his head wryly, then flew beside Ye Zichen on his straw cushion.

He patted Ye Zichen's shoulder with his stark white hand, then left the Yama Hall once again silently.

My god, this King Ksitigarbha is definitely pissed to no end!

Ye Zichen watched his leaving figure carefully. Then, at that moment, his phone suddenly buzzed.

Dingdong.

System Mission Issued: Steal a qilin leg belonging to Diting, who is always by King Ksigitahba's side.

Mission Duration: 7 days.

Mission Reward: Activation of the second tier products in the Treasure Store. Chances of getting rare items from the Lucky Roulette increased.

Failure Punishment: Death!

...

Ye Zichen was completely shocked.

He rubbed his eyes with force as he looked at the information on the screen.

The phone actually issued a mission for me. The mission is actually still so strange, it actually wants one of Diting's legs.

What's even more f*cking speechless is that I'm going to get killed if I die?

Doesn't that mean that I have to steal that leg? Otherwise, I'll die?

"Laozi's done with this shit!" Ye Zichen threw his phone onto the floor. He really didn't want to care about anyone anymore. It was whatever that people were trying to assassinate him, and now, even the damn phone started to plot against him.

Diting is a primordial divine beast, and King Ksigitahba's ride...

I'm just a small False Earth Immortal fry. Stealing Diting's leg... Isn't that just f*cking seeking death?

"Since I'm going to die either way, then kill me now! Laozi's done!" Ye Zichen howled in the hall, but nobody replied in the empty hall. The phone he threw onto the floor did not have any broken places at all. What made him even more speechless was that the phone actually directly flew up from the floor and into his pocket.

"You're messing with me, aren't you!"

After screaming out for a while, Ye Zichen felt a bit tired, so he collapsed on the floor, and took out his phone to read the notification...

System Notification: Due to your attempt at destroying this machine, you have been deducted cultivation experience x500000. If you repeat this offense, then all of your gains will be wiped.

"Someone's definitely controlling this phone," Ye Zichen licked his lips as he looked at the notification on the phone. "Who exactly are you? Can we actually meet... I really can't take you always messing with me!"

Nobody answered.

“Bro, stop pretending. I’ve suspected someone manipulating this phone since ages ago, can you come out for a chat? Say, issuing this mission for me, and telling me to steal a leg from Diting... Aren’t you pushing me into the fire pit? Even if we’re playing a game, the system would at least give me a hint, or something like a guide!”

Ye Zichen sighed helplessly...

Dingdong.

System Notification: You received the guide for gaining Diting’s leg.

...

Who exactly are you!?

Chapter 388 – Leg-Stealing Guide

Ye Zichen smiled when he saw the system notification.

I got a guide right after asking for it, and they still want to pretend as if nobody's behind this phone? This guy might even be nearby, or else, there was no way he could have heard what I said.

“Do you dare to come out? We'll have a good chat!”

There was still no reply.

After Ye Zichen yelled out a few times in the hall, he couldn't be bothered about it anymore. Since he now knew for sure that someone was manipulating his phone in secret, then he'd definitely meet that person in the future.

I'll increase my strength well, then when I am strong, I'll definitely teach this brat a lesson when I meet him.

He clicked on the system notification...

Diting loves wine. The qilin legs will fall of themselves after Diting gets drunk. You can use that time to place the legs within the Treasure Chest. Even if someone in the Underworld looks into the incident, they would not investigate you.

You will be informed of the reason for stealing the four legs later.

There is no need for you to worry about Diting, as a sacred beast, his lost legs will grow out once again after a while.

Hurry up, your time is limited.

Just look at how human-like this system notification is, it's as if we're chatting. The wry smile on Ye Zichen's lips became increasingly obvious. Seriously, the guy behind this...

What exactly does he want!

“Master, did King Ksitigarbha leave already?”

King Chujian and King Qinguang walked in front the outside. The situation in the Underworld was rather troublesome, and the other Yama Kings needed to go and finish their own work using the time King Ksitigarbha is out of closed cultivation.

“He left,” Ye Zichen said plainly, while wondering how he was going to treat Diting to drink wine with him.

The system's mission guide was already very straightforward, but he needed to create the opportunity of drinking with Diting.

“Master, master...” King Chujiang pushed Ye Zichen's shoulders carefully.

Ye Zichen looked up, and saw King Qinguang and King Chujiang looking at him in confusion. “What is it?”

“Master, your friend will take awhile to get reborn. How about we organize a place for you to stay?” King Chujiang replied with a smile.

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes and replied, “Hmmm, send me back to the Modern Realm once. I’ll talk to you guys through WeChat later, and when I do, open the gate for me again. Oh yeah, don’t get any ideas about Liu Qing while I’m gone.”

“No problem!”

Zoom.

After Ye Zichen returned to the Modern Realm from the Underworld, he ran straight to shops that sold famous liquors nearby.

He immediately chose the ones with the highest alcohol concentration, including red wine, white wine, yellow wine and beer. He was already determined to get Diting drunk in order to steal its legs, so he needed to prepare all of the necessary items.

“Open the gate, open the gate!”

After he finished buying liquor, Ye Zichen sent a message to King Chujiang. Not long later, a spatial crack appeared in front of him.

Ye Zichen glanced around to ensure that nobody was present before he quickly entered.

“Master, what did you go to the Modern realm to do?” King Chujiang asked passionately immediately after Ye Zichen returned.

Ye Zichen glanced at him and King Qinguang, then took out a bottle of red wine, which he placed in front of them, “Don’t say that I don’t take care of you guys. This is a good wine from the Modern Realm... Here, it’s for you.”

“This...” Both King Chujiang and King Qinguang licked their lips. Both of them loved alcohol, and thirsted after the good beverages from the Modern Realm. However, they had no way to taste them.

The fact that the master actually gifted it to them caused them to instantly feel excited.

“This is too valuable!”

“Mm, it’s good that you know it’s valuable. I didn’t give it to you guys for nothing. When you find a place for me to stay, can you try to find a place near King Ksigitahba’s place? If Diting lives alone, then send me to Diting’s place is fine as well.”

“What for?” King Qinguang asked in confusion.

Ye Zichen immediately replied with the excuse he had already come up with, “I also have a white dog like King Ksitigarbha does,

and he had a pretty good intelligence. I do want to try and turn him into a beast of the level of a divine beast or sacred beast, so... I want to exchange dog-raising experiences!”

Both King Chujiang and King Qinguang revealed a troubled expression.

After a while, they finally replied, “Master, it’s not that we’re not helping you. The main problem is that we can just randomly settle you at King Ksigitahba’s place. If you truly want to exchange experiences, then you can walk around more in the Underworld. King Ksitigarbha and Diting both often wander around the Ghost Region, and that is especially true for Diting, since he loves wandering around.”

“That’s fine as well. Then find a place for me in the Ghost Region... A place close to here, since I’ll come over to see her often.”

If I stay too close to them, then it might increase my suspicions. So, instead, I’ll just drag Diting over to drink a few glasses when I bump into him in the Ghost Region.

Then I’ll steal his legs...

Perfect!

King Qinguang instantly nodded after getting Ye Zichen’s agreement, “Naturally. King Chujiang, go and find a place for

master to stay at.”

The place King Chujiang found for Ye Zichen was rather similar to a courtyard for the military commanders in the Modern realm. All of those who stayed within were officials in the Underworld.

However, something worthy of retorting was how bad the actual environment was.

The room had a very simple setup. There were no entertainment facilities within. The only thing within was a single bed...

Ye Zichen laid down on the bed with a soft sigh. He took out his phone and saw that both the monkey and Yang Jiang had sent him plenty of messages. Most of it asked him how the situation was and whether the two of them needed to make a move.

Ye Zichen was rather happy with his two brothers. The two of them were the only ones who he had met out of the deities in the Heavenly Realm.

After meeting, they also got closer to one another.

Ye Zichen gave them simple replies, telling them that he was fine, before he set his gaze upon his chat with Old Lord Taishang.

He subconsciously skimmed through what Old Lord Taishang had sent him. Most of the messages basically asked him whether he was kidding, while the rest of it told him to quickly reply.

Why have I ever joked with him? I'm so busy!

“Why are you in such a hurry to find me? This sovereign is so terribly busy!”

Ye Zichen typed out his reply with a frown.

Old Lord Taishang immediately grabbed his phone with bloodshot eyes and a dark expression. He definitely did not dare to give the Queen Mother those silk stockings, and since Ye Zichen had not replied for a long time, he could only start up another furnace of pills helplessly.

Due to the lack of time, he felt like he was about to break down.

Old Lord Taishang suddenly smiled coldly when he saw Ye Zichen's message on the screen of his phone.

“Sky Sovereign, are you messing with me?”

“How am I messing with you? Didn't I send the treasure over to you already?”

Ye Zichen immediately replied with a scratch of his head.

Old Lord Taishang directly responded with an image.

It was a thick leg in black silk stockings, and even the person's leg hair could be seen from the photo.

“That's a dude, right?” Ye Zichen blinked. “Who is the one inside the photo? The Queen Mother?”

“Queen Mother my ass!”

Old Lord Taishang was furious. He quickly responded with rage on his ancient face.

“This is me. This is me...”

Chapter 389 – Advocating Justice

Ha.

Seeing that news, Ye Zichen nearly fell over laughing. Old Lord Taishang actually wore silk stockings.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but click open the photo after a while to save the photo. This is Old Lord Taishang's dark history, I might even be able to get something from him with this in the future.

“Why are you wearing the silk stockings?”

Ye Zichen replied as he held back his laughter. Old Lord Taishang instantly responded with a cold expression.

“If I don't try it, then I wouldn't even know how I die! Say, just what trashy thing is this? Is this something for people to wear? You actually told me to give it to the Queen Mother... You truly wanted to screw me over!?”

...

It's pretty obvious that Old Lord Taishang misunderstood. Silk stockings were able to show off a woman's beauty, and that's why a dude like him looked extremely humorous in it.

“Don't think so much. Giving silk stockings to the Queen Mother

is definitely fine... If you don't believe me, then you can get a fairy to wear it. It'll definitely surprise you!"

Ye Zichen replied in good will.

However, Old Lord Taishang merely replied coldly.

"Hehe... Telling me to find a fairy? This old man is already really old, so what am I finding a fairy for? I think that you don't only want to screw me over, you want my chastity of my older years to be gone!"

...

What the hell?

Just what the hell is in this geezer's brain? Ye Zichen couldn't help but feel speechless when he raised the news.

"I can't help you if you don't believe me!"

"Fine, you want to admit it now, right? Fine, this old man will remember this grudge!"

Smash.

Old Lord Taishang chucked his phone off to the side, while his

furious look shocked his disciples.

“What are you looking at. Hurry up and refine pills!”

...

“Seriously...”

Ye Zichen had wanted to explain himself, but when he sent the message, he noticed that the old man had already deleted him. I really don't understand why that old man is so angry. If it really doesn't work, then I'll just change a treasure for him.

The Modern Realm doesn't have a lot of things, but it does have plenty of good treasures.

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes speechlessly, then sent another friend request after letting out a long sigh.

I'll do what I can and let fate take its course. If that old man doesn't add me, then I really can't help him.

Three days passed by in the blink of an eye. To Ye Zichen's expectations, Old Lord Taishang did not accept his friend request, and instead rejected it several times with curses...

Ye Zichen wasn't someone that didn't care about all that. Since that old man doesn't want to add me... Then I won't bother.

Was King Chujiang messing with me? I've been watching around the Ghost Region every day for these three days, but why have I never seen Diting come over?

"What are you doing? Let me go!" A childish shout sounded out beside his ear. That voice caused Ye Zichen to turn around.

A young looking kid entered his view. Judging from his tattered clothes and his face, he should be a young beggar.

"What's going on?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. Then, he saw a pig-like man patting the child's head continuously with his hand.

"Little tramp, you should open your eyes wider when you walk. Can't you see that grandpa is walking on this road? Say, you dirtied grandpa's clothes, how are you going to compensate... Can you even afford to compensate grandpa?"

Zeze....

It is very obvious that it's the daily actions of a rich person bullying a small fry. Ye Zichen hated seeing these kind of incidents.

I thought these situations would only happen in the Modern realm, but so the Underworld was not free of that either!

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes, then walked towards the pig-faced man.

“Hey... Bro!”

“Who?” The pig-faced man frowned. Then, when he saw Ye Zichen, who was behind him. “Brat, go and stay where you should? Did you die not long ago? In the Underworld... Wait till you are a ghost servant before you try being a hero!”

The pig-faced man pushed Ye Zichen. Only then did Ye Zichen know that plenty of ghosts passed by, but even when they saw what happened, they pretended like they didn’t see it.

“You aren’t letting me advocating justice since I’m in the Underworld?” Ye Zichen frowned, then straightened his neck and nodded. “I am minding this business. What can you do?”

“There truly are people who doesn’t know death even when it’s in front of them!” the pig-faced man squinted his eyes. Then, ten-odd muscular ghosts appeared around him. “Hitting people when doing official duty is not illegal. Treat this beating as a lesson to you!”

The pig-faced man laughed coldly, while the buff ghosts around him walked over. However, just as they were about to make a move, they noticed that they couldn’t possibly make a move against Ye Zichen at all.

“C’mon, hit laozi!”

Ye Zichen stuck his neck in front of the pig-faced man’s face. He had not stayed in the Underworld doing nothing the past few days.

He read up on some laws in the Underworld. The law clearly stated that they cannot attack living people. They were allowed to trick and tease, but they were not allowed to threaten or harm living people...

It could be said that Ye Zichen was a lord in the Underworld, since the little bastards were unable to do anything to him.

Dong.

Ye Zichen kicked the pig-faced man. The man held his crotch and shouted towards the buff ghosts, but there was nothing they could do.

“Little bastard, laozi’s going to advocating justice. Come and hit me. Hurry up and teach me a lesson!”

Ye Zichen kicked the man once more, causing the pig-face man to instantly stop talking.

“Look at your grandson look.”

Ye Zichen snorted towards the pig-faced man, then turned his

head towards the child, “Alright, it’s none of your business now. Hurry up and leave. If you get oppressed, then resist. He is definitely going to bully you if you just endure it.”

Then, after he gave a bit of advice to the boy, Ye Zichen turned around to leave.

“Please wait,” at that moment, the boy he had saved suddenly stopped Ye Zichen, then ran over. “Uhm... Thank you very much for helping me. I’ve seen you in the Ghost Region for several times. You seems to be searching for someone. If you don’t mind, then you can tell me. I might be able to help you find the person you’re looking for.”

“You?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

Hearing the question, the boy nodded with a firm smile, “I’m not very powerful in the Underworld, but I do have my ways of finding people.”

Ye Zichen smiled, then when he saw the boy’s certain gaze, he decided to just try and ask the boy, since he couldn’t find Diting just by waiting for him.

“I’m looking for Diting, can you tell me where he is?”

“Diting? Is it Lord Diting, King Ksitigarbha’s ride?” the boy revealed a look of confusion.

Ye Zichen smiled, “That’s him. What? Is that too difficult for you”

“How’s that difficult,” the boy snorted happily with pride. “What’s hard about that? I’ll take you there directly!”

Chapter 390 – Getting a Subordinate in the Underworld

As Ye Zichen and the young beggar walked on an endlessly meandering road, the young beggar would often turn around and wait for Ye Zichen, then only begin to run forward once again when he saw that Ye Zichen is about to catch up.

“Little fellow, Diting is really over here?”

After walking for two hours, Ye Zichen began to wonder how he was supposed to return later.

“He’s just in front, we’re about to be there soon.”

The little beggar giggled. Then, after walking for ten-odd minutes, Ye Zichen saw a white robed man sitting at a cliff.

He raised his wine glass, and looked at a distant place in front of him.

“Lord Diting,” the young beggar ran over with a giggle.

Diting smiled when he saw him, “Why did you come here?”

“This lord said that he wants to see you,” the young beggar pointed towards Ye Zichen.

Diting nodded, then smiled, “It’s you... I’ve seen you before at the Reincarnation Hall.”

Since the Diting was not in beast form, Ye Zichen had thought that the young beggar was talking about a different person.

However, the moment the white-robed man talked about the Reincarnation Hall, Ye Zichen was certain that the man was his mission target, Diting.

“What did you come to find me for?” Diting looked up with a smile

Ye Zichen licked his lips, then withdrew all of the liquor he had in his Treasure Chest.

“This...” Diting twitched his nose, while his eyes revealed a hint of passion.

Even though the cork was not unscrewed yet, Diting was still able to smell its fragrance.

Meanwhile, when Ye Zichen saw Diting’s expression, he finally stopped worrying.

That guide truly did not trick me. This Diting is a true alcoholic.

“You came to treat me to liquor?” Diting squinted his eyes and rubbed his hands with a smile. At that moment, he did not seem like a holy beast at all, while he stared at the liquor. However, he proceeded to sigh softly. “What a shame!”

“What is it? Lord Diting doesn’t like them?” Ye Zichen quickly asked. He had planned way too long for that moment. If Diting didn’t like them, then he was still able to buy some other liquor in the Modern Realm while there was still time...

“It is good liquor, but the Bodhisattva is going to ride me to a secret place later. Drinking is going to affect things, and the Bodhisattva doesn’t allow me to drink either,” Diting said as he stared at the liquor. “How about drinking it after I come back?”

“I wonder how long Lord Diting is going to take in order to return from that secret location?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. He did not have too much time to wait for Diting. He only had seven days to complete the mission, and he would be killed if he doesn’t.

Three days had already passed, so at that moment, there was only four days left for him to complete the mission.

“I’m not sure either. If we’re quick, then I’ll return in a day. If we’re slow, then it’ll take ten days to half a month!” Diting answered thoughtfully.

However, Ye Zichen put on an extremely troubled expression.

Ten days to half a month, then when he comes back, he can only drink with my ghost. Thus, Ye Zichen scratched his head anxiously.

Seeing that, Diting raised his eyebrows, “You seem to be in a hurry?”

“No, I just feel sad for not being able to taste liquor with Lord Diting. I’m a liquor lover as well, and I feel very tempted with the liquor here. However, I feel like I would not be doing Lord Diting right by stealing a bit to drink by myself,” Ye Zichen answered with a coy smile.

Diting immediately displayed an understanding smile, “I get it, we’re the same! You can drink some yourself, but don’t drink all of it, just save some for me. Of course, I will come back from the secret location as soon as possible in order to share a drink with you!”

“Sure!”

With that, Diting turned into his beast form and spoke, “Wait for me to return.”

Zoom.

Diting leaped into the air, then disappeared from Ye Zichen’s eyes. Ye Zichen put away all the beverages from the table, while his heart felt extremely nervous.

His very life was in Diting's hands. It would be good if Diting returns earlier, but if he returns too late...

I suppose if it really doesn't work, then I'll talk with that mysterious person to try and delay it for a few days. I can't just lose my life like this!

Ye Zichen thought quietly to himself as he put away the liquor. Just as he was about to leave, the little beggar suddenly ran in front of him and grabbed his trousers.

"What? You like liquor as well...? Then I'll give you a few bottles!" Ye Zichen did not act stingy at all, and instead took out several bottles and placed them onto the table.

The little beggar shook his head, then raised his eyebrows, "My lord, can I follow you?"

"Follow me?" Ye Zichen was stunned.

The little beggar nodded, "Mhm, you are a good person. No one has ever helped someone like me in the Underworld. I want to follow you. I will definitely not eat your food for nothing. I have a lot of skills..."

Ye Zichen sighed when he saw the little beggar's pitiful look.

He could understand the little beggar fairly well. The little beggar had no backing in the Underworld, so he wanted to follow a good-willed person like him. Ye Zichen did not actually mind this little fellow too much, but he was a mortal...

He couldn't possibly continuously stay in the Underworld. Would this little fellow have no one again after I leave the Underworld?

“But I can't stay in the Underworld for the long term.”

“Are you saying that you're going to go on an adventure in a secret location?” the little fellow's eyes lit up. “I can go with you. If I say that I'm the second in the Underworld at wilderness survival skills, nobody would claim that they are number one!”

The little beggar had completely misunderstood, but Ye Zichen didn't want to explain so much. Thus, he shook his head with a sigh, “Oh well, then follow me!”

“Thank you, my lord,” the little beggar stood up from the ground with a giggle. “My lord, I still don't know what you're called.”

“Ye Zichen!”

“Ye Zichen,” the little beggar muttered to himself, then blinked. “I seem to have heard of this name somewhere before.”

When they returned to the capital and the little beggar walked in

the center of the roads, there were many times that someone had wanted to shoo him away. However, when they noticed Ye Zichen, who was beside him, they all swallowed their words, then walked to the side of the road.

“My lord, I could never walk in the center of the road before,” the little beggar laughed with self-mockery. “But I have always believed that I would be able to stand at the center of the Ghost Region. Although I’m not using my own powers now, at least I’m a step closer to my dream!”

Ye Zichen nodded with a soft smile. For some reason, he could understand the little beggar’s feelings very well.

For some reason, he was able to feel some sort of synergy between them despite it being the first time they met...

“Hehe, you are truly easy to find.”

At that moment a group of people suddenly appeared around Ye Zichen and the little beggar, completely blocking them off.

Not long later, the beaten-up pig-faced man walked out from the crowd and squinted his eyes with a smile, “No wonder my subordinates couldn’t hit you. You... are a mortal, right! But you are unlucky. Lord Pig coincidentally has a bunch of brothers that did not sign any kind of agreement. Since you beat me up so happily, then you have to allow me, Lord Pig, to have my fun!”

Chapter 391 – Various Movements

The pig-headed fatty smiled in a mocking manner, while the fighters also closed in on Ye Zichen.

“My lord, run... I can take a beating very well. Come and save me after you get reinforcements,” the little beggar pushed Ye Zichen away.

This simple action caused Ye Zichen to be truly moved.

He rubbed the little beggar’s head with a smile, then stepped forward, “Are you sure you’re going to make a move on me?”

“Grandson, stop pretending with laozi. A mere mortal being in the Underworld is a huge sin. After I beat you up, I’ll chuck you to the Yama Kings. Hehe... Let’s see what happens to you then,” the pig-head fatty’s expression was covered in disdain.

Ye Zichen nodded, and took out his phone...

“Help me! I’m at the Central Street of the Ghost Region. A pig-head fatty blocked me off. He wants to hit me...”

Woosh.

Ye Zichen instantly sent the message to several people. Then, he returned his phone back into his pocket with a smile, “If you stop

now, then we might still have a room for negotiation!”

“Stop pretending,” the pig head fatty snorted with a smile. “Do it!”

Ye Zichen did indeed send the message, but he could not be sure that they would immediately receive the news. Ye Zichen must protect himself and the little beggar before those people arrive.

These people around me don’t look like they’re easily bullied. Ye Zichen clenched his teeth...

Capture the commander first!

Ye Zichen kicked the ghosts near him, then reached towards the pig head fatty.

“Hmmp, you want to deal with me? I, Lord Fatty, have trained before!” the pig head fatty snorted then took a step back, then two ghosts instantly appeared in his original position, both of whom punched towards Ye Zichen.

Bang.

When Ye Zichen carelessly took a punch, he raised his hand to touch where he was hit.

They really can hit me!

“My lord, run...”

The little beggar’s face was covered in anxiety. He had wanted to help several times, but he was sent flying by a single kick every single time.

“F*ck, laozi has never gotten beaten in the Modern Realm, so how can I get beaten here in the Underworld?”

Boom.

Ye Zichen instantly allowed his spiritual energy to circulate through his body.

The faint aura of spiritual pressure radiated out from Ye Zichen’s body. Everyone was shocked by the huge spiritual energy fluctuation, but after sensing the true strength of the person that released it...

“False Earth Immortal. Who cares, go!”

“Hehe, are you looking down on False Earth Immortal? Laozi’s going to give you guys a lesson!”

With that, Ye Zichen charged towards those people. At that moment, he already stopped trying to put up any defenses, since Unbreakable Body would mean that he would never get too

injured...

What he had to do was beat the ghosts until they were scared, and endure everything until the people he sent messages to arrive.

...

Dingdong.

Ox-Head, who had only just finished wandering around from the outside, rolled his neck and took out his phone, only to find a message on it.

“Help me! I’m at the Central Street of the Ghost Region. A pig-head fatty blocked me off. He wants to hit me...”

F*ck!

Brother Beanbun’s getting beaten up!

Ox-Head immediately pocketed his phone and shouted towards Horse-face, “Bring our people and come with me to Central Street of the Ghost Region.”

...

At the Xie Manor.

Xie Lei's status in the Xie family rose a lot after presenting Ye Zichen's tin of tea leaves. At that moment, he was playing Go with Xie Bian. Then, his phone, which he placed on the side, buzzed. What's more, it wasn't only his, as Xie Bian's phone also buzzed.

Both of them took a look at the message.

Then, Xie Bian raised his eyebrows and smiled, "That's your guy, right? He actually sent me the message as well. But, let's go over and take a look. I do want to see how dares to bully someone of our Xie manor!"

"Hurry up. Watch me take care of you if you guys walk slowly."

The White Impermanence Intern also hurried over to the Central Street of the Ghost Region with seventy to eighty ghosts behind her. She was the first one to see Ye Zichen's message, but she was truly too far...

All of a sudden, countless people moved...

The ignorant bystanders all followed with a look of curiosity behind them when they saw so many angry people.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen truly couldn't take it anymore...

All of the people the pig-head fatty brought were probably of the

Earth Immortal level. Ye Zichen might have been able to deal with one or two, but several tens of them truly tired Ye Zichen out.

Ye Zichen panted heavily, but the fighters were not in a much better condition as they also panted around him.

The pig head fatty, who was watching the show, twitched his mouth and walked over.

“Grandson, want to keep pretending with grandpa?” the pig faced fatty raised his foot to kick Ye Zichen, but the latter did not have any strength to dodge it anymore.

At that very moment...

A white chain suddenly wrapped itself around the pig-headed fatty's neck. [Bai Rou](#) levitated in the air as she held the end of the chain, which she then used to fling the fatty onto a nearby wall.

“Are you alright?” Bai Rou descended from the air worriedly.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but smile when he saw her, “You were actually the one who came first.”

“Sorry, I was a bit far, so I came rather slowly,” Bai Rou knitted her eyebrows slightly worriedly when she saw the injuries on Ye Zichen's face.

At that moment, she was not in her uniform, so her actual form was exposed in front of everyone.

Even Ye Zichen couldn't help but be shocked again when he took another look at her beauty. I really don't understand why that Black Impermanence would cheat on her!

“Bai Rou!” the pig head fatty frowned, then touched his neck, which had been wrapped with the chain. “You’ve truly got guts. You actually dared to use a Soul Reaping Chain to touch Lord Fatty’s neck.”

“[Bao Tan](#), hurry up and f*ck off. I’m annoyed just from seeing your piggy face,” Bai Rou stood up with her hands on her waist, then turned to the ghosts she brought over. “Watch all of them carefully. If they dare to make any move, go and beat them up. We’ve got more people, so three on one is definitely fine... If you get hurt, then laoniang will compensate you guys later. If you beat them until they get disabled, then you’ll get a bonus!”

“Hehe, Bai Rou... You care about this brat pretty much. Is he your new sugar baby?”

“F*ck you!” Bai Rou squinted her eyes and cursed. “It really is strange, how did Marshal Leopard end up with a grandson like you. You’re a crossbreed aren’t you? Pig head... Zezeze...”

“Say that again!?” Bao Tan frowned.

Then, a playful laughter sounded out, “So what, did she say it? Stop losing face for your grandpa. Hurry up and f*ck off back home, okay?”

Xie Lei walked out from the side with a faintly smile with Xie Bian, who was in casual clothes, by his side.

“Esteemed Master,” Bai Rou cupped her hands towards Xie Bian. Xie Bian nodded plainly, then glanced towards Ye Zichen.

When he saw the ring on Ye Zichen’s finger, he began to smile, “We finally meet.”

“Marshal Xie!” Ye Zichen also cupped his hands.

Xie Bian maintained his soft smile, then turned towards Bao Tan, “Go back. Since I’m here, even Old Leopard has to leave with me here!”

“Is that so? Xie Bian, can you not be so shameless when I’m absent?”

The name of the White Impermanence Intern.

Bao (豹) is the first character of leopard (豹子).

Chapter 392 – The Hearts of Plotters Are All Dark

Boom.

A thunderous chuckle rang out in the sky above the Underworld. The oppressing aura that came surging over with the thick clouds caused the surrounding ghost soldiers to not dare to look up at all.

“Leopard Tail?” Xie Bian smiled, then swept his palm towards the sky. “You came already, don’t bother with this show. It will only make you seem like you look down on yourself.”

The clouds scattered, and four middle-aged men in the sky were revealed. They all wore the same black clothing like brothers, while they gazed intently at Xie Bian, who stood below them.

“You actually all came!”

“Scared?” the man with long whiskers like a feline laughed as the four men descended from the sky together.

“Scared of you guys?” Xie Bian smiled. “Even if I let the four of you come together, do you guys dare to come over?”

All of a sudden, the atmosphere turned a bit strange. Ye Zichen gulped, while a look of excitement surfaced on Xie Lei’s face.

These four people in front of me are not small fries in the Underworld, they are Leopard Tail, Bird Beak, Hornet and Fish Gill...

They are the four marshals of the dead that are listed amongst [the Ten Yin Marshals](#) along with the Impermanences!

As a child of the Xie family, Xie Lei naturally knew that their family's old man was not on good terms with the four Marshals of the Dead in charge of animals. However, he never expected their old man to be so fierce as to directly challenge against all four of them as if they didn't take him seriously at all.

“Grandpa!” the pig-faced fatty, Bao Tan, ran over. At that moment, he already lost all of the cockiness in his expression, because it was replaced with a look of being troubled, as he wept. “They hit me, and said that I’m ugly.”

“Lil’ Tan, go and stand to the side. Your grandpas will definitely help you get justice later,” the man beside Leopard Tail smiled, then rubbed Bai Tan’s hair.

Bao Tan nodded and walked to the side. After walking behind the four marshals, a cold smug smile instantly surfaced on his face.

You little bastards dare to act cocky with me. Now...

Don’t even think about leaving.

“Xie Bian, as comrades, it would cause a bad influence if we

directly start fighting in the Ghost Region. Hand the young man behind you over to me. Oh yeah, and your disciple as well... She seemed the cockiest just now. Perhaps you are busy, so you neglected her teachings, so I, the elder brother will do it for you!" Leopard Tail looked up indifferently.

Xie Bian sneered and shook his head, "Don't try and use ploys on Laozi. Laozi doesn't have the time for it. If you want them, fine... Come here!"

Bang.

A huge fluctuation of spiritual energy instantly enveloped the entirety of the Central Street in the Ghost Region. That boundless aura surprised the four Marshals of Hell, but they quickly squinted their eyes, then radiated a spiritual aura that was no weaker than Xie Bian's.

"Xie Bian, your cultivation level dropped recently, right?" Leopard Tail snorted.

Xie Bian's pupils instantly contracted when he felt their spiritual energy. This doesn't make sense. At their level, it is harder to cultivate to the next level than reaching the skies. These people were merely early stage Human Immortals a hundred years ago, and now they have actually become late-stage Human Immortals like me...

"Don't think that you're still number one of the Ten Yin Marshals. We brothers were weaker than you before, but were we

supposed to be stepped on by you for our entire lives?”

Boom.

More ferocious aura radiated out of the four of them. Xie Bian merely stared at them with a frown, but Ye Zichen sensed something unusual.

It feels like... demonic energy.

“Zezeze, it’s so heated here, how can you not count I, Old Ox, in when fighting!”

At that moment, Ox-Head, who had a gold nose ring, walked over with a baseball bat-like stick, while Horse-Face followed behind him.

“Leopard Tail, you don’t remember the beating you took a hundred years ago, right? You want to fight with us, the Four Ghost Marshals again?”

Ox-Head and Horse-Face already walked beside Xie Bian as they spoke.

“Old Xie, don’t be courteous with them. Beat them up however it is right. God knows where they got their trashy pills. Even though their cultivation levels increased by a bit after taking those, they seriously think that they’re the big bosses of the Underworld now!” Ox-Head laughed coldly.

Horse-Face also nodded, “Big Brother Ox-Head is right!”

All of them drew their weapons.

The atmosphere and got stranger and stranger. Marshals of Hell vs. Ghost Marshals. What’s more, due to how close the Black and White Impermanence were, if they truly started to fight, then Black Impermanence would definitely join in.

But just what’s going on with King Qinguang and King Chujiang? I already sent the message so long ago, why haven’t they come yet?

“Big brother, big brother...”

King Chujiang hurriedly rushed into King Qinguang’s Yama Hall.

King Qinguang, who was doing paperwork on his chair frowned, then scolded, “So frantic, how improper!”

“No...” King Chujiang squinted his eyes and knitted his eyebrows. “That master got blocked off. I wanted to send people to go and rescue him, but just now, I saw...”

“Those old rivals are fighting again, right?” King Qinguang asked without looking up.

“Yes, yes, yes. Big Brother, how did you know? Did you go as

well?” King Chujiang was stunned.

King Qinguang nodded, “Master also sent me the message, so how could I not go?”

“Then, big brother...”

“We can’t get involved!” King Qinguang shook his head. “Seven out of the Ten Yin Marshals went. Who are we supposed to side with when we go? Our jobs as the Yama Kings is not easy. If we can pretend like we didn’t see it, then just do that. As long as no lives are lost, then don’t appear. Wait for the Bodhisattva’s return.”

“That’s true,” King Chujiang sighed.

Them, the Yama Kings, were weaker than the generals in strength. What’s more, the Yama Kings needed the support of the Yin Marshals in order to maintain the stability of the Underworld.

If they showed favor towards a single side, then they would definitely offend plenty of people.

King Chujiang let out a long sigh, then raised his eyebrows, “Big Brother, there is quite a large commotion over at the Reincarnation Pool. It seems like that girlie is going to come out.”

“What!?” King Qinguang immediately jumped up from his seat, then slapped his thigh. “Seriously, not earlier, not later... This is huge now! Hurry up and watch over the Reincarnation Pool.

Definitely calm that lord down when she comes out. I'm going to find the Bodhisattva right now!"

...

Whoosh.

A maple leaf was blown away by the wind. The seven high leveled officials of the Underworld stared at each other like arguing children. Although both seemed powerful, neither made a move.

"Ha..." At that moment, Leopard Tail suddenly smiled.

The strange smiled stunned everyone, then they noticed that someone was missing from Leopard Tail's side.

When they turned around, Ye Zichen saw that Hornet, who was originally standing behind Leopard Tail, had already appeared behind him and Bai Rou.

"Heh!" Hornet smiled coldly, then reached out towards Bai Rou's and Ye Zichen's collars without any hesitation.

Zoom.

Ox-Head, Horse-Face and Xie Bian instantly tried to charge over, but Leopard Tail and co. caught up to them.

“What are you doing? You want to save them?”

“Leopard, you are really going backwards, now you’re starting to use tricks?” Xie Bian’s gaze darkened.

However, Leopard Tail merely laughed playfully, “It’s called strategy. Do you think everyone is as straightforward as you?”

“Hehe...” At that moment, a cold laugh sounded out in the sky. “The hearts of all plotters are dark!”

Zing.

At that moment, two blades of energy shot through the air.

“Trying to grab my guy? I really want to punch you!”

The Ten Yin Marshals (十大阴帅) refer to ten marshals of the Underworld. They are: Black Impermanence, White Impermanence, Leopard Tail (豹尾), Nian Zui (鸟嘴), Hornet (黄蜂), Fish Gill (鱼鳃), Sun Patrol (日游), and Night Patrol (夜游). The latter two are respectively in charged of patrolling the mortal realm during the time that their name suggests. They also fill a role similar to that of the secret police. Meanwhile, Leopard Tail is in charged of animal souls, Bird Beak in charged of avian souls, Hornet in charged of insect souls and Fish Gill in charge of fish souls.

Chapter 393 – Sky Immortal Liu Qing

The cold words sounded rather cute to everyone's ears, while the two blades of energy also made contact with the ground, causing a huge crackling sound.

Despite that being the only thing that happened, the power of that attack still chilled people.

“Oops, I missed,” a cute voice rang out in the sky once again.

Leopard Tail and the others quickly retreated to their original position and frowned, “Who!?”

“Hehehe, why should I tell you?”

A saintess-like figure with white boots slowly descended from the sky with a giggle, while flower petals danced occasionally around her, making her seem all the more beautiful.

“Liu Qing!” Ye Zichen exclaimed.

The girl ran to his side with a giggle, “Did you miss me?”

When she got closer, Ye Zichen was even able to feel the tremendous of spiritual energy surrounding her body. It was as if it flowed out of her body...

No, it's not flowing out of her body.

It's because her affinity with the spiritual energy in the world itself was too great, so spiritual energy would gather towards her wherever she was.

Ye Zichen merely wanted to revive her, but... He had actually revived her into a genius.

"Hey, why are you looking at me like that!" Liu Qing twitched her mouth and rolled her eyes at him.

"N-No!" Ye Zichen stuttered.

Leopard Tail, who stood at a place not far from them, snorted with a frown, "Who are you? Did you not hear what this marshal said!?"

"So annoying..." Liu Qing suddenly pouted unhappily. She looked around and stared at Leopard Tail...

Dong.

Leopard Tail, who was standing on the ground, suddenly flew backwards and fell to the ground, creating a huge crater.

"I'm talking to Ye Zichen. Don't interrupt. If anyone dares to speak, then I'll hit you," Liu Qing raised her small fists

threateningly, with her cute voice saying such threatening words, caused everyone to not dare to even utter a single sound.

She was able to use the spiritual energy of the heavens and earth so that a single glare from her could cause a late-stage Human Immortal expert was heavily injured without being able to react!

This is strength that only someone of a cultivation level above Sky Immortal could have. This cute girl who looked to be seventeen or eighteen years old was actually a...

Sky Immortal!

After Leopard Tail got out of the crater with the help of his brothers, the way he looked towards Liu Qing had completely changed.

It became full of wariness.

Intense wariness flashed across his eyes. That hit earlier was more than enough to make him understand the huge difference between the two of them.

“Ye Zichen, why aren’t you speaking... Did you get shocked senseless? I’m amazing, aren’t I!” Liu Qing smiled proudly like a young girl. All of the surrounding Yin Marshals were stunned. A Sky Immortal level expert was actually so close with the brat.

“A-Amazing!” Ye Zichen could no longer hide the shock in his

heart. This wasn't just amazing, alright...

She's strong enough to completely destroy a Human Immortal level expert, so even the monkey would find trouble with her!

If this girl went to the Heavenly Court, then wouldn't she be equal to Old Lord Taishang and co.? More importantly, Liu Qing was definitely someone who wouldn't leave my side.

Doesn't that mean I am going to have a super strong helper by my side from now on?

This is a bug, right?

The system will definitely punish me for getting a late-game legendary item during mid-game.

"Hehe, it's good that you feel like it's amazing."

Liu Qing shook her head with a sweet smile, then hooked her fingers towards Bao Tan, causing him, who was originally trembling in the corner, to fly over uncontrollably.

"Grandpa, save me!" Bao Tan kicked and struggled as he screamed.

Leopard Tail wanted to speak up, but he could only choose to remain silent when he noticed Liu Qing's gaze.

“Hmm, that’s more like it!” Liu Qing snorted towards Leopard Tail, then smashed Bao Tan down heavily in front of Ye Zichen. “Did this fatty make you unhappy? I’ll leave you to deal with him. Just bully him however you want. If anyone dares to object, hmph...”

Liu Qing was truly an overlord at that moment. It was no exaggeration to say that even if all the Ghost Marshals attacked her together, they would not be able to defeat her.

Bao Tan laid on the ground while trembling. Currently, he was truly terrified to no end.

“My lord, why did you come over here?” King Chujiang hurried over helplessly.. He had wanted to talk with Liu Qing in the Reincarnation pool, and she had agreed to it, but that lord had disappeared within the time needed to drink a mouthful of water.

King Chujiang looked at the injuries on Leopard Tail, and Bao Tan, who was lying on the ground...

This lord definitely made a move.

“Why not? Someone bullied Ye Zichen, so I have to protect him!” Liu Qing rolled her eyes and snorted. None of you here are good people, all of you like to use plots and ploys. The hearts of all plotters are dirty. I don’t like you guys.”

“Oh my lord!” King Chujiang was about to go crazy, and since he had no other choice, he could only beg Ye Zichen. “Master, say some good words to this lord. She was revived in our Underworld, so be merciful. You are a great person, so don’t take offense about this. Just leave this at that!”

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but silently sigh when he saw King Chujiang’s pitiful look and was reminded about all those times that he had troubled King Chujiang previously. He looked towards Liu Qing, then spoke up, “Never mind...”

King Chujiang was extremely happy, causing him to silently comment on how this master was easy to talk to.

However, Liu Qing twitched her mouth in displeasure, then snapped her fingers...

“Ah!”

Bao Tan let out a terrible scream, while a bloody mist surrounded him as if his body had exploded.

“This will make you remember. If you make Ye Zichen unhappy from now on... Then I’ll make your entire family unhappy!” Liu Qing twitched her mouth and left while holding Ye Zichen’s hand. King Chujiang looked towards Leopard Tail and co. to indicate them to clean Bao Tan up a bit, before he left behind Ye Zichen and Liu Qing.

Then, the rest of the people also left in shock.

However, right before leaving, Leopard Tail hammered the ground.

“Big Brother!”

“That woman...” Leopard Tail squinted his eyes and snorted. “We’ll endure it. Since we have managed to become connected with those people, it is just a matter of time before we breakthrough to the Sky Immortal level. Laozi will make them pay for this sooner or later.”

...

As Ye Zichen and Liu Qing returned, the little beggar followed carefully behind them.

Liu Qing pouted and looked behind her, “Who is that little fella?”

The little beggar instantly shrunk his neck back when he was named. He had seen how amazing the big sis was.

“My new subordinate. We’ll all on the same boat now,” Ye Zichen replied.

Liu Qing indicated that she understood before asking, “Then are we going back to the Modern Realm now? I’ve already been

revived, can we not stay here anymore? I don't like this place..."

"We'll definitely go back, but we have to wait a bit," Ye Zichen smiled wryly. I haven't stolen Diting's leg yet. If I return, then aren't I just seeking death?

Chapter 394 – Mission Accomplished

Two more days passed by in the blink of an eye. Ye Zichen was truly able to do essentially whatever he wanted with Liu Qing by his side. The Yama Kings, who did not really dare to do anything to him before, were even more afraid now.

During the two days, he went over to visit Xie Bian, as well as Ox-Head and Horse-Face. Xie Bian had insisted on looking at the ghost ring, but since Xie Bian was unable to figure anything out after a long time, they merely chatted simply before Ye Zichen returned to where he was staying and activated his waiting mode.

Dingdong.

System Notification: There are only 48 hours remaining to complete the mission.

Ye Zichen felt extremely troubled by the reminder. King Chujiang had told him that King Qinguang went to find Ksitigarbha, but Ye Zichen didn't see them return yet, even though it had already been so long.

“Diting, please come back quickly!”

“Haha, I wonder which drinking buddy misses me so much?” a soft chuckled sounded out in the room. When Ye Zichen turned his head back, he saw Diting, who was wearing a white robe, standing at the entrance to his room with a smile. “What? You can't resist it anymore?”

“You’ve finally returned. How am I supposed to endure it all with all these liquors in front of me,” Ye Zichen put on a joyous expression. Diting’s return with forty eight hours remaining is still just enough if I hurry.

Thus, Ye Zichen directly withdrew all the liquor from his Treasure Chest without saying anything, completely filling up the table.

Seeing that, Diting ran over as he rubbed his hands. While he was out with the Bodhisattva, his mind was just thinking about those treasures...

“This fragrance...” Diting’s nose twitched, then held up a bottle of white liquor as he licked his lips. “How do you open this liquor? Why isn’t it like the liquor of the Underworld?”

“Ha... This is good liquor from the Modern Realm. How could I intentionally invite Lord Diting over for the normal Underworld liquor?” Ye Zichen smiled, then familiarly uncorked the bottle, then handed it over. “Since we’re both wine lovers, then let’s not use cups, and just drink from the bottle directly... We aren’t done till we’re drunk!”

“Sure, we aren’t done till we’re drunk!” Diting also chuckled, and grabbed the bottle of high alcoholic concentration Wuliangye and knocked it with Ye Zichen’s bottle, before tilting his head back to pour it in his mouth.

“The wine’s pretty good! But... I feel like the texture is slightly bad. The ingredients are a bit poor!” Diting muttered after downing a bottle of liquor as he placed the bottle back onto the table.

Ye Zichen was already immune to such comments. He did realize that although the Modern Realm used more advanced brewing techniques, the materials used could not even be compared to those used in the Heavenly Court.

However, what he focused on more was Diting’s drinking capabilities. This guy downed a bottle off high alcohol concentration Wuliangye in one go.

But his face isn’t red, and his heart doesn’t seem to be racing. His drinking capabilities must be tremendous.

Thus, Ye Zichen quietly used his celestial spiritual energy to metabolize all of the alcohol in his body, then directly gave Diting a bottle of red wine.

“It’s slightly sour when entering the mouth, but very smooth and savory when I taste it more carefully. It’s top notch.”

Diting would make a comment on the liquor every time he drank it. Although the ingredients used in brewing were poor, the conclusions he gave were still rather good.

As long as Diting did not hate it, he would continue to drink, giving

a chance to Ye Zichen.

In order to make Diting drunk quicker, Ye Zichen did everything he could, including getting Diting to drink red wine, yellow wine, white wine, and beer all at once.

“Bro, we drink happily to get drunk. Always refining the alcohol in your body using celestial spiritual energy is not good,” Diting knitted his eyebrows and pointed at Ye Zichen after he finished a bottle of beer.

“Although I love wine, I have a rather poor drinking ability! I’m just accompanying Lord Diting. Otherwise, with Lord Diting’s ability, I would be completely asleep already!” Ye Zichen smiled, while he wondered why Diting could drink so much...

Could the constitution of a divine beast be so much better than a person’s? The amount that was held in the empty bottles in front of Diting could have gotten several tens hulks drunk.

“Haha, kid, I like you a lot,” Diting smiled, then grabbed another bottle of wine to pour into his mouth.

Ye Zichen smiled in response, while he got more and more worried. He had considered the possibility of Diting being a very capable drinker, so he intentionally bought a lot of alcohol.

Despite that, Diting had drank the majority of the alcohol. Even though the alcohol’s about to finished, I still see no signs of

drunkenness.

Approximately half an hour later...

“Burp,” Diting finally burped after drinking a huge amount. He patted his tummy and stood up from his chair, then he placed his right hand onto Ye Zichen’s shoulder after taking a glance at the floor filled with empty bottles. “Kid, you made I, Diting very satisfied today. From now on, if anyone in the Underworld bullies you. Burp. Remember to mention your Big Brother Diting’s name.”

“Okay,” Ye Zichen’s heart was filled with endless regret when he said that. I miscalculated...

The liquor has already been finished, but Diting was still sober, and showed no signs of sleepiness.

Then, Diting began to walk out with a red face. It was when he reached the entrance that Liu Qing walked in.

“Let’s meet another day,” Diting waved his hand and left.

At the same time, Liu Qing also looked at Ye Zichen with knitted eyebrows, “Why did you drink so much!”

“Now I’m in trouble,” Ye Zichen sat on the chair within the room limply.

Liu Qing blinked and raised her eyebrows, “What happened?”

Thus, Ye Zichen told her about the system’s mission.

Liu Qing giggled, “Wait a moment.”

With that, she quickly left the room. Ye Zichen ignored that, as he gripped the phone in his hand and stared right at the system notification.

“Are you really going to kill me if I don’t manage to steal Diting’s legs?”

No response.

Ye Zichen sighed in disappointment, then laid onto the floor. At that moment, the petite Liu Qing walked in with a person on her back.

Bang.

“You’re talking about him, right?”

Ye Zichen, rolled over. Then, he immediately sat up after seeing the person on the floor.

“Why did you carry him back? You didn’t let anyone else notice,

right?”

“What’s there to be surprised about? I just brought him back. Nobody in the Underworld is currently as strong as me. If they want to notice me, then they would have to cultivate a few more years,” Liu Qing giggled, then pointed at Diting, who was in deep sleep on the floor. “I brought the guy over to you. How do you want to steal his legs?”

“About this...”

At that very moment, Diting resumed his beast form. Then, not long later, his four qilin legs promptly separated from his body.

“They fell off, they fell off!” Liu Qing exclaimed softly.

Ye Zichen licked his lips, then scanned the qilin legs with his phone.

Dingdong.

Qilin Legs gained.

Zoom.

A few moments later, the four qilin legs were stored into Ye Zichen’s Treasure Chest.

After doing all that, he looked towards Liu Qing, “Send him to a safe place.”

“Got it!” Liu Qing nodded, then grabbed Diting by his neck before leaping out of the room.

At the same time, Ye Zichen’s phone also rang.

Dingdong.

System Notification: Congratulations, you have completed the mission.

System Notification: I have already sent you the mission reward. You can now exchange for the Tier 2 products in the Treasure Shop. Of course, that is if you have enough cultivation experience.

System Notification: Young man, work hard!

Chapter 395 – Ascension?

Ye Zichen truly wanted to curse when he saw the system notification.

What exactly does this guy want? It seems like he's nurturing me, yet, he is merciless towards me as well.

I stole Diting's legs, but what should I do now?

A permanent life like a doll was not the kind of life Ye Zichen wanted.

“Are you able to hear my words? I just want to ask, who exactly are you?”

Ye Zichen stared straight at the phone's screen but there was no reply.

“Seriously...” Ye Zichen clenched his fist.

At that moment, Liu Qing also walked in.

“How did you go? Did you complete the mission?”

“Yep.”

Ye Zichen stretched lazily, then replied, “Diting is safe where he is, right? Ensure that he doesn’t get into any danger. The fact that we stole his legs is already a terrible thing for him.”

“Don’t worry, he’s definitely safe.”

“Then that’s good.”

Ye Zichen let out a soft sigh, then stretched lazily, “I’m a bit tired, so I’m going to rest.”

“Are we not going to leave immediately?”

“How could we possibly leave? If we leave now, then the crime of stealing his legs will definitely land on us. We’ll wait here a bit more, then talk about it after seeing the situation tomorrow.”

“Okay.”

Nothing else was said that night.

Early next morning, Ye Zichen, who was still dreaming, was suddenly awoken by the commotion outside. He scratched his hair and looked out the window, and saw tons of ghost servants investigating each household one by one.

It seems like Diting has already woken up and found out that his qilin legs were lost.

Ye Zichen licked his lips, then got up from the bed. After a simple wash up, he walked out from their room.

It was fortunate that I passed the little beggar along to Xie Lei to be taken care of.

Otherwise, that little beggar might have seen us stealing the legs. Although Ye Zichen wasn't sure whether the little beggar would expose them or not, it was still a possible trouble.

“Stop right there!”

Several ghost servants suddenly stopped him just as Ye Zichen and Liu Qing were about to leave the courtyard house.

“What is it?”

“Lord Diting's legs were stolen. The entire Underworld has to be searched. You... put up your hands!” The ghost servant answered strongly.

Ye Zichen immediately put up his hands to allow himself to be searched without hesitation.

“Okay, you can leave now.”

Since the ghost servant did not find any qilin legs on him, the

ghost servants didn't bother him any longer, and directly walk passed him and continued to search every single household.

It seems like the trouble is rather huge. I didn't think that Diting losing his legs would cause so much trouble.

At King Ksitigarbha's Palace.

Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva squinted his eyes as he scolded Diting. If it wasn't for Diting getting drunk, then Diting wouldn't have lost his qilin legs. Meanwhile, the Ten Yama Kings also stood within the hall and gulped as they did not dare to interrupt.

“Diting, do you know your wrongs?”

“Diting knows his wrongs.”

Diting floated in midair looking downwards with a troubled expression, while lacking any of his legs.

He clearly paid attention to the amount when he was drinking last night, but for some reason, he still ended up getting drunk and falling asleep.

“Heh, it would be fine if we can find your qilin legs. If not, then reduce your own cultivation by a thousand years in order to regrow them! This is how you lost your legs back then. Why didn't you learn from it!” King Ksitigarbha sighed helplessly.

At that moment, Ye Zichen and Liu Qing also walked in.

“What happened? I heard Diting lost his legs?”

“Kid, did you steal my legs last night?” Diting turned around and looked at Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen instantly put on a confused expression, “... Are you kidding? I fell dead asleep after you left. How can I steal your legs? How did you lose your legs? Did someone saw them off?”

“Haha, I knew it wouldn’t be you,” Diting suddenly chuckled. “Lemme tell you. My legs will fall off by themselves if I drink too much. I might have gotten too drunk, and so my legs automatically fell off, then got picked up by someone.”

“... Are you an assembled holy beast? You can actually have pieces fall off!” Ye Zichen put on a speechless expression.

At that moment, King Ksitigarbha finally spoke up, “What did you come here for? Although you are an important guest of our Underworld, there are some places that you cannot casually enter.”

...

This King Ksitigarbha really has a bad temper.

Ye Zichen licked his lips, then indicated towards King Chujiang and the other Yama Kings, “I came to find them.”

“What is master coming to find us for?” King Chujiang quickly bowed. Actually, everyone in the hall understood very well that Ye Zichen was the number one suspect of being the leg thief.

However, they had all carefully searched him after he entered the hall. Yet, they were unable to find the qilin legs on him.

They couldn’t probe deeper either because they couldn’t beat the mistress beside him.

Neither Diting nor King Ksitigarbha spoke up, so they, mere staff members, naturally did not dare to say anything.

“I still have plenty of stuff to deal with in the Modern World. I’ve pretty much seen all my old friends here in the Underworld, so I was thinking about asking you to open the gate so I could return.”

“About this...” King Chujiang subconsciously looked towards Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva. Then, he smiled with a nod after seeing Ksitigarbha’s gaze of confirmation. “No problem!”

Zoom.

A huge spatial rift appeared in the hall.

King Chujiang also spoke up, “It might be the middle of the day in the Modern Realm right now, so the place I connected the gate to is a rather rural location.”

“Mhmm,” Ye Zichen nodded with a smile. “Come over and play when you have time!”

When Ye Zichen and Liu Qing disappeared through the rift, King Ksitigarbha also shook his head with a sigh, “Tell them all to return. They won’t be able to find the qilin legs. Diting... Go and grow them out once again!”

“Bodhisattva, you mean...”

“I didn’t say that the qilin legs are on that young man. It’s just that there are way too many places in the Underworld. Finding them is like finding a needle in the middle of an ocean without a precise target or location. So that’s that!”

When Ksitigarbha departed from the throne room indifferently, King Chujiang and co. looked at each other, before taking out their phones and sent a message in the group chats. “Come back!”

Ssssssss.

A huge spatial crack suddenly appeared in a rural grassland, which Ye Zichen and Liu Qing walked out of.

“We finally came back, but where is this place?”

King Chujiang definitely would not chuck him too far away. However, even Ye Zichen, someone who grew up in Bingcheng, did not know where they were either.

Woosh.

At that moment, the body of Liu Qing, who had only just walked out of the spatial rift, lit up with a rainbow-colored light. That light shot into the sky, while she also rose up as if she had lost her consciousness.

“Liu Qing,” Ye Zichen raised his hand to grab her, but that light completely repelled him...

“Liu Qing!”

When Ye Zichen watch Liu Qing rise to ten-odd meters above the ground, Ye Zichen’s wings popped out of his back, as he followed along beside her while shouting her name.

What’s going on?

Was she ascending?

Chapter 396 – Six Realms Patroller

Could it be that she really has to ascend to the Three Realms after becoming a Sky Immortal?

Ye Zichen's initial look of fear as he knitted his eyebrows slowly softened as he looked in surprise while Liu Qing continuously flew up towards the sky in the rainbow-colored pillar of light...

“What's going on!” Liu Qing called out, while she opened her eyes...

Bang.

The pillar of light instantly shattered and she stopped in the air. When Ye Zichen saw that, he was shouted for a brief moment, before he spoke up, “Why did you come out? Weren't you going to ascend!?”

“That's not it,” Liu Qing frowned angrily, then looked up into the sky. “Who exactly are you. Hurry up and come out. You actually dare to create a dream for me, I think you are sick of living. Come out quickly to apologize to this lady, otherwise, I'm going to hit you!”

Someone was controlling it?

Ye Zichen also looked around vigilantly. At that very moment, a man in a policeman-like uniform appeared in the sky. He had a

monocle on his right eye, while he smiled, “Not bad, you truly are a good seedling.”

Zoom.

That man appeared in front of Liu Qing and Ye Zichen in the blink of an eye. He squinted his eyes and smiled towards them, “Feel honored that I am notifying you that you can enter my dimension with your talent. Now... Come with me!”

“There’s something wrong with you!” Liu Qing snorted angrily like an enraged lion cub. “What do you mean by enter your dimension? Hurry up and f*ck off. Laoniang’s really annoyed by you!”

“Hehe... Are you rejecting me?” the man’s smile suddenly turned cold as he snorted. “Allow me to introduce myself. I am Youmuu, a Six Realms Patroller. I have been searching for a talented seed. You... have achieved the standards. Now, I am informing you to come with me!”

“Six Realms Patroller?” Ye Zichen frowned. What the hell is that? I’ve never heard of it before.

Youmuu looked towards Ye Zichen. When he saw the wings behind Ye Zichen’s back...

“Demon!” Youmuu’s pitch dark irides turned cold, while he smiled fiercely. “Kill the demons and defend the righteous. Die!”

Clap.

When the man reached his hand towards Ye Zichen's chest, Liu Qing suddenly grabbed him with her hand.

"I will get angry if you want to bully Ye Zichen."

"You want to stop me? Hehe... But you are still a bit too naïve," Youmuu squinted her eyes with a smile, causing Liu Qing's hands to uncontrollably let go of his arm, while she became bound and unable to move.

"Demon, you actually dared to appear within my surveillance area. You are definitely unlucky," Youmuu grabbed Ye Zichen's head, and just as he was about to pierce Ye zichen's head...

"So it's like that. I understand," with that, he lifted Ye Zichen up by the neck, and squeezed Ye Zichen's throat tightly while laughing coldly towards Liu Qing. "Stop struggling. A complete stage Sky Immortal might be very strong in the Six Realms, but it is nothing before me. I don't want to destroy someone of your talent. Now, let me give you a choice. Either come with me... Or, you watch him die, and I forcefully take you with me!"

"Don't!" Liu Qing shook her head with force.

After getting the reply, Youmuu smiled in satisfaction, then let go of Ye Zichen, "Brat, your woman saved your life!"

He patted Ye Zichen's shoulder, then returned in front of Liu Qing and unbound her.

"Can you give me some time?" A depressed smile flashed across Liu Qing's face.

Youmuu nodded, "Sure."

Liu Qing forced herself to smile, then walked in front of Ye Zichen heavily.

At that moment, she no longer had the naughtiness and cheerfulness she had in the past. Her eyes were filled with her reluctance to part with Ye Zichen as she slid her fingers across his cheek.

"I thought that I could stay by your side forever after getting reborn. I thought after getting such a strong power, I would be able to share your burden, so you don't need to always be so troubled. I thought I could always stand by you, then when you're tired, I would tell you to... Lean on me. Hehe... Everything is so close, yet so far!" Liu Qing's lips trembled.

Ye Zichen clenched his fist tightly when he saw her tears, "Die!"

Ye Zichen focused all of the celestial spiritual energy in his fist and punched towards Youmuu's back.

“A surprise attack?” Youmuu smiled coldly, then pointed with his finger...

Bang.

Ye Zichen immediately dropped towards the ground like a ragdoll.

Liu Qing frantically caught him and shook her head, “What are you doing!?”

“I won’t let you go. Believe me...” His breathing instantly became heavier, while his skin began to turn dark bronze.

Youmuu, who was standing in the sky, frowned, “I don’t like the aura of demons.”

Dong.

He pointed his finger at Ye Zichen’s shoulder, causing a bloody hole to appear.

“I won’t let you go!”

Ye Zichen disregarded his injuries, then reached into the sky using his right hand with bloodshot eyes...

“Yiyuan!”

An azure colored pearl instantly arrived. Ye Zichen also smiled coldly.

“Water blade...”

Whoosh.

All of the humidity begun to furiously gather towards Ye Zichen, instantly forcing several hundred blades made out of water around his body.

“Go!”

Ye Zichen sent the water blades towards Youmuu, while he flew closely behind them.

“Pitiful.”

A mirror appeared in front of Youmuu, which reflected all of the water blades when they reached the space in front of him.

“Heh.”

Ye Zichen instantly formed several hundred water blades around him in order to deflect the reflected ones, but Youmuu had already

appeared in front of him.

“Too weak.”

Dong.

He stomped Ye Zichen’s on his chest, and onto the ground.

“Brat, the way you’re acting is not called brave. It can only be called ignorant.”

He then took his foot off Ye Zichen’s body with a cold smile, then walked in front of Liu Qing, who was sobbing, and grabbed her shoulder.

“Alright, I gave you guys enough time, but he didn’t cherish it. Sorry!”

“Liu Qing!”

“Ye Zichen!”

Liu Qing struggled out of Youmuu’s grasp and ran towards Ye Zichen. The two of them hugged each other tightly, but Youmuu appeared once again.

“I have no time for you two to act all gooey with each other.

Come with me!”

He forced the two apart, but they still continued to hold each other tightly...

Until, they gradually... let go!

“Ye Zichen!” Liu Qing, who slowly flew into the sky, continuously shouted out Ye Zichen’s name while her tear drops fell onto the ground like jewels. “Ye Zichen, I like you.... I really like you so much!”

“Liu Qing!”

Ye Zichen wanted to use his wings to chase after her, but they had already been broken during the battle just moments earlier...

“Ye Zichen, I’ll wait for you to go there to find me. You have to come... You have to! I will always wait for you!”

Chapter 397 – Attributeless

The sky was still pale blue.

However, the rainbow-colored light had disappeared, and the cute girl was also gone.

A breeze swept across Ye Zichen's face like a pair of warm hands, but... all Ye Zichen could do was sit limply on the ground as he looked up into the sky.

...

“Laddie, did you meet with robbers?”

As Ye Zichen sat within a civilian's cart, he looked at the sky without moving as if he lost his soul regardless of what the old man driving the cart said.

“Ai... So much harm was done!” the old man driving the cart shook his head with a sigh, and finally stopped speaking.

...

When Ye Zichen crashed back into the mansion both Mother Ye and Xiao Yumei ran over worriedly when they saw him like that.

“Zichen!”

“Hehe... I’m fine. Just keep doing what you guys were doing. I’m a bit tired!”

He avoided everyone’s touch, and returned to the bedroom to lock himself inside. Then, he squatted down in the corner as he continuously replayed what had happened.

“Six Realms Patroller...”

Creak.

He clenched his fist tightly. He thought about his helplessness, and the tears in Liu Qing’s eyes as she left...

“Power... In this world, the one with power is the boss. I... am still too weak!” Ye Zichen said softly.

He took off his bloodstained clothes indifferently. It really is funny. The attack I put everything into didn’t even do as much as touch Youmuu, and instead, I ended up like this.

He collapsed onto the bed and habitually looked towards his left hand side....

Previously, Liu Qing would lay here and kick her legs as she argued with me. She would snatch my phone... to read doujinshi secretly at night.

But she's gone now.

Whoosh.

As Ye Zichen was lost in reminiscence, the scene in front of him suddenly changed. When he came back to his senses, he noticed the huge Dragon God coiling on the ground and staring at him with his ancient eyes.

“Kid, your spiritual energy fluctuation is very intense... If this continues, then you might die,” the Dragon God squinted his eyes and smiled.

Ye Zichen merely smiled sadly in response and did not mind.

“Zeze... Did you reach some sort of trouble?”

“How strong do you think one has to be in order to protect those one wants to protect?” Ye Zichen sat down and asked.

The Dragon God suddenly smiled wryly, “There isn't a “how strong”. You can only make yourself stronger.... And stronger. If you want to protect, then you have to continuously walk forward, and look forward...”

“Is that so!”

Ye Zichen subconsciously looked down at his hands. False Earth Immortal...

If I was being compared to normal people, then I'm already outrageously strong, and even comparable to something like a mutant. But I am still merely a joke in front of the demons.

And that Six Realms Patroller...

He... is an Immortal King, right?

“Kid, you have to see the other side of things. A strong person has to the heart of one. You can feel pain, but you cannot show it. After lions get injured after a fight, they would lick their wounds in secret. However, a lion will still act like a mighty king in front of other beasts. Do you understand?” the Dragon God squinted his eyes.

Ye Zichen nodded, then smiled. “Mhmm. Understood! I was too weak just now... But I am a mere mortal. I have just been strengthening myself by luck. Senior... Do you want to give me some pointers?”

“Hehe, kid, I pulled you in out of goodwill in order to comfort you a bit, and you actually got ideas about me?” the Dragon God shook his head with a wry smile. However, he was still rather happy to see the little fellow regain his vigor.

“Hehe, I can't help it. I only have you as a senior around me. Say,

you steal my spiritual energy every day, but I haven't said anything about it.... How about giving me some secret scriptures and treat it as rent?" Ye Zichen chuckled, while he cursed himself for being an idiot.

I actually didn't make use of such a huge treasure trove that I have on me. If I came to find the Dragon God earlier, then I might not be as pitifully weak as I am now.

"You brat," the Dragon God shook his head, then turned into a white-haired old man. "Come over here and let me check out your attributes."

"Heh?" Ye Zichen was a bit confused.

The Dragon God rolled his eyes, "I'm telling you, people would have one of the five attributes from the moment they are born. Choosing suitable techniques would increase the affinity between oneself and the attributes, and increase the strength of those techniques... But ever since the Great War of Gods and Demons, it seems like the method of checking one's attribute has been lost. Ai, they actually randomly use techniques and arts! However, if someone managed to luck out and choose the right one, then he will become very strong."

"Oh oh oh!" Ye Zichen didn't understand a single word the Dragon God said, but it sounded rather amazing to him...

It should be quite strong.

The Dragon God tapped the middle of Ye Zichen's eyebrows tightly, causing a glow of warm energy to flow through his meridian. Now long later, the Dragon God removed his hand.

“How is it?”

When he saw how strange the Dragon God's gaze was, Ye Zichen began to feel a bit of worry, “What happened? Tell me.”

“Kid, how exactly did you cultivate until you became a False Earth Immortal?” the Dragon God's eyes were filled with incomprehensible shock. “You were born without an attribute. Logically speaking, you would be unable to absorb the spiritual energy in the world. How did you cultivate and become a False Earth Immortal... What's more, I can feel that you actually cultivated rather quickly.”

“...”

Ye Zichen was stunned. He blinked his eyes, “Then you're saying I should be useless?”

The Dragon God nodded, “You can take it like that. Natural spiritual energy is based on attributes. You would absorb the spiritual energy with an attribute that corresponds to yours. You lack any attributes, so you can't cultivate, but yet, you cultivate at such a fast pace...”

“Then perhaps I am of all five attributes? Isn't that what all the

novels say? Having all five attributes is undetectable, and what they will detect is the lack of any attribute. A piece of trash would cultivate extremely quickly and face-smack everyone. In the end, he will find out that he has all five attributes, and learn all the techniques without anyone teaching him, causing an instant climax,” Ye Zichen smiled. He was merely joking, since he did not think that the Dragon God would have detected it incorrectly.

As for why I can cultivate so fast...

Immortal Heart of Pure Yang!

Yet, contrary to his expectations, the Dragon God actually nodded, as if he agreed with Ye Zichen’s explanation. “That is very possible. I have never seen anyone with all five attributes, then again, I have never seen anyone without any attributes... Although I don’t really get what is the ‘novel’ thing you are talking about, but what you said is very possible!”

Uhm...

Ye Zichen was instantly stunned.

This old Dragon God is too unreliable. I just said it randomly, and he’s actually agreeing with me!

“I have no secret scriptures suitable for someone without any attributes to cultivate, but the lack of any of the five attributes might mean that you can cultivate the secret scripture of all

attributes. Since it's like this... I'll give you one for each of metal, wood, water, fire and earth. Try and cultivate using them!"

Whoosh.

Five secret scriptures instantly appeared in front of Ye Zichen's eyes, causing Ye Zichen's gaze to heat up intensely.

After getting into this for so long, I finally secret scriptures that I can use to cultivate.

"Just cultivate here. I will adjust time flow for you. Begin... You can just directly ask me if you have any questions!"

Chapter 398 – Genius

“Kid, I can be sure right now that you truly lack any attributes. You’re not the person with all five attributes like you said!” the old Dragon God squinted his eyes. At that moment, Ye Zichen was already sitting on the floor dejectedly.

He tried all five of the elements...

But he made no progress at all.

According to what the old Dragon God said, even a pig might have been able to get a grasp of things. What’s more, those were merely secret scriptures of the lowest level, and the Dragon God had guided Ye Zichen personally.

“Fine, then let it be. What do you think I should do now!” Ye Zichen shrugged.

The Old Dragon God frowned, “In this sort of situation, it seems like you can only learn from some support secret scriptures, and some body tempering ones. However, the body tempering secret scriptures of the dragon race cannot be handed over to outsiders recklessly.”

“Look at what you’re saying! How can you treat me as an outsider!?” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes. “No matter what, you are my master. Even a single day as a master is like being a father for life. That means that you’re my godfather right now. Since you’re my godfather, then I am related to the dragon race. Then... I’m part of

the dragon race!”

“...” the Old Dragon was also completely speechless by Ye Zichen’s argument. “Since you put it that way, then you’re saying that I have to give you the dragon race’s body tempering secret scripture?”

“Hey... Look at you? How do you want to treat your godchild...?”

“Never mind, this old dragon does like the look of you, so it’s fine to let you try! But if you fail, then don’t blame this old dragon for erasing it from your memories!”

“Sure! No problem!”

Whoosh.

A golden secret scripture, which was obviously a top-tier one, flew in front of Ye Zichen. Ye Zichen immediately reached up to grab it, but the old Dragon God stopped him.

“Don’t be too proud and arrogant. You cannot endure reading too far ahead right now. Start training from the most basic Dragon Spirit. Let’s see how you do.”

“Alright,” Ye Zichen opened the secret scripture with a chuckle. The moment he flipped it open, he felt like the characters were like living dragons, and were glaring at him.

This secret scripture is truly different...

Ye Zichen muttered silently to himself, then started to continue reading, only to find that he was unable to endure it after the second character.

“Focus your mind, clear your thoughts... If you can’t continue, then don’t. Maintain the calmness in your heart!”

“Okay!”

Ye Zichen nodded heavily, then discarded all of the thoughts in his mind.

When he finally did so, he felt as if he had merged into one with the book. All that was left in his world was the characters in the manual. He felt as if he was even starting to discard his own body.

Gradually, he began to read faster and faster, and the initial situation of being unable to endure reading further did not happen.

...

In the blink of an eye, he had already finished reading half of the information regarding the Dragon Spirit.

Meanwhile, the old Dragon God was completely dumbfounded. Even when the dragons had flourished the most, the shocking geniuses within their tribe did not reach the level that Ye Zichen was at.

When a faint mirage of a dragon slowly appeared around Ye Zichen's body and entered his skin, the old Dragon God completely spaced out...

Reading, comprehending and absorbing at the same time. How was this possible!?

Genius!

He's an absolute genius!

At that moment, the old Dragon God completely surpassed all of the shock in his heart. He wanted to see just how far Ye Zichen could go, and whether Ye Zichen could be able to completely finish reading the information about the Dragon Spirit, and absorb it at the same time.

Ugh.

Ye Zichen suddenly spat out a mouthful of golden blood.

The Dragon God quickly patted his back and closed the secret scripture. "What happened? You can't read further?"

“I really can’t. The information within the Dragon Soul gives me too much pressure. I feel like I can look at it a bit more after I reach the Earth Immortal level, but definitely not now,” Ye Zichen waved his hands weakly.

However, the old Dragon God instantly opened his eyes wide...
“You said you can see the Dragon Soul?”

“Sure. I’ll be honest, your secret scripture is truly a good thing. I feel like I’m much more energetic and my body is filled with power!” Ye Zichen waved his fist, causing the sound of his fist shooting through the air.

The old Dragon God looked at him in shock, then rest his gaze upon the golden blood. Wait, only those that reach the level one of Dragon Soul will change their blood...

He has golden blood from the start. Are you messing with the entire dragon race?

If we had such an amazing person in the dragon race back then, then we wouldn’t have been pretty much eradicated. Seriously... It is clearly a secret manual for the dragon race, yet a human is so successful when tempering using it.

“Old Dragon God!”

“Hmm?” the Dragon God looked back, then patted Ye Zichen’s

shoulder. “Alright. This is it for your training today. I will drag you back in here tomorrow night and get you to read up on the Dragon Spirit once again. You might have a new understanding of it then.”

“No problem!”

When Ye Zichen left the Dragon God’s space, it was nearly night. The moment he opened his eyes, he saw Xiao Yumei lying resting beside his bed.

He gently flipped the blanket over, but Xiao Yumei was still awoken.

“Zichen, you woke up!”

Xiao Yumei robbed her red eyes, which were filled with joy.

“Sorry, I made you worry!”

There was no doubt that Xiao Yumei was definitely worried about the situation he was in earlier the morning. That was undoubtedly why she asked Mother Ye for the key to his bedroom in order to take care of him.

The Dragon God is right. Even if I get injured, I have to lick my wounds in secret, and not always cause the people around me to worry.

It seems like lions weren't the king of beasts for nothing. They were proud all the time, and still held their heads up high even after returning.

That's what a true man should be like!

"Why are you apologizing to me? You should be hungry after sleeping for so long. How about I make you something to eat? Mom just went to sleep, so I think that we shouldn't disturb her!"

"I'm not..." Just as Ye Zichen wanted to say that he wasn't hungry, his disappointing tummy grumbled.

Xiao Yumei smiled, then pecked his lips, "Wait for me, I'll immediately go and make something nice for you."

Then, she left the bedroom. Not long after Xiao Yumei left, the door to Ye Zichen's bedroom suddenly opened. Lil' White came in through the gap and jumped onto Ye Zichen's bed.

"Boss!"

"Hey, little fellow, are you worried about me?" Ye Zichen smiled.

Lil' White nodded, then spoke up with a solemn expression, "Boss, I do want you to get a good rest. But I feel like you would get angry if I don't tell you!"

“What is it? Say it...”

“There’s demonic energy nearby.”

Hearing that, Ye Zichen squinted his eyes. However, before he spoke up, his phone suddenly rang.

The caller ID was Xia Keke. When he put his picked up the call, he heard the screams of several girls...

“Go away... You ugly thing. F*ck off!”

Chapter 399 – Otherworld

“Master, Ye Zichen is already going towards the incident location.” Song An’s sinister chuckle sounded out within the room.

The man on the sofa nodded, “Just treat it as a present for him. How strong are the ones inside?”

“They are all normal people who have been demonified. Their strength is around the spiritual body level, so they won’t pose Ye Zichen any threat at all,” Guo Jing said as she wore a light gown.

Song An couldn’t help but gulp when he saw her beautiful figure hidden beneath the piece of clothing.

“Hehe, you like?” the man on the sofa smiled.

Song An instantly shook his head, “No, no!”

“Don’t be nervous. Work for me properly. As for her... I’ll give her to you,” the man on the sofa directly said so in front of Guo Jing.

Guo Jing was momentarily stunned, but she did not dare to voice any objection.

Buzz...

At that moment, the phone she placed on the tea table vibrated. When she saw the message on it, she turned around to the man on the sofa.

“That guy is calling me, he might want to ask me out on a date.”

“Then go. Your mission is just to accompany him. Slowly infiltrate amongst them, then give Ye Zichen a huge present.”

“Okay,” Guo Jing left the living room with a nod, while Song An’s gaze remained fixated on her alluring body.

“Alright, stop looking. I told you that I will give her to you. But, she’s still my plaything right now. Hurry up and see where Ye Zichen is now?”

Song An instantly shrunk his neck and shifted his gaze, “He already arrived.”

...

“Lil’ White, it’s here, right?”

Ye Zichen parked his Panamera on the side of the street. However, he did not notice any abnormality when he got out, nor did he see Xia Keke and co...

“In here!”

As Lil' White called out, Ye Zichen began to walk into the alleyway on the side of the street, but Lil' White held him back by the edge of his trousers.

“What now?” Ye Zichen asked in confusion. He could feel just how dangerous it was for Xia Keke and co. from the call just now, so he had to hurry!

“Not in here like here, but here like there...”

Lil' White suddenly said something random.

“What kind of crap are you saying?”

Lil' White spun on the spot anxiously, since he wasn't sure how to explain it.

Dingdong.

At that moment, Ye Zichen's phone rang. He took it out and saw a system notification.

You received Otherworld Pass x1. The possessor of this pass gains the right to enter the Otherworld.

Ye Zichen clicked open his WeChat Treasure chest in confusion. The moment he withdrew the pass, he saw it lit up with a blinding

light. When his sight finally recovered, he noticed that he had already in another world.

“It’s this place!” Lil’ White jumped up.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen nodded, while he turned even more vigilant.

He looked around. It’s still the street from before.

However, the street was now in shambles, while dense demonic swirled around the space above the streets.

Boom.

Suddenly, Ye Zichen heard a loud noise.

“That way!”

He quickly ran towards the source of the sound, but when he got there...

“What exactly is this!”

Slimes filled the street, while two nearly ten-meter tall humanoids stood behind them.

“Ahh...”

Every single time they breathed, the demonic energy in the surroundings became denser.

“Roar!”

A huge dragon roar sounded out from the corner of the streets, then not long later, a the mirage of a golden dragon passed through the monsters.

When the golden dragon mirage disappeared, the Slimes were also reduced to demonic energy before vanishing.

However...

There were just too many Slimes. Even though the mirage was very powerful, it was unable to stop their advancement.

“Keke!” Ye Zichen’s pupils contracted. The ones in the corner of the street was Xia Keke and Su Yan.

“Break!” Ye Zichen yelled, while his swung his fist towards the monsters with a might that could break through winds.

A ball of flame also appeared in Lil’ White’s mouth...

Zzzzzst.

A red wave instead appeared in front of him, incinerating a large area filled with Slimes.

“Lil’ White, good job,” Ye Zichen smiled. It seems like Lil’ White evolved again.

“Yiyuan!”

Soul Pearl Yiyuan, which had remained in him begun to deploy a water barrier without Ye Zichen’s orders and covered Xia Keke and Su Yan.

“Water blade....”

Several hundred blades made out of water suddenly appeared in the sky. They shimmered with a fear-inducing light, completely scattering all of the Slimes on the streets.

“Ye Zichen...” Obvious terror filled Xia Keke’s face. When Ye Zichen walked next to them, she immediately leaped on him.

Su Yan had wanted to as well, but when she saw Xia Keke beside Ye Zichen, she merely smiled wryly, then bit her lips and shuddered on the spot.

“Just what happened? How did you guys end up here?”

Ye Zichen had no time to care about anything else, as he fixed his gaze on the area outside the water barrier, he saw that slimes had filled the streets once again, while the two ten-meter tall figures also slowly advanced towards them.

“I don’t know!” Xia Keke sobbed. She trembled, then clenched her teeth. “We... just came back together after a meal, but when we got here, everything turned like this...”

Ye Zichen let out a sigh, then patted their shoulders.

“Boss.”

Lil’ White, who was behind him, suddenly shouted. Ye Zichen turned back and saw that the slimes had already bitten a whole in the water barrier.

“Don’t let them touch you, those slimes are corrosive!” Su Yan suddenly spoke up. Only then did Ye Zichen notice a red mark on her arm.

“Are you alright!?” Ye Zichen quickly grabbed her arm.

Su Yan shook her head and smiled, “I’m fine. Keke already treated it for me. It shouldn’t leave a scar!”

Ye Zichen nodded softly, then turned around and kicked the

slime, which had already gotten into the barrier, out. “Keke, protect Su Yan... Seriously, these monsters are endless.”

Whoosh.

A ray of golden light suddenly shimmered around Ye Zichen’s body, then a faint mirage of an ancient dragon appeared behind him...

“Dragon?” Xia Keke raised her eyebrows in surprise.

“All of you, die!” Ye Zichen’s fist was covered with a gold light.

However, at that very moment, the slimes on the street suddenly disappeared, while the two monsters nearly ten-meters tall also collapsed.

Ta...

Ta...

Ta...

A purple-haired and black-skinned boy suddenly appeared on the end of the streets. He tilted his head and raised his eyebrows at the places where the monsters disappeared from.

“Too weak. I can’t get excited at all!”

Chapter 400 – Mo Di

The sudden appearance of the man catch Ye Zichen's appearance. Judging from his appearance...

A demon.

“Human?”

The purple-haired man tilted his head and walked over. When he got closer, Ye Zichen noticed that the man was wearing a gray top and black pants, while he had a stud earring on his ear.

The buttons on the front of his shirt were unbuttoned, displaying a lotus-like tattoo.

However, what caught Ye Zichen's attention was that the tattoo seemed to be the way the man was absorbing demonic energy, because all of the surrounding demonic energy seemed to go into it.

“Demon?” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes.

The demon scratched his head, then shrugged with a smile, “It seems like you are the strongest out of you guys. Those fellows just now had no way to play with me. How about you play with me for a while?”

“Boss, this person is one of the two stronger ones that I detected,” Lil’ White jumped onto Ye Zichen’s shoulder and said.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows upwards.

Doesn’t that mean that this seventeen or eighteen years old looking kid actually has the strength of a Sky Immortal?

“Hey, I’m talking to you. Are you going to play with me or not? I’ll let you choose... Either you all die here, or you play a bit with me. How are you going to choose?”

“There’s no helping it. I have no other choice in this situation!”

Ye Zichen placed Lil’ White onto the ground, then walked out of the water barrier with a smile.

“Oh? You finished choosing? I thought I needed to give you a bit more time to consider,” the purple-haired young man smiled, then crooked his fingers in front of him. “Come over here.”

“Which family of the demon race are you from?” Ye Zichen took several steps forward until he was ten meters in front of the young man. “You should let me know your name. After I kill you later, I might send you a few wreaths.”

“Oh?” the purple-haired young man smiled. “Kill me? Interesting. You can call me [Mo Di](#). Mo as in demons, and Di as in Emperor!”

“Okay, then when you die, I will burn you some money, Mo Di.”

Dong.

The ground suddenly cracked, while a golden energy was continuously released from Ye Zichen’s body.

That mode... looked a bit like he was going Super Saiyan.

Xia Keke, who stood within the water barrier, was completely shocked. The familiar aura was the aura of the dragon race. Why does he know how to use it?

Su Yan’s eyes also continuously twitched. Everything that happened in front of her could no longer be explained using science.

“Haha... You don’t seem too shabby!”

Mo Di’s purple eyes shimmered with lights of excitement. At that moment, he was completely defenseless, and merely watched intently to see just how strong Ye Zichen could get.

At that moment, Ye Zichen’s pupils suddenly contracted.

He could naturally tell that this Mo Di did not defend at all. Although a surprise attack was not the most chivalrous thing to do,

he had no other choice.

Bang.

He smashed his fist right on the area of Mo Di's chest that the blood lotus was on. All of a sudden, Mo Di opened his eyes wide, then shot backwards explosively after coughing up a mouthful of acid before he hit the wall of the street.

Dong.

The smithereens of the wall instantly buried him. Ye Zichen did not stop there, he kicked off the ground...

“Seriously... C'mon.

Just as Ye Zichen was about to reach the pile of debris, Mo Di, who was buried underneath them, suddenly popped out, while he tilted his head and smiled excitedly. “I thought you would be really strong, but you're just so weak?”

Not good!

Ye Zichen's pupils contracted. Just as he was about to dodge, ten huge boulders already surrounded him.

Bang. Bang. Bang.

The boulders more than fifty kilograms smashed towards him, causing him to be completely buried in an instant...

“Hey, wake up! Do you think that I’m playing house with you?”

Mo Di walked over and grabbed the hair of Ye Zichen, who was underneath all the boulders, and dragged him out before casually flinging him to the side.

Ugh.

Ye Zichen coughed up a mouthful of golden blood, then licked his lips, before he wiped the blood from the corner of his mouth.

“Don’t get too full of yourself, I was merely kidding with you just now.”

Flop.

A pair of humongous black wings spread out behind Ye Zichen. Raging wind was created as they flapped, blowing up all the boulders on the ground, before reducing them to mere debris underneath the pressure of the airflow.

“Interesting, too interesting,” Mo Di clapped excitedly.

Ye Zichen’s irises also began to turn purple... “Interesting? Then I’ll show you something even more interesting.”

Whoosh.

An afterimage flashed by. After spreading out his wings, it could be said that Ye Zichen's speed increased by nearly a hundred times.

Bang, bang, bang.

Ye Zichen continuously punched and kicked Mo Di, causing him to actually gain the upper hand.

"You only have speed, but you lack power."

However, Mo Di, who was enduring Ye Zichen's attacks, suddenly reached out his hand to grab Ye Zichen by his collar and pressed him down onto the ground.

"I remember. You... are the Fallen they were talking about, right? No, I should actually say, son of a saint and a demon."

"Ye Zichen!"

Xia Keke and co. ran out of the water barrier. Mo Di merely raised his hand up and pushed towards them, causing them to be instantly bound to the spot and unable to move.

"I nearly forgot. I came here in order to find you! I heard that the child of a saint and a demon is very strong, and all of those old

fellows in the demon race are running over like fools. Mhmm, that's right, I used the phrase right. They are running over like fools. But, you're nothing surprising!"

Bang.

Mo Di kicked Ye Zichen to nearly a hundred meters away, then slowly flew into the air.

"I won't kill you. Those old demons said that you will become very strong in the future, so you definitely will become very strong. I will give you the time to grow. I hope that you can let me enjoy the joy of battle in the future. Bye bye!"

Crack.

The moment the chains binding Xia Keke, Su Yan and Lil' White shattered, all of them immediately ran out towards Ye Zichen.

Golden blood flowed uncontrollably from Ye Zichen's mouth. He stood up from the ground under Xia Keke's support, and stared at the spot Mo Di left from.

"Six Realms Patroller, Mo Di..."

Creak.

Ye Zichen clenched his fist with all his might, then, two more

people appeared in the space.

“Dad, where is this shitty place. I want to play games...”

“Old Wei?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

When Wei Chen saw Ye Zichen, he immediately hurried over, “Are the injuries severe?”

“Hehe, it’s alright!” Ye Zichen smiled, then coughed up another mouthful of golden blood.

“Zezeze, so pitiful. You actually got beaten up to this degree,” Wei Teng twitched his mouth with a hint of disdain.

Wei Chen immediately hit his head, “Nobody thinks you’re dumb if you don’t speak!”

“You hit me again,” Wei Teng pouted, then went to the side to doodle.

At the same time, Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, “How did you guys get in here?”

“Hai,” Wei Chen shook his head. “This isn’t the place to speak, let’s go back and talk...”

Mo Di is written 魔帝, literally meaning Demon Emperor.

Table of Contents

[Red Packet Server](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 301 – The Old Butler and Body Double](#)

[Chapter 302 – Huo Da is Caught](#)

[Chapter 303 – Spiritual Consciousness is Naked!](#)

[Chapter 304 – Dragon God](#)

[Chapter 305 – Su Yan’s Monologue](#)

[Chapter 306 – Su Yiyun’s True Love](#)

[Chapter 307 – Xuan-Yuan Sword’s Sheath](#)

[Chapter 308 – Great Dao of Heaven’s Birth](#)

[Chapter 309 – Astronomical Spending](#)

[Chapter 310 – Strange Fatty](#)

[Chapter 311 – The Cute Criminals](#)

[Chapter 312 – The Undefended Dog Food](#)

[Chapter 313 – Mysterious Fatty](#)

[Chapter 314 – Troubled Brothers](#)

[Chapter 315 – Temper](#)

[Chapter 316 – A Woman Shameless to the Core](#)

[Chapter 317 – Lord Fatty’s Arrival](#)

[Chapter 318 – You Should Help Them Lose Some Weight](#)

[Chapter 319 – “Breaking Off An Engagement” Trend](#)

[Chapter 320 – Ye Zichen’s First Advertisement Failure](#)

[Chapter 321 – Chang’e Is Descending To The Mortal Realm](#)

[Chapter 322 – Taibai Jinxing Who Gets Angry At The Mention Of Kids](#)

[Chapter 323 – Erlang Shen is Also Descending](#)

[Chapter 324 – Kick Me](#)

[Chapter 325 – Lu Lu, Who Has Come To The Capital](#)

[Chapter 326 – An Oath by One’s Heart Demon](#)

[Chapter 327 – Living to Eat](#)

[Chapter 328 – Linhe Garden](#)

[Chapter 329 – Who Won?](#)

[Chapter 330 – My Dear Son](#)

[Chapter 331 – Fight](#)

[Chapter 332 – Fallen](#)

[Chapter 333 – Nobody Was Wrong](#)
[Chapter 334 – Son Of A Saint And A Demon](#)
[Chapter 335 – To The Gu Household](#)
[Chapter 336 – Is False Earth Immortal Level Amazing?](#)
[Chapter 337 – Wind Catching Ear](#)
[Chapter 338 – That Bastard Wind Catching Ear](#)
[Chapter 339 – Gu Li](#)
[Chapter 340 – Falling Out](#)
[Chapter 341 – Advice](#)
[Chapter 342 – The Night Of The Junior Family Head Election \(1\)](#)
[Chapter 343 – The Night Of The Junior Family Head Election \(2\)](#)
[Chapter 344 – Election](#)
[Chapter 345 – I Object](#)
[Chapter 346 – The Years Of Effort Which Has Gone To Waste](#)
[Chapter 347 – Exorcism](#)
[Chapter 348 – Great Battle \(1\)](#)
[Chapter 349 – Great Battle \(2\)](#)
[Chapter 350 – Descend](#)
[Chapter 351 – Plantain Fan](#)
[Chapter 352 – War God Yang Jian](#)
[Chapter 353 – You’ve Got The Wrong Person](#)
[Chapter 354 – Twelve Demon Sovereigns](#)
[Chapter 355 – The Heavenly Court’s Method Of Charging Their Phone](#)
[Chapter 356 – A Chance Meeting With Qu Qitong](#)
[Chapter 357 – Press Conference](#)
[Chapter 358 – Let’s Set A Small Target For Ourselves](#)
[Chapter 359 – Chain Reaction](#)
[Chapter 360 – Shifting the Blame](#)
[Chapter 361 – Trespasser, Die!](#)
[Chapter 362 – Escape](#)
[Chapter 363-The Reason Why Divinity Couldn’t Descend](#)
[Chapter 364 – I Will Protect This Land](#)
[Chapter 365 – Song An](#)
[Chapter 366 – This Is What You Meant By Authority?](#)
[Chapter 367 – Su Yan’s Abnormality](#)
[Chapter 368 – Candidate For The Makeup Spokesperson](#)
[Chapter 369 – An Amazing Older Sister](#)
[Chapter 370 – The Underworld’s Trouble](#)
[Chapter 371 – The Nervous Yao Yue](#)

[Chapter 372 – Stone Fairy Learns to Put On Makeup](#)
[Chapter 373 – The Guilty Party Complains First](#)
[Chapter 374 – Completely Ruined](#)
[Chapter 375 – Makeup Spokesperson](#)
[Chapter 376 – Murder in School](#)
[Chapter 377 – Substitution](#)
[Chapter 378 – Don't Use Him](#)
[Chapter 379 – Plan A Succeeded](#)
[Chapter 380 – The Queen Mother's Birthday Feast](#)
[Chapter 381 – Black Stockings](#)
[Chapter 382 – Artifact Spirit-Jiejie](#)
[Chapter 383 – Di Zun](#)
[Chapter 384 – To the Underworld](#)
[Chapter 385 – Meng Po! Meng Xiang!](#)
[Chapter 386 – Reincarnation Pool](#)
[Chapter 387 – The Phone's First Mission](#)
[Chapter 388 – Leg-Stealing Guide](#)
[Chapter 389 – Advocating Justice](#)
[Chapter 390 – Getting a Subordinate in the Underworld](#)
[Chapter 391 – Various Movements](#)
[Chapter 392 – The Hearts of Plotters Are All Dark](#)
[Chapter 393 – Sky Immortal Liu Qing](#)
[Chapter 394 – Mission Accomplished](#)
[Chapter 395 – Ascension?](#)
[Chapter 396 – Six Realms Patroller](#)
[Chapter 397 – Attributeless](#)
[Chapter 398 – Genius](#)
[Chapter 399 – Otherworld](#)
[Chapter 400 – Mo Di](#)